This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

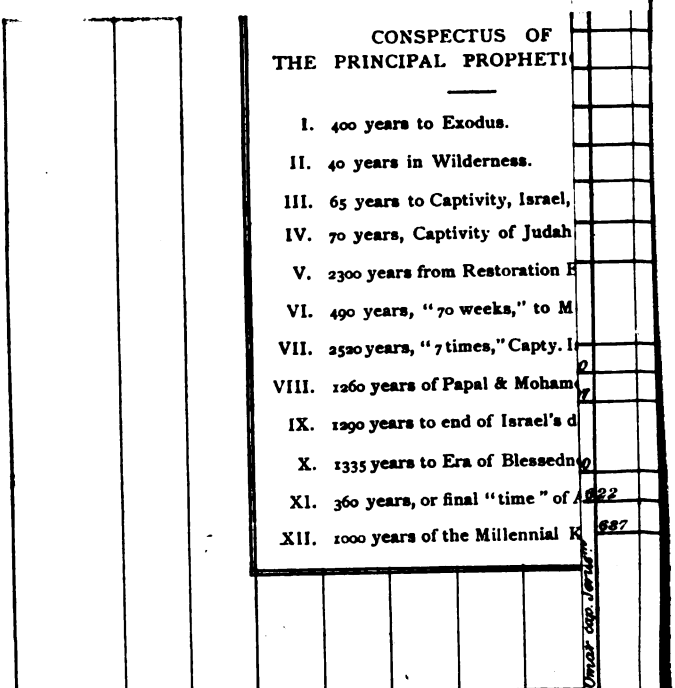
https://books.google.com

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

LIBRARY OF THE
UNION
THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY.
NEW YORK.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

LIGHT FOR THE LAST DAYS.

A Study Historic and Prophetic.

By Mr. and Mrs.

H. GRATTAN GUINNESS,

AUTHORS OF "THE APPROACHING END OF THE AGE," ETC.

WITH DIAGRAMS.

"The time came that the saints possessed the kingdom."—DAN. vii. 22.

SECOND EDITION.

LIBRARY OF THE UNION THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY. NEW YORK.

London:

HODDER AND STOUGHTON,

27, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCCLXXXVIII.

(*All rights reserved.*)

Digitized by Google

WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHORS.

The Divine Programme of the World's History. *8vo, cloth.*

The Approaching End of the Age, Viewed in the Light of History, Prophecy, and Science. Tenth Edition. Seventeenth Thousand. With Three Diagrams. *Crown 8vo, cloth, 7s. 6d.*

Fallacies of Futurism. *Sewed, 1s.*

Romanism and the Reformation from the Standpoint of Prophecy. By the Rev. H. GRATTAN GUINNESS. *Crown 8vo, cloth, 5s.*

The Wide World, and our Work in it. By Mrs. H. GRATTAN GUINNESS. With Map and numerous Illustrations. *8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.*

LONDON: HODDER AND STOUGHTON, 27, PATERNOSTER ROW.

Digitized by Google

RX23
G96
L
145513

PREFACE.

During the eight years which have elapsed since its publication, our former volume, "The Approaching End of the Age, Viewed in the Light of History, Prophecy, and Science," has passed through nine editions, numbering fifteen thousand copies, and a tenth edition has just been called for and issued, a satisfactory proof that the sure word of prophecy is receiving increased attention in these last days.

The events which have transpired during those eight years have confirmed the views expressed in our former work, and further study of the subject has resulted in a deeper conviction than ever of their substantial truth, as well as in a clearer perception of the application of some of the principles on which those views were based.

In the following pages we present, in a fuller and more detached and definite form, the historic evidence of the fulfilment of the main chronologic prophecies of Scripture. The subject was glanced at in the "Approaching End," but owing to the variety of topics there treated, it was very imperfectly expounded. Here it will be found carefully traced out; and we feel confident that the more the details are studied,

Digitized by Google

the more clearly will the truth of the entire system appear.

The demonstration of that system has a double value. It yields strong confirmation for faith, in the first place; and affords important practical guidance, as "a light that shines in a dark place," in the second.

No one who is acquainted with the mental condition of the great bulk of the intelligent classes in these days can doubt that a wide-spread defection from the faith exists already, and extends continually. Infidelity and rationalism in countless forms, both open and concealed, are not only rife in the world, but also in the Church. A great intellectual change has passed over the minds of men within this generation, and its effect has been to a large extent adverse to faith in revelation. Historic criticism, the philosophical mode of treating ancient history, which has been applied since the time of Niebuhr to the books of the Bible, too often rashly and inconsiderately, has done much to produce in the minds of many a state of suspended belief, if not of actual unbelief; while the tendency to hasty generalization on the part of the rapidly developing natural sciences, which has seemed to place nature, the *work* of God, in opposition to Scripture, His *word*, has helped to undermine the old foundations.

Truer criticism and truer science are slowly undoing some of the mischief which was all too quickly wrought; but the flood of rationalistic teaching still flows alike from the professor's chair and the periodical press, from the pulpit and the platform. An organized diffusion of infidel principles is proceeding in every class of society, and the young are peculiarly exposed to be injured by it. The less the instruction and experience,

Digitized by Google

the greater the danger of being misled by the specious arguments of scepticism, and the greater the need of confirmation and establishment in divinely revealed truth. The ceaseless warfare being waged against the word of God should prepare us gladly to welcome every additional evidence of its inspiration.

Of all the various lines of Christian evidence none is so specially adapted to these last days as that based on *fulfilled prophecy*. It is as distinctively suited to the close of the dispensation, as were miracles to the commencement. As the age of miracle recedes, and its occurrence at all is in consequence increasingly called in question, the proofs of supernatural power and wisdom arising from fulfilled prophecy accumulate and become irresistible. Each century of Jewish and Gentile history adds to its amount, and the last century especially has done so very largely.

The prophecies of Daniel stand pre-eminent among all others in their evidential value. It is an astounding fact, that not only does his brief book give a fore-view of twenty-five centuries of Jewish and Gentile history, including the first and the second advents of Christ, but that it also fixes the chronology of various episodes of the then unknown future, with a simple certainty which would be audacious if it were not Divine. Would any mere man dare to foretell, not only a long succession of events lying far in the remote future, but in addition the periods they would occupy? This Daniel has done, and the predictions have come to pass.

This great and unquestionable fact can be explained away only on one of three grounds.

1. The accord must be purely accidental and fortuitous; or

Digitized by Google

2. The events must have been manipulated, so as to fit the prophecy; or

3. The prophecy must have been fitted to the events, and thus written after them, though claiming to have been written before.

None of these three explanations can account for the agreement between Daniel's predictions and history, as a moment's reflection will show.

1. It cannot be merely fortuitous. It is too far-reaching and detailed, too exact and varied. Chance might produce one or two coincidences of prediction and fulfilment out of a hundred, not a hundred or more without a single exception. Common sense perceives this at a glance. As far as time has elapsed every single point predicted in Daniel has come true, and there remain but a few terminal predictions to be fulfilled in the near future.

2. The events were certainly not made to fit the prophecy by human arrangement. The rise and fall and succession of monarchies and of empires, and the conduct and character of nations, for over two thousand years, are matters altogether too vast to be manipulated by men. Such a notion is clearly absurd. What! did Babylonian and Persian monarchs, and Grecian and Roman conquerors, Gothic and Vandal invaders, mediæval kings and popes, and modern revolutionary leaders, all intentionally conspire for long ages to accomplish obscure Jewish predictions, of which the majority of them never even heard?

3. The third and last solution is consequently the only possible alternative to a frank admission of the Divine inspiration of the book, and of the Divine government of the world amid all its ceaseless political

Digitized by Google

changes. Can the prophecy have been written to fit the events? In other words, can it be a forgery of a later date? This is the theory adopted by all the unbelieving critics, who start with the assumption that prophecy in any true sense is impossible. They attempt to assign to the book a date later than the true one, a date towards the close of the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes, who died in the second century before Christ. They then endeavour to compress all the four empires into the four centuries previous to that date, excluding entirely from the prophecy any allusion to the Roman empire and the first advent of Christ, to say nothing of the second. Multitudinous have been the attacks made on these lines on the fortress of this book of Daniel, for scepticism has realized that while it stands impregnable, *a relic of the sixth century before Christ*, all rationalistic theories must fall to the ground, like Dagon before the ark. But the fortress stands firm as ever, its massive foundations revealed only the more clearly by the varied assaults it has repelled. The assailants, German as well as English, have been beaten off time after time by one champion after another, earnestly contending for the faith. As the superficial and shallow nature of the linguistic, historic, or critical objections has been demonstrated, one line of assault after another has been abandoned, till all are alike forsaken. But even if this were not the case, and the later date could be substantiated, it would not in the least warrant the sceptical denial of the existence of prophecy in Daniel. The predictions of the first advent and of the Roman destruction of Jerusalem would be in no wise affected by the later date, nor those of the tenfold division of the

Digitized by Google

Roman empire and of the great Papal and Mohammedan apostasies.

Candour is shut up to the conclusion that real, true, and marvellous foreknowledge is, beyond all question, indicated by the predictions of the book, since twenty-five centuries of history correspond with it accurately, in their chronological as well as in all their other features. This being so, the question of inspiration is settled for honest minds. Nor that alone. For the rule of God over the kings of the earth—the fact that history is working out His Divine purposes, and that all the changing kingdoms of the Gentiles are merely introductory to the eternal kingdom of the Son of man and of the saints—is also established beyond controversy.

It was alleged by the sceptical school that the late origin of Daniel was demonstrated by the presence of Macedonian words, and of impure Hebrew expressions; that its spurious character was proved by its position in the canon, as not among "the prophets," but among "hagiographa"; that it contained historical errors and irreconcilable contradictions; that it had traces of later ideas and usages; as well as—and this was evidently the head and front of the offending—that the predictions were so clear and definite, that they must have been written after the events.

The defence has been twofold. First, a demonstration which leaves nothing to be desired of the utter baselessness of the objections; and secondly, an array of unanswerable arguments in support of the authenticity and date of the book. The contention has given rise to a whole literature, to which we can merely allude in a few sentences. Those who wish to examine

Digitized by Google

into the subject for themselves will find the works of Hengstenberg and Dr. Pusey very thorough and candid, as well as learned, giving not the results of investigation only, but the process, and the fullest reference to original documents.

As the predictions of Daniel lie at the base of the following treatise, we must indicate the nature of the defence, though we cannot do more. Porphyry, in the third century, in his attack on Christianity as a whole, devoted one of his fifteen books to an assault on Daniel. He asserted that it must be the work of a Jew of Palestine, written in Greek in the time of Antiochus; and assigned as the *ground* of his theory the exact correspondence of events with the predictions, asserting that Daniel "did not so much predict future events as narrate past ones," bearing thus a noble testimony to the prophet! His book was by imperial command condemned to the flames, and we know it mostly from fragments preserved in the writings of Jerome. Spinoza, the infidel Jew, was the first modern to renew this old attack; and then Hobbes and Collins, and other English deists. J. D. Michaelis made however the first scholarly attempt to undermine confidence in the authenticity of Daniel, and he decidedly *maintained* the genuineness of the greater part of it. The names of more recent opponents are legion, and we need not give them here, but simply indicate the arguments that prove the futility of the objections.

To a Christian mind the highest and most conclusive testimony lies in the fact that our Lord speaks of Daniel as a prophet, and quotes from him. The name by which He most frequently speaks of Himself, "the Son of man," is taken from Daniel vii. 13. Many of His de-

Digitized by Google

scriptions of His own coming and kingdom are also distinctly connected with Daniel's predictions of them.[1] Surely our Lord would not thus have endorsed an impostor! Josephus tells us that the book was eagerly studied in Christ's days; would He have treated it as Scripture, and allowed His disciples to regard it as such, if it were a forgery?

The apostles uniformly recognise Daniel as a prophet. Peter alludes to his inquiries as to the "times," and states that he was inspired by the Spirit of Christ. Paul in 2 Thessalonians ii. builds his argument on Daniel's prediction of the man of sin and the apostasy. Hebrews xi. 33 alludes distinctly to Daniel and his companions and their heroic deeds; and the whole book of Revelation is so closely connected with that of Daniel, that we might almost style it Second Daniel, or Daniel First Revelation.

The allusions to Daniel as one of the holiest and one of the wisest of men, by his contemporary Ezekiel, show how *early* he attained his high position in the court of Nebuchadnezzar, and how far the fame of his blameless, holy life had spread, even in his own days. As he most distinctly and repeatedly claims to be the author of his own book, and writes much of it as an autobiography, the very holiness of his character makes the thought of deliberate forgery and falsehood revoltingly inconsistent.

That the book was widely distributed and well known and revered by the pious in pre-Maccabean times can be demonstrated. The very accurate and reliable First Book of Maccabees makes exact, though brief and

[1] Compare Dan. vii. 13, 14, and 26, 27, with Matt. x. 23; xvi. 27, 28; xix. 28; xxiv. 30; xxvi. 64; John v. 27; Dan. xii. 2.

Digitized by Google

simple, reference to the stories in Daniel. The dying words of Mattathias to his sons are recorded, in which he encourages them to fidelity to God amid persecution by recalling various Bible histories, and among the rest, that of the Hebrew children in the fire, and Daniel in the lions' den. Hence it is evident the book was known and regarded as Scripture at that time. Further, Josephus makes several remarkable and explicit statements on the subject. Speaking of one of the predictions, he says, "Now this was delivered 408 years before the fulfilment," thus recognising the received date as unquestionable, and as generally admitted to be so in his day.

In a still more conclusive and very interesting passage he asserts that Daniel's prophecy was shown to Alexander the Great when he visited Jerusalem, and that this monarch took the prediction about a Greek who was to overthrow the Persian empire to mean himself, and was much encouraged thereby in his enterprise, and very favourably disposed towards the Jews in consequence.

Josephus was indeed much impressed by the remarkable fulfilments of Daniel's predictions, which even in his day were evident. After expounding several of these he says: "All these things did this man leave behind in writing, as God had showed them to him: so that those who read his prophecies, and see how they have been fulfilled, must be astonished at the honour conferred by God on Daniel."[1]

A strong argument in favour of the received date may be drawn from the languages in which the book is written, Hebrew and Aramæan. Both were familiar to the Jews of the captivity era, and to them *only;* the

[1] "Antiquities," x. 11, 7.

Digitized by Google

one was Daniel's mother tongue, the other the language in which he had been educated, and by which he was surrounded for the greater part of his life. Hebrew ceased to be used by the Jews in and from the captivity, except as a sacred learned language. It had been entirely superseded before the Maccabean days, and no writer of the time of Antiochus could have counted on being understood, had he written in that language. Daniel reckons on such a familiar acquaintance with both languages, that it is evidently a matter of indifference to him and to his readers which he uses. "The use of the two languages, and the mode in which the prophet writes in both, correspond perfectly with his real date; they are severally and together utterly inexplicable according to the theory that would make the book a product of the Maccabean times. *The language is a mark of genuineness set by God on the book.* Rationalism must rebel, as it has rebelled; but it dare not now with any moderate honesty abuse philology to cover its rebellion."[1]

Further, the exact knowledge of cotemporary history evinced in Daniel is such that no writer of the time of the Maccabees could possibly have attained it. Almost every single circumstance mentioned in the book is confirmed directly or indirectly by cotemporary historians, and proved to be absolutely and even minutely correct. In the Maccabean age, as existing remains prove, the utmost ignorance of the history and geography of foreign countries prevailed among the Jews in Palestine, and an exact and comprehensive knowledge of the history of a period so dark and already so remote as the captivity era, did not exist and could not have existed.

[1] Dr. Pusey: "Lectures on Daniel."

Digitized by Google

And the same may be said of the accurate knowledge exhibited in the book of the institutions, manners, usages, and entire state of things, existing in the Babylonian and Medo-Persian times.

Again, it has been remarked that "the complexion of *the prophecies* of Daniel corresponds so exactly with what is related in the historical part of *the circumstances of his life*, that even the most crafty impostor would not have been able to produce this agreement artificially. Daniel occupied high offices of state; he was witness to great revolutions and changes of rulers and empires; and this circumstance is very significantly impressed on his prophecies. The succession of the various empires of the world forms their principal subject. In the representation of the Messianic idea also he borrows his colours from his external relations. Throughout there is apparent a religious, as well as a political gift, such as we meet with in no other prophet."

Lastly, *the canon of the Old Testament contains the book of Daniel*, and that canon was closed by Ezra the scribe, and Nehemiah, the second Moses in Jewish estimation, about 400 B.C. Hence the prophecies of Daniel were already at that date recognised as inspired writings. It is true the book does not appear in the list of the prophets, because Daniel was not *officially* a Jewish prophet, but a Babylonian statesman. David, also, though a prophet, was officially a king, and thus his writings, like Daniel's, are classed among the hagiographa, or sacred books, rather than among the prophets. The principle of the Jewish arrangement of the canon was, that sacred writings by men in secular office, and not occupying the pastoral or prophetic position, were put in a class apart from the prophets. Hence Daniel ap-

Digitized by Google

pears not in the list with Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel, but rather with David and Solomon, and Mordecai, the writer of Esther. But the Jewish rabbis hold his prophetic revelations in the highest esteem, and the Talmud places him above all other prophets.

There is therefore no question at all for candid minds that the book is authentic, and rightly attributed to the time of the Babylonish captivity; and if so, it must be granted by all that it contains prophecy—definite predictions which have been most marvellously fulfilled.

The importance of this conclusion can scarcely be over-estimated, though it seems to be less appreciated by Christians than by sceptics. They regret their inability to wrest a mighty weapon out of the hands of the Church. But we—what use are we making of it? What execution are we doing with it? Is it not a pity that it is allowed to so great an extent to lie idle?

If eight or nine centuries of fulfilled prophecy drove Porphyry, in the third century, to feel that he must either admit Divine inspiration or prove the book of Daniel spurious, ought not the twenty-five centuries of it, to which we in our days can point, be even more efficacious in convincing candid inquirers and confounding prejudiced opponents? The battle of authenticity has been fought and won; no fresh objections can be invented. Archæological discovery may yet find Daniel's name among the Babylonian records; it will certainly produce no evidence against the book which it has already done so much to authenticate. It rests with Christian teachers and preachers to use the miracle of the last days, fulfilled and fulfilling prophecy, for the conviction and conversion of men.

Should this volume increase such a use of "Daniel,

Digitized by Google

the prophet," we shall rejoice. It will, we trust, in any case confirm the faith of those who already believe, and brighten the hope of those who are waiting for the kingdom of God.

It has been written amid the pressure of many claims, and makes no pretension to literary excellence, though it may be relied on for exact accuracy in its historic and chronologic statements.

Our Missionary Institute—with its three colleges, and its various other enterprises at home and abroad—imposes upon us so much stern, practical work, as well as so much constant financial responsibility, that it is with difficulty we can make leisure for writing. Yet the ever-growing conviction of the shortness of the time for gospel labour, of which the grounds are here indicated, forbids us to relax effort for the multiplication of missionaries in heathendom, and evangelists in destitute districts of Christendom. Should any reader of this volume derive from it such light and help as to deserve a special thank-offering to God, let him remember, not us, but our work! Its opportunities are great, its needs are large. It has already furnished many hundreds of missionaries to the dark parts of the earth, and the number is increased by one every week in the year, on an average. In China and India and Burmah, in Syria and Turkey and Egypt, in France, Algiers, and Morocco, in south, east, west, and central Africa, in North and South America, New Zealand and Australia, in populous London and lonely Labrador, on the newly opened Congo and in the ancient Damascus, as well as in most of the countries of Europe, evangelists from our Institute are preaching Christ. We dare not decrease our work in this practical direction, yet is there much,

Digitized by Google

very much, still unwritten on the sacred themes treated in these pages which, should leisure be afforded, we long to write.

The Institute is evangelical, but undenominational, and consequently unsustained by any denomination as such. It is conducted in faith, and dependent on the voluntary contributions of friends in all sections of the Christian Church. It involves an outlay of many thousands annually, and its circle of supporters is extremely limited; we make bold to plead its cause with all who with us believe that "this gospel of the kingdom must first be preached among all nations for a witness unto them, and then shall the end come." That the end alluded to in this promise is *near* this book shows; and hence the supreme importance of doing all that in us lies to publish the gospel of salvation to the still unevangelized nations of the earth.

And now, in sending forth this volume on its mission, we commend it to the great Head of the Church, who has promised light in the last days on the mysteries of His prophetic word, humbly praying that He may deign to use it for His own glory and for the good of many.

HARLEY HOUSE, BOW, E.
December, 1887.

Digitized by Google

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTION. THE DANIEL PARALLEL.

Great Change impending.—Chronologic Prophecy a Science.—Early Misunderstandings inevitable.—Light promised in the Last Days.—Our Position analogous to Daniel's.—Elementary Principles assumed in this Book . . . . . *pp.* 1–18.

CHAPTER II.

THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES.

The Period of the Great Image.—Historic Features of the Period.—Chronologically a Great Week.—A Complex Problem.—Intentional Concealment of the Times in Early Days.—Promise of Light to the "Wise" in the Time of the End.—Eras, and Years of Crisis. *pp.* 19–37.

CHAPTER III.

THE STARTING-POINT; OR, THE CAPTIVITY ERA OF ISRAEL AND JUDAH.

The Three Main Eras in the Times of the Gentiles.—Events of the Captivity Era.—The Sixty-five years to the Fall of Ephraim.—Shalmaneser and Sennacherib.—Esarhaddon.—Nebuchadnezzar's Overthrow of Jehoiakim, Jehoiachin, and Zedekiah.—Records of this Era in the British Museum.—Chronological Predictions are Fulfilled in Lunar as well as Solar Years.—List of Critical Dates in the Captivity Era . . . . . *pp.* 38–57.

CHAPTER IV.

THE BISECTION; OR, THE ERA OF THE RISE OF THE APOSTASIES.

Events of the Second Half of the Times of the Gentiles.—The Ten Gothic Kingdoms.—Cardinal Manning on the Rise of the Papacy.—Stages in the Rise of Papal Power.—Cotemporaneous Rise of Mohammedanism.—Gibbon's Description.—List of Dates in Bisection Era . . . . . *pp.* 58–69.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

THE TIME OF THE END.—WESTERN, OR PAPAL ASPECT.

Six Marks of the Time of the End.—Chronological Limits of the Period.—Historic Features of the Period as far as it has already Elapsed.—Proofs of the Decay of the Papacy.—Reformation.—The Papal Reaction.—Political Establishment of Protestantism.—Outbreak of Infidelity in France.—The French Revolution.—Napoleonic Wars, and Annexation of the Papal States.—Later anti-Papal Revolutions.—Unification of Italy.—Fall of the Papal Temporal Sovereignty. *pp.* 70–88.

CHAPTER VI.

THE TIME OF THE END.—EASTERN, OR MOHAMMEDAN ASPECT.

Culmination of Turkish Power under Solomon the Magnificent.—Decay dated from Peace of Carlowitz.—Russian Wars, and Peace of Kainardje.—Rapid Decay since 1821.—Greek Insurrection.—Rebellion of Mehemet Ali.—Object of the Crimean War.—European Concert on the Eastern Question.—Druze Massacre, and Protectorate in Syria.—Russo-Turkish War of 1877.—Ottoman Bankruptcy.—English Occupation of Egypt.—Recent Roumelian Revolution.—Critical Dates of the Time of the End, Western and Eastern. *pp.* 89–97.

CHAPTER VII.

THE TIME OF THE END.—JEWISH ASPECT, OR THE MODERN RENAISSANCE OF THE JEWISH PEOPLE.

The Sufferings of the Jews during the Times of the Gentiles.—Fall of Jerusalem and Jewish War.—Degradation of the Middle Ages.—Social and Financial Oppression of the Jews.—Laws of Edward the Confessor.—Banishment from Spain and Portugal.—Cruel Sufferings in the Sixteenth Century.—Cromwell and the Jews.—First Jewish Emancipation Act.—Beneficial Effects of the French Revolution on the Position of the Jews in Europe.—The Universal Israelite Alliance.—Rapid Concentration of Capital in Jewish Hands.—Modern Increase in Power, Influence, and Number.—The New "Christ-believing" Movement in South Russia.—Restoration Promises Fulfilling.—A Final Exodus.—Summary.—Foretold and Fulfilled . . . . . *pp.* 98–135.

CHAPTER VIII.

CHRONOLOGICAL MEASURES OF THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES.

The Prophetic Times are Measured from Eras, not Years.—The Chronology of the Times of the Gentiles, Historically and Astronomically Certain.—Units of Measurement.—Chronological Relation of the Three Eras . . . . . *pp.* 136–143.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

LUNAR MEASURES OF THE SEVEN TIMES, RECKONED FROM THE CAPTIVITY ERA.

Measures of the First Half of the Period, Western and Eastern.—Extend to the Fall of the Western Empire, and the Saracenic Capture of Jerusalem.—Lunar Measures of the Whole Period.—Extend to Political Establishment of Protestantism in the West, and Commencement of Turkish Decay in the East.—Lunar Measures from the Zedekiah Date to the Universal Israelite Alliance, bisected by Omar's Capture of Jerusalem . . . . . *pp.* 144–153.

CHAPTER X.

SOLAR MEASURES OF THE SEVEN TIMES.

From the Era of Nabonassar to the Accession of Louis XVI., in the West, and the Treaty of Kainardje, in the East.—The additional Seventy-five Years lead to Papal Overthrows, 1804 and 1849.—The Shalmaneser, Sennacherib, and Esarhaddon Starting-points, and the Terminal Events to which they Lead.—The *Termini ad Quem* of the Period as Measured from the Three Campaigns of Nebuchadnezzar.—Convergence of Periods in the Year of Revolution, 1848.—The Final Termini still Future . . . . . *pp.* 154–167.

CHAPTER XI.

MEASURES OF THE SECOND HALF OF THE SEVEN TIMES.

Starting-points in the Bisection Era, and Corresponding Terminations.—Fall of the Papal Temporal Power in 1870.—Unification of Italy.—Collapse of the Papal Empires of France and Austria, Sadowa to Sedan.—Eastern Bisection Dates and their Corresponding Termini.—The Hatti Hamayoun of 1844.—Tel-el-Kebir, 1882.—Intervention in Syria.—Berlin Conference . . . . . *pp.* 168–177.

CHAPTER XII.

THE SANCTUARY CYCLE.

Earlier and Later Visions of Daniel.—The Prophetic Period of Daniel viii., 2,300 years.—Relation to Eastern Events rather than Western. Double Relation of Mohammedan Conquests.—Range of the Cycle from the Restoration Era of Ezra and Nehemiah.—Critical Years of this Era, and Corresponding Terminal Stages.—Astronomic Character of the Cycle.—Extends to Crises of Modern Jewish Renaissance.—Probable Proximate Stages . . . *pp.* 178–196.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

THE CONNEXION BETWEEN THE SANCTUARY CYCLE AND THE "SEVENTY WEEKS," OR 490 YEARS, EXTENDING FROM THE PERSIAN RESTORATION ERA TO THE ERA OF "MESSIAH THE PRINCE."

Termini a quo of the Seventy Weeks.—Extended Correspondence between the Two Eras.—Interval Linking the Close of the Old Testament Canon with the Close of the New.—Date of the Apocalypse.—Hidden yet Exact Analogy . . . . . *pp.* 197–201.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE FINAL "TIME," AND THE ANGEL'S OATH.

Comparison between Dan. xii. 7 and Rev. x.—The Speaker, the Subject, the End, and the Oath identical.—Contrast between the Two Chronological Statements.—The Reformation Era and its Dates.—Corresponding Dates in the Time of the End . . *pp.* 202–208.

CHAPTER XV.

THE FUTURE DATES OF THIS SERIES.

Last Dates of a long Series, extending to the Advent.—Narrow Margin now Left.—The Remaining Dates.—Inferences from Analogy.—Events to be Expected in the Future.—Contrast in Character between the Intermediate and Closing Events.—A Needed Caution.—Stages in the Establishment of the Kingdom.—Probable Time of the Fall of Babylon.—Terminal Dates of the Series, and Inferences from Analogy as to the Crisis which they may bring *pp.* 209–226.

CHAPTER XVI.

SIGNS OF OUR TIMES.

Summary of Conclusions.—Eras, not Years.—Duration of the Time of the End.—Duty of Recognising the Signs of the Times.—What are not Signs.—Prodigies excluded by 1 Thess. v. 2.—The True Signs are Natural Events in Predicted Order.—A Parable.—Political Signs.—Ecclesiastical Signs.—Jewish Signs.—Mohammedan Signs.—General Social Signs.—Chronological Signs . . *pp.* 227–252.

CHAPTER XVII.

ANSWERS TO OBJECTIONS.

This Exposition does not Claim to be a Final Arrangement of Dates.—Is not this an Attempt to Fix the Time of the Second Advent?—

Digitized by Google

Our Lord inculcated Watchfulness on Two Grounds: first, that of Ignorance; secondly, that of Knowledge: which Attitude better befits the Nineteenth Century?—A Fourfold Answer to Objection founded on Acts i. 7.—Premature Anticipations are Inevitable Results of gradually Increasing Light.—Comparison with Progress of Knowledge on Scientific Subjects.—The Conditions of the Problem.—True Anticipations have been Numerous and Noteworthy.—Objection on the ground of the number of Events and Dates indicated.—Justified by Analogy.—The Result Simple and Clear.

pp. 253–272.

CHAPTER XVIII.

REVIEW OF THE HISTORY CONSIDERED.

Daniel's Programme very wonderful.—Comparison of it with ordinary Chart of History.—Both show first, Four Empires; secondly, Ten Kingdoms.—The Chronological Element in Each.—The Papal Element.—A Definite and unlikely Prediction.—Faith as to the Future justified by Twenty-five Centuries of Historic Fulfilment.

pp. 273–279.

CHAPTER XIX.

THE PROSPECT BEFORE US.—PRE-MILLENNIAL EVIDENCE.

No fifth Gentile Monarchy.—The next the Kingdom of God.—Universally admitted Features of this Kingdom.—Differences of opinion as to the Introductory Events.—Post-millennialism deprives the Kingdom of its Brightest Features to the Church, and of its most Solemn Aspect to the World.—No Millennium before first Resurrection.—Ought the World to be Warned or Congratulated?—Unanimity should be sought on this Subject in this Time of the End.—The Post-millennial theory, a New Hypothesis, first broached in the Seventeenth Century.—Brief Review of the Testimony of the Church in all Ages concerning the Coming and Kingdom of the Redeemer.—Four hundred Witnesses.—The Fathers.—The Councils.—Wycliffe.—Columbus.—The Reformers.—The Confessions.—Mede, and the Westminster Divines.—The New England Pastors.—Three leading Theories.—Whitby's Doctrine of a Post-millennial Advent the most recent.—Biblical Order as to the Advent and Reign.—The Teachings of Analogy.—Apostasy Universal.—No signs of an Approaching Millennium, but the Gospel not therefore a Failure.

pp. 280–300.

CHAPTER XX.

THE COMING KINGDOM.

The Plan of Providence becomes clear only in the Light of the Revealed End.—Peculiarities of the Coming Kingdom.—A Manifested Reign

Digitized by Google

over the Earth.—Fifth in a Series of Empires.—Universal and Enduring.—Divided into Two Sections, the Millennial and the Eternal.—A Reign of Righteousness.—Opening and Closing Eras of the Millennium.—Order of Events in the Second Advent Era.

pp. 301–312.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE RULERS IN THE COMING KINGDOM.

Apparent Contradictions of Messianic Prophecy removed by Fulfilment.—Analogy as to Future Events.—Personal Manifestation of Christ, and of His risen Saints.—Not a mere Spiritual Kingdom.—The Future of the Church.—The Powers of the Spiritual Body, and the Intercourse between Earth and Heaven.—Millennial Service need not involve Exile from Heaven . . . . . *pp.* 313–322.

CHAPTER XXII.

THE SUBJECTS IN THE COMING KINGDOM.

Nature and Extent of the Pre-millennial Judgments.—Spared Nations on the Earth.—Restored and Converted Israel to Evangelize the World.—Supremacy of Israel in Millennial Days.—Christ the King of Israel.—The Blessings of the Nations in the Millennium.—Old Testament Pictures.—Israel's Blessings Eternal.—The Covenant in Ezekiel.—Harmony between Old Testament Prophecy and Revelation.—No Details as to Millennium in the Apocalypse, because fully Revealed previously in the Old Testament.—Universality and Permanence of the Kingdom.—Cowper's Description of this Sabbatic Age.

pp. 323–337.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE SECOND ADVENT ERA.—INTRODUCING THE ETERNAL KINGDOM.

Its Events given in a Series of Twelve successive Visions, Rev. xviii. xxii.—The fall of Babylon.—Sudden and Final.—The probable Agency employed.—The Triumph in Heaven.—The Rapture of the Church.—"The Marriage of the Lamb."—The Epiphany.—The Order of these Two Stages cannot be Reversed.—Advent Vision in Rev. xix.—The War of Armageddon.—The Binding of Satan.—A World without a Tempter.—A New Probation.—A Reign of Righteousness, Peace, and the Universal Knowledge of God.—Brief Post-millennial Era.—"Then cometh the End" . *pp.* 338–362.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE NEW HEAVEN AND NEW EARTH OF THE ETERNAL KINGDOM OF GOD.

The World's Need of Renovation.—The Bible reveals a Twofold Work of God, Creation and Redemption.—Types of the latter in Nature and Providence.—Four great Stages: Preparatory; Messianic; Millennial; Eternal.—Scripture Testimony on the Subject of the New Heavens and the New Earth: Isa. lxv. and lxvi.; 2 Pet. iii.; Rev. xxi. and xxii.—Contrast between the Millennial and Eternal Stages of the Kingdom, but main characteristics unchanged.—The Heavenly and the Earthly continue distinct, yet associated.—The Glorified Church of the First-born not the sole Result of Redemption.—The Nations of the Earth: Pre-millennial, Millennial, and Post-millennial.—Does this imply perpetual Generations?—Two Classes of Passages.—Difficulties no Warrant for the Rejection of Scripture Teachings . . . . . *pp.* 363–384.

Paraphrase of Revelation xxi. and xxii. . . . *pp.* 385–388.

Conclusion . . . . . *pp.* 388–392.

APPENDIX A.

The Scientific Basis of Prophetic Chronology, "sure as the stars."—Astronomical Observations in the "Almagest" of Ptolemy.—Value of Ptolemy's Records.—Testimony of La Place.—Four groups of Ancient Eclipses.—Initial date from which Ptolemy reckons his Eclipses.—Thoth I., Nabonassar I.; February 26th, B.C. 747.—The Chronology of Ptolemy's Canon.—Fifty-five reigns, extending over 907 years.—Agreement between the Historical and Chronological Outline in the Canon of Ptolemy and that in the Fourfold Image of Nebuchadnezzar's Vision . . . *pp.* 395–401.

THE CANON OF PTOLEMY . . . *pp.* 402–403.

Tables of Solar, Lunar, and Planetary Positions contained in the "Almagest" . . . . . *pp.* 404–411.

Adjustment of the Chronology of Scripture to the Astronomical Dates furnished by Ptolemy.—Destruction of the Temple in the Nineteenth Year of Nebuchadnezzar.—Liberation of Jehoiachin in the Thirty-seventh Year of his Captivity.—Seventy Years' Interval from the Beginning of the Captivity of Judah to the First Year of Cyrus.—Darius the Mede not Darius Hystaspes.—Omission in the Canon of Reigns less than a year in duration, and Inclusion of their Periods in the longer Reigns.—The Artaxerxes I. of the Canon identical with the Artaxerxes of Ezra and Nehemiah.—Agreement between the Chronology of Josephus and that of the Canon.—Confirmatory

Digitized by Google

Evidence of Herodotus.—The untrustworthy Elements in his History as shown by Recent Oriental Researches.—Confirmation of the Canon of Ptolemy and of the Chronology of Scripture by Modern Oriental Discoveries.—Comparison of the Assyrian Eponym Canon with the Canon of Ptolemy.—Account of the Capture of Babylon by Cyrus from the Assyrian Annals . . . *pp.* 412–422.

APPENDIX B.

The Date of our Lord's Passion, A.D. 29.—Early Christian Testimony. *p.* 423.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTION.

THE DANIEL PARALLEL.

Digitized by Google

"BLESSED BE THE NAME OF GOD FOR EVER AND EVER: FOR WISDOM AND MIGHT ARE HIS: AND HE CHANGETH THE TIMES AND THE SEASONS: HE REMOVETH KINGS, AND SETTETH UP KINGS: HE GIVETH WISDOM UNTO THE WISE, AND KNOWLEDGE TO THEM THAT KNOW UNDERSTANDING: HE REVEALETH THE DEEP AND SECRET THINGS: HE KNOWETH WHAT IS IN THE DARKNESS, AND THE LIGHT DWELLETH WITH HIM. I THANK THEE AND PRAISE THEE, O THOU GOD OF MY FATHERS, WHO HAST GIVEN ME WISDOM AND MIGHT, AND HAST MADE KNOWN UNTO ME NOW WHAT WE DESIRED OF THEE. . . . BUT AS FOR ME, THIS SECRET IS NOT REVEALED TO ME FOR ANY WISDOM THAT I HAVE MORE THAN ANY LIVING."

"IN THE FIRST YEAR OF DARIUS . . . I DANIEL UNDERSTOOD BY BOOKS THE NUMBER OF THE YEARS."—*Daniel, the prophet of Judah and the statesman of Babylon.*

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY. THE DANIEL PARALLEL.

THE conviction that we are living in days which have about them a character of finality deepens in the minds of thoughtful men. From the most unlikely quarters there come, ever and anon, expressions of this feeling. The grounds assigned for the sentiment or opinion differ; in some cases it is apparently without foundation; but it prevails.

It is in reality a well grounded conviction; the word of God leaves no room for doubt that we are living in the last days of this dispensation, and have well-nigh reached the close of the existing state of things. It leaves no room to doubt that a change—*a change greater than any the world has ever seen*—is impending. Bible readers have a clearer and deeper impression on the subject than others, though in too many cases even they would find it difficult to give any solid reason for their opinion. But students of the prophetic Scriptures have no such difficulty; to them the fact that these are in the most literal sense the last days is one capable of the fullest demonstration, a fact as clearly ascertained and as easily proved as any other fact of science.

The assertion may sound strange to some, but there is *a science* of chronologic prophecy—a science of recent origin, and one as yet too little studied, but one of unspeakable interest and importance.

Our desire in the following pages is to lead lovers of truth to the study of this sacred science. It is not a fashionable one in any circle. It is condemned and decried as speculative folly in some, and totally neglected in others; in others again it is pursued, but only in a desultory manner, by a few. As a rule, it is not publicly taught, even by those who

Digitized by Google

understand it; and the result is that it is scarcely recognised as a science at all.

But if science be a knowledge of facts arranged in order and explained by law, then is there beyond all question a science of chronologic prophecy; and none of the sciences so ardently studied in this nineteenth century yield results of greater practical importance. In bygone ages there was a cause why this science made little progress, a reason why it *could not* be understood. But this cause and this reason exist no longer; on the contrary, the time has come when the subject must and will be successfully studied and understood by many; for so it is distinctly predicted in Scripture.

When, twenty-five centuries ago, God granted to Daniel the revelations which form a large part of the material of this science, the prophet, who failed to understand especially the chronological statements embodied in the predictions given to him, asked further explanation. His request was refused, and he was informed that these predictions were not for the benefit of the then existing generations, but for that of distant future ones. He was directed in the meantime to "shut up the words, and seal the book," and informed that the meaning of the visions was "closed up and sealed" to "*the time of the end*"; that in *that* time "the wise" would understand them, though "the wicked" would never do so. "None of the wicked shall understand," it was said to him; "*but the wise shall understand.*"[1]

Now it is clear that none can read a divinely sealed book until God Himself break the seal and throw open the pages. None can penetrate His sacred mysteries till He is pleased to remove the veil that covers them. Chronologic prophecy must, in the very nature of the case, be designed for the benefit of later and not of earlier generations. The prophets themselves did not always understand their own chronological predictions. When the time was near, the period short, and the language in which it was expressed simple and literal, they of course did so; but when the events were distant, the period long, and the prophecy expressed in symbolic language, we are told by the Apostle Peter that, so

[1] Dan. xii. 10.

Digitized by Google

far from understanding, they "inquired and searched diligently . . . what, or *what manner of time* the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify," and that it was revealed to them "that not unto *themselves*, but unto *us* they did minister." Hence it is evident that the treasures of chronologic prophecy were committed to earlier ages for the benefit of later ones, and especially of the latest. As the end draws near the mysterious predictions are gradually explained by their own progressive fulfilments, and the light grows stronger and clearer to the close.

The statement that not even "the wise shall understand" chronologic prophecy till "the time of the end," accounts for all the misunderstandings of earlier ages, and all the partial comprehension of later times, and is an encouragement to the study of it in *these* days; for that we live in "the time of the end" is plain with a moment's reflection. What does the expression in Daniel "the time of the end" mean? Clearly the time of *the end of the events revealed to Daniel.* His prophecies foretold the events of twenty-five centuries, the existence of the Babylonian, Persian, Grecian, and Roman empires, and represent these as occupying the entire interval between the prophet's own days and the day of the resurrection of the dead, and the establishment of the glorious and everlasting kingdom of God on earth. They predict that the last or Roman dominion would exist in two distinct and successive stages, contrasted in many respects, but alike in some, and especially in that they are both phases of the rule of ROME. The first, a stage in which that great city is the fountain of authority and government to an *undivided empire;* and the second, in which it is so, in a different way, to a *tenfold commonwealth* of kingdoms.

We know, that not only the three first of these great universal empires have risen, ruled, and passed away as predicted, but that the dominion of Rome pagan was in due time, as foretold, succeeded by that of Rome Papal over the ten Gothic kingdoms of modern Europe; and that this last is now in a state of decadence, its temporal rule having already come to an end sixteen years ago. In other words, we are not only living at a distance of twenty-five centuries

Digitized by Google

from the days of Daniel, but we can trace, during the course of these centuries, the fulfilment of all his predictions except the very last. The Babylonian empire occupied the time of the beginning; the rule of Persia, Greece, Rome pagan, and Rome Papal, occupied the long subsequent course of the period, and the fall of this last power must clearly mark the *close* of the predicted series of events. The promise that in the time of the end "the wise shall understand" *must therefore, if it is ever to be fulfilled at all, be fulfilled in our days;* and there is no room for an "if" as regards any of the promises of the Faithful and True Witness, the God who cannot lie. The time has come at last for the comprehension of the chronological predictions of Scripture, and all who desire to understand them may plead the promise that there shall be light on them in these days.

But let us note well *to whom* light on this great and glorious subject is to be granted in this "time of the end." The promise says to "the wise," and contrasts these, not with the unlearned and ignorant, but with the "wicked"; implying that the qualification required for understanding sacred prophecy is *moral* rather than mental. "The fear of the Lord, *that* is wisdom," says Job, and Solomon calls it "the beginning of wisdom." Godliness, a humble, reverential, teachable spirit, prayerful, holy meditation, and patient observation of God's providential government of the world, would seem to be more essential qualifications for understanding prophetic revelations than mere learning or talent. "Whoso is wise, and will *observe* these things," says the psalmist, after enumerating many of the dealings of God with men, "even *they shall understand* the lovingkindness of the Lord. And similarly we may say, whoso is wise, and will observe the hand of God in history, even they shall understand the meaning of sacred prophecy.

In Daniel's predictions, the saints are continually contrasted with their enemies and persecutors; all through his prophecies, as well as in those of the Apostle John, these two classes are distinguished, and the context shows that *they* are the two classes alluded to by these expressions, "the wicked" and "the wise." The statement that none of the

Digitized by Google

wicked shall understand would otherwise be superfluous, for the wicked in general neither desire nor endeavour to understand, and therefore cannot of course do so. They despise and neglect, not only the *prophetic* Scriptures, but the word of God as a whole. "The wicked" of these verses are pre-eminently the opponents and persecutors of the saints, so frequently alluded to in the earlier portions of the prophecy, and especially those of *the Romish apostasy*, which figures so largely in all predictions of this Gentile age. The doctors and teachers of this system *do* study and profess to understand Daniel's predictions, and they even presume to expound them to others. This inspired statement consequently puts us on our guard against any system of prophetic interpretation which *emanates from Rome.* Such interpretations must needs be *mis*understandings, and therefore false and misleading; for it is written, "none of the wicked shall understand."

Up to "the time of the end" the wicked and the wise alike would be in darkness on the subject; when that time arrived "the wise" would receive light, and would be led to a true comprehension of the meaning of chronologic prophecy, "the wicked" never. The moral and ecclesiastical position of these latter forbids the possibility of their understanding; the true light will arise, not among the persecutors, but among the persecuted. Hence on this subject we should lean to Protestant and not to Papal interpretations.

The numerous and wide differences of view among the students of prophecy are frequently alleged as a reason for not attempting its study. A moment's thought will show that under the circumstances this difference was inevitable. The progress of all sciences is gradual, and often slow. The transition from total ignorance to perfect knowledge on any subject cannot, without a miracle, be made suddenly. This promise, that "the wise shall understand," does not contain the condition that they shall do so suddenly, or correctly and completely *at once.* As comprehension was not to take place *till* the time of the end, the dawn of true light *must* have been comparatively recent. What science is there that has never made a mistake or started a false theory in its early days? What science is there that has not been driven, as it

Digitized by Google

grew and developed, to modify some of its first conclusions, and to abandon some of its earlier positions? Recall the history of astronomy, the eldest of the sciences, or of biology, the youngest! Change and modification are involved in growth, nor can they be avoided until full maturity is reached. This objection is therefore simply an expression of impatience with the invariable law that there is no royal road to learning. Time must be allowed for careful and repeated observation, for study, meditation, and research; and patience must be exercised, for it may be many generations before a science is really understood and established on any solid basis.

Moreover, when human selfishness warps the judgment, and produces a strong prejudice, as it does for instance in the sciences of political and social economy, opposing theories must be expected. The science of chronologic prophecy bears strongly against three of the most numerous and influential religious communities in existence,—Romanists, Mohammedans, and Jews. How can it then be otherwise than controverted by those belonging to these communities?

If the Government publish the photographs of three notorious criminals, men guilty of high treason and murder, and, holding these in his hand, a detective address to a certain trio the accusation, "You are the men," are they likely to agree with his opinion? From the very nature of the case, differences of interpretation *must* exist to the end between "the wicked" and "the wise"; but the differences of the latter among themselves ought now to be daily diminishing.

As a matter of fact, much real progress has already been made by the godly and learned students of the last three centuries. Though not a few erroneous anticipations have been indulged and false maxims adopted, the main principles of the science are clearly ascertained, and it is now a question of exact application.

This important study has been mainly brought into disrepute by the foolish speculations of some, who, instead of being students of prophecy, become themselves prophets, and presumptuously venture to foretell future events, instead of cautiously comparing history with the statements of Holy Writ. But a broad distinction exists between this foolish

Digitized by Google

and reprehensible course, and that devout and humble study of chronologic prophecy for which we have the highest examples.

Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ began His ministry with a statement connected with chronological prophecy; a statement which showed how carefully He had pondered, and how clearly He comprehended Daniel's prediction of the "seventy weeks." Mark records, as the *first* utterance of the ministry of Christ, "*The time is fulfilled*, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel." What time was fulfilled? The mysterious "seventy weeks" to Messiah the Prince.

Peter says of this study, that we do well to take heed to it; and John says of it, "Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear"—the words of the most mysterious of prophetic books,—"and *keep* those things that are written therein,"—the latter clause showing that prophetic study has practical bearings.

Daniel, a scholar and a statesman, one of the wisest and holiest of men, gave himself earnestly, even in his old age, to the study of chronologic prophecy. He was himself a prince among prophets; and yet he disdained not, as he tells us,[1] to devote himself to the study of "books," and especially of the books of Jeremiah, that he might solve to his own satisfaction the chronological problem of the exact period of the termination of the Babylonish captivity. The effect of his studies was to prostrate him in prayer and supplication before God, and to secure for him an additional revelation, the most glorious that up to that time had ever been given—a revelation of the exact interval to the first advent and redeeming work of Christ.

Simeon and Anna were students of chronologic prophecy, and to their light on this subject it was owing that they were found in the temple, waiting for "the Consolation of Israel." The just and devout Simeon was rewarded with a special revelation, that "he should not die till he had seen the Lord's Christ." Do these things look as if prophetic students of the God-fearing, holy living, Bible loving, sober-minded sort are fools or wise? Nay, is it not an insult to

[1] Dan. ix.

Digitized by Google

the ALL-WISE to assume that it is folly for His people to study the predictions which He in His wisdom has given, and which He has sealed with this unconditional promise, that the wise *shall* in "the time of the end" understand them?

Twenty-five centuries of history are now casting back the light of their multiplied fulfilments on these sacred prophecies. Men require in these last days just such fresh demonstration of the inspiration of Scripture as only fulfilled prophecy can afford. Miracle is doubted or denied; the supernatural is spurned as incredible by this generation, which smiles at the idea of inspiration. But if it be so that the very things now going on in the world were distinctly predicted in Daniel's day, and *even the very dates of the occurrence of* contemporary events indicated, who can doubt that "holy men of old spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost"? Such evidence should be, and frequently is, valuable for convincing the most sceptical unbelievers; but if it only serve to root and ground true Christians in their most holy faith, and to render them proof against the attacks of infidelity, it answers no mean end. If it serve, moreover, to quicken hope and practical zeal, and to produce and preserve in the Church a body of disciples who shall be watching and waiting for Christ at His coming, it abundantly accomplishes its purpose.

What is our present chronological position, and our present duty in this matter? It may help us to understand both if we note the parallel between our own position and that of Daniel in the days of Darius the Mede.

The holy prophet had spent in Babylon the greater part of his life, as he had been there during the whole of Judah's captivity. He had risen to high estate in the land of his exile, was full of years, full of honours, and full of wisdom: but his heart remained true to the God and the land of his fathers, true to Jerusalem and the Jewish people; and his mind was consequently full of the—to him—profoundly interesting question, When would their long captivity in Babylon come to an end?

He knew it must be nearly over; for though Judah still hanged her harp upon the willows and sat down and wept

Digitized by Google

by the rivers of Babylon, she yet began to wipe away her tears and to lift up her head, for her redemption was drawing nigh; *she had seen the great city fall*, and the hand of the Persian conqueror was already resting on the pen that was to sign the blessed edict of liberation and return. The day was one of approaching crisis; a great turning point in the history of Israel was at hand, and *Daniel knew it*.

He had not been assured of it by an angel from heaven; he did not *guess* that it was so from political appearances, but he *knew it as the result of study*—a study of "books," as he expressly tells us. Those books included no doubt the chronicles of the kings of Israel and Judah, and it may be also the boastful records inscribed on many a Babylonian cylinder and slab. The book which he specially mentions however by name is that of the prophet Jeremiah, and the portions of that book which had principally enlightened his mind and influenced his heart, were the two chronological predictions recorded in chapters xxv. and xxix. From an earnest study and comparison of these various books the holy prophet gathered that the end of Judah's captivity was close at hand, that the dark week of bondage—a week of decades, seventy years—was well-nigh over, and that already it began to dawn towards the first day of a new "week" in the history of his people.

This glad conclusion was not however arrived at so easily as some may suppose. Daniel did not argue, "The captivity was to last seventy years; I have been now about seventy years in Babylon, so it must be nearly over." No study would have been required for such a rough, approximate conclusion as that, no meditation or prayer, no spirituality or communion with God. Daniel's opinion of the crisis at which he lived was evidently the result of all these. His studies had a sanctifying and blessed effect on his mind, leading him to confession, supplication, and prayer, and securing for him an angelic visit, and a further glorious revelation.

He perceived, as he studied the predictions of Jeremiah, and the records of events which had happened when he was a child, that the captivity of his people had not been a sudden catastrophe, *but a gradual process;* that it had been

Digitized by Google

accomplished by stages during a period of twenty years, stages as to the relative importance of which there might be some question. Taking no note of the conquests of the Assyrian monarchs, Pul, Shalmaneser, and Esarhaddon, nor of the various captivities inflicted by them on the ten tribes of Israel, nor even of the overthrow of Manasseh, king of *Judah*, under the last of these three monarchs, but confining his attention exclusively to *the different successive campaigns of Nebuchadnezzar and his generals against Jerusalem*, it was evident that a wide chronological margin—very wide as compared with the whole period of seventy years—existed, *somewhere in which* the initial date of the captivity must occur; but it was not exactly easy to select the precise year. The relative importance of historical events, and especially of contemporary events, is often difficult to discern. The edifice of Jewish monarchy had trembled and tottered for some time before it fell, and when it did fall, it fell in several successive crashes. Which was the critical one?

Was it the third year of Jehoiakim, B.C. 606, when Daniel had himself been brought to Babylon? or was it the following year, B.C. 605, when Judah had for the first time become thoroughly tributary to Nebuchadnezzar? or was it seven years later, B.C. 598, when in his eighth year that monarch a second time successfully attacked Judah and Jerusalem, carrying captive Jehoiachin with his treasures, and all the principal men of the kingdom? or was it yet again eleven years later still, B.C. 587, when Zedekiah, the uncle of Jehoiachin, who had been placed on the throne of Judah as a sort of Babylonian viceroy, having rebelled against his master, Nebuchadnezzar, in the nineteenth year of his reign, once more besieged and took Jerusalem? On this occasion the city was *finally* broken up, and Zedekiah, after seeing his sons slain before his face, and having his own eyes put out at Riblah, was carried away to languish and die in exile. Later in that same year Nebuzaradan *burned the temple*, rased Jerusalem to the ground, and carried off to Babylon the rest of the people. This was the last stage of the long process of the decay and fall of Jewish monarchy, and the record of it terminates with the fateful words, "so Judah was carried away out of their land."

Digitized by Google

Now here was *a period of twenty years*, more than a fourth part of the predicted seventy, *during which the captivity had been slowly accomplished by stages!* Daniel had consequently need to pray, and to study carefully, before he could discern whether the restoration of his people, and of that temple worship for which his soul yearned, were still twenty years distant, or even then close at hand.

Moreover, as he pondered the expression, "seventy years," the question could hardly have failed to occur to him, What sort of years—sacred years or secular? The sacred year of the Jews was *lunar*, for the intervals between the feasts and the fasts of the Levitical calendar were all strictly *lunar;* but they also used a longer tropical year, as did the Babylonians, while the Egyptians employed a retrograde solar one. The true length of the years intended must therefore have been a point on which Daniel reflected, and that perhaps without being able to arrive at any satisfactory conclusion, though he must have perceived that the actual duration of the captivity would vary to the extent of two years, according to the calendar employed.

As he studied, the thought, proved by the result to be a true one, could scarcely fail to be suggested to his mind, that the restoration might probably be *as gradual and as much by stages as the captivity had been*, and so occupy an *era* rather than a *year*. His people had not all come to Babylon at one time. Was it likely they would all leave at one time? Jerusalem and its temple had not fallen in a day, nor in a year, but by stages. The temple had been first despoiled of its treasures, and then consumed with fire eleven years later. Was its reconstruction and its rededication to be similarly interrupted? The national overthrow had been gradual; was it not likely that the national restoration would also be gradual? As he pondered, the question would arise in his mind, "If so, which will be *the principal* stage?" Already the first was *past*. Babylon the overthrower had been overthrown; the city still stood, but its power was gone. The Median monarch occupied the palace of Nebuchadnezzar, and the Persian empire had succeeded the Babylonian.

This fact would greatly confirm the faith of Daniel as to the nearness of the restoration of his people, because Jere-

Digitized by Google

miah had said, "This whole land shall be a desolation, and an astonishment; and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years. And it shall come to pass, *when seventy years are accomplished*, that *I will punish the king of Babylon, and that nation*, saith the Lord, for their iniquity, and the land of the Chaldæans, and will make it perpetual desolations."[1] "Therefore all they that devour thee shall *be devoured;* and all thine adversaries, every one of them, shall go into captivity; and they that spoil thee shall be a spoil, and all that prey upon thee will I give for a prey."[2]

Daniel's studies of chronological prophecy were at a time when one of the salient points of the Divine prediction had already been accomplished. Not only had the time run out, but one part of the thing predicted had happened. How confirmed must his faith have been, and how confident his hopes, though the restoration itself had not come! Yet there were difficulties through which he could not quite see. The promised deliverer was not yet on the throne; Cyrus was *there*, but he was not sole monarch, not yet in a position to make the predicted decree. Darius was the ruling monarch, and prophecy had, two hundred years before his birth, named *Cyrus* as the deliverer. Would Darius soon die then, and Cyrus succeed him? There was probably no immediate prospect of this, but Daniel doubted not that in some way God would make His promise good, fulfilling His own predictions, and that speedily. Cyrus would become supreme ruler, and would restore Israel, and rebuild Jerusalem.[3] Knowing this, he bowed himself in confession and prayer, and in humble supplication that the promise of restoration might come to pass, even as the threats of judgment had done.

Spiritually minded and intelligent students of prophecy occupy at the close of this nineteenth century a very similar position. They too understand by books, and especially from the book of Daniel, that the end of the present state of things must be close at hand. They have studied with reverential care, not only the perfected scroll of prophecy, but also the records of God's providential government of the

[1] Jer. xxv. 11, 12. [2] Jer. xxx. 16.
[3] Isa. xliv. 26–28; xlv. 1–13.

Digitized by Google

world, from Daniel's days to our own. They have compared history and prophecy, and the actual chronology of the one with the predicted chronology of the other. They have received immense help also through the study of a *third* book, one which throws a flood of light on this latter subject, as from its nature and its authorship it could not fail to do —*the book of nature.* Astronomy has taught them that the great chronometer provided by God for man marks off by its different revolutions *years of three different lengths:* one measured by the sun, one by the moon, and one by the conjoint movement of both orbs; the *solar* year, the *lunar* year and the *calendar* year. They have found by research that God in His word employs in prophecy *all these three years* which He has caused the sun and moon to measure, and that the difference between them, small in a single year, becomes so considerable in longer periods, as to have veiled from earlier generations the accurate fulfilment of chronological prophecies.

They have observed that the great episodes of Jewish and Gentile history are measured, both actually and in prediction, by *all these three different years;*[1] and this fact has thrown a flood of light on the whole subject of chronology in relation to prophecy and to history, just such light as it might have been expected that God would graciously grant in the end of the age.

That light however is enjoyed as yet by few, because just as there was but one Daniel in the days of Darius the Mede, who endeavoured to understand by books "the number of the years" whereof the Lord had spoken, so there are in these analogous days few who either desire or try to comprehend the more complex chronologic prophecies, contained in Daniel's own book, and in the complementary predictions of Revelation, which alone can illumine the mind on the chronology of the close of the present age.

What had directed Daniel's mind to the study of prophecy at this special time? He was an old man, who might well have excused himself from any such research, on the ground

[1] First demonstrated in "The Approaching End of the Age," a work published eight years ago, and now in its tenth edition. London: Hodder and Stoughton, 27, Paternoster Row, E.C.

Digitized by Google

that he had no time for it, and that it would make no difference to him personally whether Judah were restored or not, or when the event should take place; *he*, at any rate, would have to die as he had lived, in Babylon. What led him to the study? We cannot question that it was *the events which were taking place around him.* He had seen the Euphrates, on whose banks he had passed his days, dried up "that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared"; he had seen executed at Babylon the judgment foretold by Jeremiah; and he knew that these events were a sign that the desolations of Judah were accomplished.

Do we not occupy an analogous position? Have we not been watching the drying up of the antitypical Euphrates for many a long year? And have we not beheld the fall of the temporal power of the Papacy, if not as yet the final fall of "Babylon the Great," the apostate Church of Rome? Is it not time then for us to look into these things, and try, as Daniel did, to understand our own chronological position with regard to the approaching second and greater restoration of Israel, marking, as it will do, the end of this Gentile age?

Our desire in the following pages is to help our fellow Christians to perceive that the chronological prophecies of Scripture are not mysterious, incomprehensible, and comparatively useless portions of the word of God, but that they are, on the contrary, in these last days, clear and luminous, and of *the utmost practical importance.*

Our statements will be expository rather than controversial. It is high time now that prophetic students of the Protestant historic school should cease to argue about first principles, and, recognising them as established, go on to their cautious and careful application. The occurrences of the last century have thoroughly tested the firm and solid character of the foundations on which we build; there is no need any longer to question their stability. The multiplied and ever-multiplying proofs of this set the question practically at rest. Protestant students of the last three hundred years have been following the right tracks. Their mistakes have been only "waymarks in the progress of the Church from that entire ignorance of the times, in which she was

Digitized by Google

purposely left, in the apostolic age, to the full and certain knowledge that the Bridegroom is at hand, which shall prepare her, like the wise virgins, to enter in with her Lord to the marriage feast."

Here therefore we take for granted, what has been abundantly proved by many godly and learned writers, and what we have ourselves also in a former work demonstrated, and assume the following conclusions:

1. That in symbolic prophecy a "day" is the symbol of a year, and a "time" of 360 years.

2. That Daniel's prophetic visions of the fourfold metallic image and of the four beasts have been fulfilled in the histories of the Babylonian, Persian, Grecian, and Roman empires.

3. That "Babylon the Great" in Revelation xvii. is the Roman Catholic Church.

4. That the little horn of Daniel vii. represents the Papal dynasty, and the little horn of chapter viii. is, as to its final form, the Mohammedan power,—the one arising out of the Roman empire, and ruling in western Europe; the other arising out of one of the divisions of the Greek empire, and ruling in eastern Europe and in Asia.

To those who recognise these axiomatic truths the following pages will, we feel confident, prove both interesting and edifying. They present in a systematic, concise, and detached form many of the chronological facts first published in our former work, "The Approaching End of the Age,"[1] with the addition of many new and most important particulars; and they will, we trust, help the "wise" to understand better the nature of the times in which we live, so as to realize more clearly our present prospects, privileges, and duties.

Those who have *not* received the above foundation principles of prophetic science, may nevertheless be interested by the chronological *facts* here marshalled in order,

[1] "The Approaching End of the Age: Viewed in the Light of Prophecy, History, and Science." Hodder and Stoughton, 27, Paternoster Row, London, E.C. Also the writings of Sir Isaac Newton, Bishop Newton, Elliott, Bickersteth, Birks, etc.; especially "Elements of Scripture Prophecy," by the last.

Digitized by Google

according to a clue afforded by Scripture. But for a discussion of the principles underlying the historic interpretation, we would earnestly refer such to parts ii. and iii. of the work above alluded to, which treat of these questions, or to other works of a similar character.

Our hope is that, in this time of the end, large numbers of Christians, who have received without personal investigation futurist views, may be led to examine at any rate the opposite historic system, to prove all things, and hold fast that which is good.

To trace the hand of God in history, to note how all the ages of His providential government have moved according to a foreseen and foretold order, to watch the last stages of the Divine programme of universal history fulfilling themselves in our sight in these last days, to discern "the signs of the times," and to observe the budding of the fig tree, is to find hope merging in *definite expectation*, and in patient waiting for Christ—a waiting for Him as for one whose footfall may be already heard, one who even now standeth at the door; it is to lift up our heads, convinced that our redemption, our *full* redemption, the redemption of the body, and of the world itself, draweth nigh.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES.

"AND HE INFORMED ME, AND TALKED WITH ME, AND SAID, O DANIEL, I AM NOW COME FORTH TO GIVE THEE SKILL AND UNDERSTANDING."—*Dan.* IX. 22.

"THEN SAID HE UNTO ME, FEAR NOT, DANIEL: FOR FROM THE FIRST DAY THAT THOU DIDST SET THINE HEART TO UNDERSTAND, AND TO CHASTEN THYSELF BEFORE THY GOD, THY WORDS WERE HEARD, AND I AM COME FOR THY WORDS."—*Dan.* X. 12.

"IN THE FIRST YEAR OF DARIUS . . . I DANIEL UNDERSTOOD BY BOOKS THE NUMBER OF THE YEARS, WHEREOF THE WORD OF THE LORD CAME TO JEREMIAH, . . . THAT HE WOULD ACCOMPLISH SEVENTY YEARS IN THE DESOLATION OF JERUSALEM."—*Dan.* IX. 1, 2.

DANIEL understood, as to the character of the days in which he lived, that the seventy years' captivity was all but over, and that the predicted restoration of Israel and rebuilding of Jerusalem were close at hand. What may *we* "understand by books" as to the chronological character of the days in which we live?

We know that the larger "seven times" of Israel's dispersion and degradation is all but over, and their full and final restoration to Palestine close at hand—a restoration to be accompanied by their repentance and conversion, and by that supreme and long foretold crisis of such profound importance, not to Israel only, but also to the whole world, the manifestation of the kingdom of God on earth.

The restoration for which Daniel prayed *came*, but it proved to be only *partial*, the ten tribes not having been restored at all. It proved also to be only *temporary;* for in consequence of Judah's rejection of their Messiah, it endured but for a few centuries, after which it was succeeded by the present longer and more complete dispersion. Even while it lasted it was not a restoration to complete *national indepen-*

Digitized by Google

dence; for during its entire course Jerusalem was *tributary* to one Gentile power or another, and was, as we know, actually under Roman domination at the time of the advent of Christ.

After Messiah was cut off, and by wicked Jewish hands crucified and slain, the wrath of God came upon the people "to the uttermost," and the overthrow of Jerusalem by Titus introduced a judgment incomparably more severe,—their present expatriation and dispersion, the deep affliction and complete subjection to Gentile powers, which have lasted now for eighteen centuries.

The continuance and duration of *this whole period of judgment* has its chronological limits assigned, just as the Babylonish captivity had. This last is indeed regarded and treated in Scripture as a part merely of the *one* great and long continued judgment of "the times of the Gentiles," appointed to last, not for seven *decades* of years, but for *seven years of years*, "*seven times*"—a tremendous national judgment for tremendous national crimes. This is the period to which our Lord alluded in the words, "Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled." [1]

To some readers this expression may not convey the clear and definite idea which Scripture attaches to it; and as this period lies at the base of all the chronologic prophecies connected with this Gentile age, the duration of which forms the subject of the following pages, we must, before going further, distinctly define its *nature* and its *measures.*

It is the *long period of history which began with the beginning of the succession of the four great Gentile monarchies revealed to Nebuchadnezzar, and which ends with the close of these four empires, and the manifestation of the kingdom of God.* The "times of the Gentiles" are marked by Jewish loss of dominion and independence, by Jewish subjection to and suffering under Gentile conquerors, by the dispersion of the twelve tribes of Israel, and by the desolation of their land. It is, so to speak, the lifetime of the great fourfold image of Gentile monarchy shown to Nebuchadnezzar, as well as the period of the four wild beasts subsequently exhibited to the

[1] Luke xxi. 24.

Digitized by Google

prophet. In other words, it is the joint duration of the rule of BABYLON, PERSIA, GREECE, and ROME.

It is the period during which supreme power on earth is by God Himself committed to Gentiles rather than to Jews, as it is written of Nebuchadnezzar, "Thou, O king, art a king of kings: *for the God of heaven hath given thee* a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. And wheresoever the children of men dwell . . . He hath made thee ruler over them all." It is the period which elapses between the fall of the throne of Judah, in the days of Nebuchadnezzar, and the restoration of that throne by the establishment of it for ever in the person of Christ, the Son and Lord of David. It is the period extending from the *beginning of the typical* Babylonian power to the *end of the anti-typical* power of "Babylon the Great." It is the period of the government of the earth and of Israel by rulers who are like wild beasts in their cruelty and ferocity, as well as in their ignorance of God, who exist only by preying on others, who are evermore warring and slaughtering, and who oppose and persecute the saints of God. It is the period which, according to prophecy, is to be *immediately* followed by the establishment on *earth* of a universal monarchy of a wonderfully different description,—by the setting up of the long predicted, long prayed for kingdom of God, the kingdom of the Son of man, of which Christ so often spoke,—the kingdom in which God's will is to be done on earth even as it is done in heaven; the kingdom which shall never be destroyed or left to other people, but which shall break in pieces and consume all other kingdoms, and stand for ever;[1] a kingdom which shall be possessed by "the saints of the Most High for ever, even for ever and ever," in which the dominion shall be given to the Son of man, who comes with the clouds of heaven, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him.[2]

A great change in God's providential government took place at the time of the Babylonish captivity. He ceased to recognise the Jewish monarchy, which He had established in the days of David and Solomon, on account of the gross sins of the idolatrous Jews. He cast them out of their land, de-

[1] Dan. ii. 44. [2] Dan. vii. 13, 18, 27.

Digitized by Google

prived them of their independence, and permitted Babylon to enslave them. It was not by chance or by mere human prowess that Assyria overthrew Israel, and Babylon Judah: the hand of God was in the double catastrophe, and the overthrow was a direct judgment on a disobedient and idolatrous people. The long period of subjection to Gentile nations, of which the Babylonish captivity was only the first section, and which still continues, was imposed on the Jews as a chastisement for inverate and long continued sin.[1] The full weight of the judgment did not fall on them at first, because they had not then filled up the measure of their sins; but when they "killed the Prince of life," a flood of desolation overwhelmed them, and rests upon their nation still.[2] They are however beloved for their fathers' sakes, and destined, as Scripture abundantly asserts, to be ultimately restored to their land and to their high position of supremacy on earth. When "the times of the Gentiles" run out they will be led to repentance, they will receive their long rejected Messiah, saying, "Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord!" and the second advent of Christ will bring to them and to all nations those "times of the restitution of all things," of which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began.

These "times of the restitution of all things" are the dispensation next following "the times of the Gentiles." The question of our nearness to the close of this latter dispensation is therefore one of supreme importance and interest. Whereabouts in its course are we, judging from history? The Babylonian empire, the first of the four predicted universal monarchies, rose and fell long since; so did the Medo-Persian, so did the Grecian. The fourth, or Roman empire, would, so it was predicted in the prophecy, exist in two forms: first, as one united empire; then as a commonwealth of ten kingdoms. The first form passed away fourteen hundred years ago, when the old empire built up by pagan Rome fell in the fifth century, under the incursions of the Goths and Vandals. The second or tenfold form—the commonwealth of nations, bound by a voluntary subjection to the Roman Papacy throughout the middle ages—has already

[1] Lev. xxvi. [2] Dan. ix. 26.

Digitized by Google

existed for more than twelve centuries. Whereabouts then in the "times of the Gentiles" are we?

Evidently near their close! What are the last forms of Gentile power predicted as dominating during this period? They are symbolised by two "*little horns*," the one described in the seventh, and the other in the eighth chapter of Daniel —two politico-religious dynasties which should exercise a vast and exceedingly evil influence in the latter half of this Gentile dispensation. These two "little horns" symbolise the *Papal* power in *western*, and the *Mohammedan* power in *eastern* Europe. The rise, character, conduct, decay, and doom of both these powers are enlarged upon in the prophecy, as it was natural that they should be, considering the tremendous and most evil influence which they have so long exerted, the one on the Christian Church, and the other both on it and on the natural Israel in Palestine. The *outline* of their history only is given in Daniel, details are added in the New Testament; by Paul, in his epistles, and by John in his Apocalypse.

The Papacy and Mohammedanism rose *contemporaneously with the ten horns of the Roman beast;* in other words, they originated at the same time as did the kingdoms of modern Europe—that is, *on the fall of the western Roman empire.* They have consequently already lasted for over twelve centuries, and their destruction is to be accomplished by the second advent of Christ Himself, and to be immediately followed by the establishment of the kingdom of God on earth. The reign of these two politico-religious dynasties constitutes the *last* phase of Gentile power presented in prophecy. Both have for more than twelve centuries opposed and blasphemed God and His truth, persecuted His saints, defiled His sanctuary, literal or spiritual, and trodden down the holy city.

It must be remembered that, the object of Scripture being to trace the story of redemption, and the fortunes of the people of God in this world, it dwells exclusively on the history of the nations and powers who have most influenced the Jewish people and the Christian Church. Hence, while it mentions briefly the career of Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome pagan, it enters with far greater fulness into the

Digitized by Google

history of the Papal and Mohammedan powers, because these are the powers which have most seriously oppressed, corrupted, or persecuted the natural and spiritual Israels.

In a word, "the times of the Gentiles" occupy the interval between the desolation of the land of Israel by Babylon, and the yet future restoration of the Jews; between the fall of the throne of Judah in the days of Nebuchadnezzar, and the future restoration of that throne in the person of Christ; between the destruction of the temple of God at Jerusalem, and the yet future re-establishment of His worship on Mount Zion. The period is the *great Gentile dispensation*, spoken of by Paul in Romans xi., during which Israel is apparently, though not really, cast off by God in righteous judgment, as an exhibition of Divine *justice;* and during which salvation is come to the Gentiles, as an exhibition of Divine grace: during which blindness in part is happened unto Israel, until "the fulness of the Gentiles" be come in, when "all Israel shall be saved," as it is written.

So much as to the general character and extent of this Gentile age. The question next arises, Does Scripture assign to the period any *definite chronological* limits? The answer might also be anticipated, when we remember that in previous stages of Jewish history, similar periods of trial had always had their chronological limits foretold. The time of Israel's bondage in Egypt, 400 years; the time of the wandering in the wilderness, forty years; the time of the captivity in Babylon, seventy years,—all were predicted in advance. If to these comparatively brief intervals the wisdom of God saw fit to assign limits, and He permitted these limits to be known to His people, how much more likely it is that He would *assign limits* to this far longer and more terrible dispensation of judgment and suffering appointed to the guilty nation of Israel, and that He would permit those limits to be more or less distinctly understood, at any rate towards the close of the period! On searching the Scriptures we find that this is the case. Chronological limits are distinctly assigned to "the times of the Gentiles" in Scripture, and *in these our days* their actual measures have become evident, *because the fulfilments of the predictions are clearly traceable in history.*

Digitized by Google

We cannot pause here to *prove* that the great prophecies of Daniel are for the most part fulfilled and not unfulfilled prophecies; that, starting from near their own epoch, they each give the outline of the history of the people of God, Jewish or Christian, in the world right on to the second advent and the millennial kingdom; that the powers figured as "little horns" in the seventh and eighth chapters of Daniel respectively symbolise the Papal and Mohammedan politico-religious apostasies; and that a day in these predictions stands as a symbol for a year. These basis truths of prophetic science have been ably demonstrated for some centuries past, and careful, trustworthy works in abundance are available for those who wish to study the subject, such as those of Bishop Newton, the late Professor Birks, Bickersteth, Elliot, and others. We have already published the grounds for our own conclusions on this subject in "The Approaching End of the Age," book ii., "Progressive Interpretation," and book iii., "Foretold and Fulfilled."

The chronological limits of the times of the Gentiles are given in the same style as the measures of the seventy weeks, or 490 years, to "Messiah the Prince." Moreover, they harmonize in their septiform character, not only with this period, but with all the Levitical measures of the sacred calendar of the Jews, as well as with many other episodes of Jewish history. THEY ARE A GREAT "WEEK," analogous to other weeks on other scales which we find in Scripture, such as the week of *days;* the week of *weeks*, leading to Pentecost: the week of *months*, including all the feasts of the Lord; the week of *years*, leading to the sabbatic year; the week of *weeks of years*, forty-nine years, leading up to the jubilee; the week of *decades*, or of human life, seventy years; and the week of *millenaries*, leading up to the yet future sabbatic millenary. "The times of the Gentiles" constituted a week, each of whose days is a *year of years*, or 360 years, and whose entire duration is therefore 2,520 *years*. As we wrote in the "Approaching End of the Age"—

"This is *inferred* from Scripture rather than distinctly *stated* in it; but the inference is so well grounded, as to be of almost equal weight with a distinct declaration.

"When this long period of Jewish desolation and chastisement was

Digitized by Google

first threatened (Lev. xxvi.), the expression 'seven times' was emphatically used in connexion with it. That this had any chronological force was not of course understood by those who received the warning, but it is almost impossible, in the light of subsequent predictions, and in the light of history, to doubt that the omniscient God used an expression in harmony with *His* foreknowledge of Israel's future, and expressive of His Divine purpose—a purpose which we have seen wrought out in history.

"And, secondly, though the fourfold image, which symbolised to Nebuchadnezzar the succession of Gentile empires which were to fill up this long interval of Jewish rejection, had *no* chronology attached to it, yet we know that those empires, the Assyrian, the Persian, and the Grecian, and the pagan and Papal Roman powers, have, *as a matter of history*, already lasted for *about* 2,520 years. Now history is the evolution of the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, which *must* therefore have assigned beforehand to 'the times of the Gentiles' at least this duration.

"The symbol of the fourfold image declared that these Gentile empires were to be succeeded by the kingdom of the God of heaven, but it did not reveal, or even intimate, when or after *what lapse of time* this should be. A subsequent vision granted to Nebuchadnezzar did so in mystery. He saw a tree, which he was told symbolised himself, cut down, and its stump left to be wet with the dew of heaven, and its portion with the beasts in the grass of the earth, its heart changed from a man's heart, and a beast's heart given it, until 'seven times' should pass over it.

"This vision was, as Daniel told the monarch, a prophecy of the seven years' insanity which, as a chastening for his pride, was to overtake him, and which was to teach him to know God, and to own that the heavens do rule. All this came upon King Nebuchadnezzar, and at the end of the days—that is, of the seven years of his insanity—he lifted up his eyes to heaven, his understanding returned to him, and he blessed and praised and honoured the eternal God, whose dominion is everlasting, whose will is sovereign, whose power is infinite, and who is able to abase all those who walk in pride.

"Now the vision of the tree is not more clearly symbolic of this remarkable incident in Nebuchadnezzar's life, than *that incident itself* is typical of certain moral and chronological features of the succession of Gentile monarchies.

"The leading moral characteristics of all the four great empires, of which Nebuchadnezzar was both head and representative, have been ignorance of God, idolatry, and cruel persecution of the saints. Nebuchadnezzar, prior to this incident, knew not God. He set up a great image, and commanded all men, on pain of death, to fall down and worship it; He cast into the burning fiery furnace the faithful witnesses who refused to obey the idolatrous mandate. How have all his successors, with one consent, followed this example! Idolatry, literal or spiritual, and persecution, pagan or Papal, have marked the whole

Digitized by Google

succession of Gentile monarchies. These episodes in Nebuchadnezzar's life are clearly typical; these features of his character have been stamped indelibly on all his successors; these incidents answer to events on the scale of nations and centuries, with which history makes us familiar. So also does the seven *years'* bestial degradation of the monarch during his insanity answer to the seven years of years of Gentile rule, represented by the fourfold image and by the four wild beasts of a subsequent vision. The king himself represents the succession of imperial sovereignty till the kingdom of Christ shall come; the 'seven times' that passed over *him* similarly represent the whole period of moral and spiritual debasement, and consequent idolatry and persecution, in the Gentile kingdoms, from the times of Nebuchadnezzar till the full redemption of mankind.

"A further argument in support of the same view may be derived from the fact that prophecy assigns to the apostasy of the latter days a duration of 1,260 years, and that this period is repeatedly spoken of as *half* a week, 'three times and a half.' Where are we to find the other half of this great week? As the apostasy is to be overthrown finally by the advent of Christ, it is clear the other half cannot *follow*, but must *precede*, the half week which measures the existence of that apostasy; that is, it must date *back* from its rise. Now calculating backwards from the rise of the Papal and Mohammedan powers in the beginning of the seventh century, 1,260 years *lead up to the days of Babylon*, the point at which we know 'the times of the Gentiles began.' Thus we see that the entire period occupied by the four great empires represented by the image is the *whole* week, whose *latter half* is the time of the dominion of the Papal and Mohammedan powers.

"During the whole of this period Israel has ceased to be an independent kingdom, and during two-thirds of it Jerusalem has been trodden down by the Gentiles. Each of the four great monarchies in turn ruled over the seed of Abraham, until at length, the cup of Jewish iniquity being full, the Romans came and took away their place and nation. Seventy years before this final judgment Messiah came, and was 'cut off'; and His rejection and crucifixion by the Jews, which sealed and brought on their doom, inaugurated the gospel dispensation and the ingathering of the Gentiles to the kingdom of God. Thus the Christian dispensation, so thoroughly *Gentile* in its aspect, fills two-thirds of 'the times of the Gentiles,' the first third having been occupied with the growth of Gentile dominion to the extraordinary development it had attained in the days of Augustus Cæsar. We conclude therefore, that the dispensation in whose closing days we live was fore-ordained and appointed by God to run a course of 2,520 years, or, in symbolic language, 'seven times'; and that our Lord Jesus Christ had this great week in His mind when He said, 'Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled,' an expression which seems to imply that the period so designated had definite chronological limits.

"Those limits were not intended to be understood *until* 'the time of the end.' Their actual history has now *demonstrated* the scale on which the

Digitized by Google

symbolic period of 'seven times,' or years, is to be enlarged, and that scale is—as in all similar predictions—'a year for a day.' Seven years contain 2,520 days, and the period predicted is therefore 2,520 years." [1]

Now if Daniel had to study books to find out *his* chronological position in the seventy years of the Babylonish captivity, how much more are we likely to have to study in order to discern *our* position in this much longer period! The problem is not likely to be a *less* perplexing one than that which the holy Daniel pondered.

The Simeons and Annas of our Lord's day had also to study a more difficult question than that of Daniel—*their* chronological position in the "seventy weeks," or 490 years, to Messiah; and many must have been their perplexities. There was no difficulty in discerning that they were living in the closing portion of the seventy weeks, or 490 years, for over four centuries had elapsed since the restoration of the Jews from Babylon. They knew that the advent of Messiah the Prince must be *at hand*, but in seeking to ascertain *how near* at hand, many questions would arise requiring careful investigation. From what year should they date the commencement of those seventy weeks? From the issue of a decree "to restore and to build Jerusalem."[2] But several such decrees had been issued; Jewish restoration had taken place by stages in a period extending over ninety-two years; which was the principal one? It was generally

[1] Arithmetically, this is a very notable number, one peculiarly fit to be the basis of chronologic prophecy. It is altogether unique—a king among numbers. *It is the least common multiple of the first ten numbers* —the first in the entire series of numbers, which is *exactly* divisible without remainder by all the first ten numerals. Thus it is adapted to harmonize several series of periods of different orders and magnitudes in a way that no other conceivable number could do. Is it by chance that this number has been chosen to be the vertebral column of prophetic chronology?

We have proved elsewhere that this same chronological system pervades all nature and all revelation; that it stamps the Levitical as well as the historic portions of Scripture; and that indeed the typical Levitical chronology is the clue to the whole comprehensive system, a system which rules alike among the orbs of heaven, the laws of biology, and the changes of history. Its operation can be discerned in almost every science, and it regulates the lives of individuals as well as the lives of nations. It is *the law of completion in weeks.*

[2] Dan. ix.

Digitized by Google

understood and admitted that the predicted 490 days symbolised 490 years. Now that period, measured from the *first* restoration decree, that of Cyrus, had already run out forty years before, and had failed to bring the Consolation of Israel; so *that* was evidently not the decree intended. Artaxerxes had subsequently made two restoration decrees, at an interval of thirteen years apart; measured from the first of these, the period had forty years yet to run, and measured from the last, fifty-three years. But what the goal? Not the *birth* but the *death* of Messiah the Prince, who was to be "cut off" prematurely in the midst of the last week of the seventy, or in the middle of the last seven years of the period. Then His *birth* might be looked for at least thirty or forty years previously. Malachi, the last of the prophets, had predicted that He was suddenly to come to His temple, and the prediction might be fulfilled any day. Hence those who loved His appearing would be found watching and waiting, praying and praising in that sacred spot, until their eyes should see God's salvation, the Light to lighten the Gentiles, and the Glory of the people of Israel.

By patient study we too may reach conclusions quite as clear as those of Daniel and Simeon and Anna, and like them be intelligently and joyously waiting for "the Consolation of Israel"; for the chronological measures of "the times of the Gentiles" are evident enough to those who in this nineteenth century patiently search the Scriptures.

We do not for a moment assert that they have always been so; to the earlier generations of the Church they *were* and they were *intended to be*, so mysterious, that comprehension of them was *impossible*, and only the vaguest guesses could be made as to their true scope and signification. This was a part of God's gracious providence, and was a mark of tender mercy to the early Church. He knew that well nigh two thousand years of trial and temptation, persecution and suffering, in an evil world and from an awful apostasy, lay before His people; but He did not wish *them* to know it. He never revealed the fact to *them;* the early generation of Christians expected, and were left to expect, the return of Christ in their own day. The first generation of believers took the promise of His speedy return literally, and lived in

Digitized by Google

the hope that they would be "alive and remain" at His coming. But this hope was born of inexperience; it was destined to wither away and be dissipated; the cold logic of facts proved it mistaken, but did not make it while it lasted less sanctifying and cheering. Blessed be God! there is another kind of hope, born of experience, and founded, not on ignorance, but on knowledge. This hope dawned on the Church, as the other sank beneath the horizon, and it has gradually brightened ever since, and shall not be confounded. As long as ignorance of the appointed times was best for the faith and hope of the Church, it was allowed to endure; but Divine wisdom had taken the precaution of embodying in Scripture *chronological revelations*, in order that, when ignorance ceased to be beneficial, as after the lapse of ages could not but be the case, when increasing knowledge of the real counsels of God would be more sanctifying in its effects, that *then* such knowledge might be gradually attainable. Hence the true duration of this Gentile age was revealed, but *in a mystery*. To have revealed the times *plainly* would have been to shake the faith and damp the courage of the *early* Church; not to have revealed them *at all* would have been to deprive later generations, and especially our own, of a blessed tonic to faith and hope, of a much needed stimulant to courage and patient continuance in well-doing. So the limits of "the times of the Gentiles" were stated in Scripture, but stated in hieroglyphics, which only the lapse of centuries could by slow stages interpret, and which should not become perfectly clear until the long period itself, and even its closing portion, the "time of the end," were already far spent.

Chronological prophecy was intended, as we have said, for the benefit of *later* generations, and especially of *the last*. The lapse of time only could fulfil it, and the lapse of time only could explain it. The light that it sheds falls not on times near its own, but—as a lighthouse illuminates the ocean afar, and not the rock on which it stands—on remote future ages.

But while fully granting that a veil of mystery was in ages past allowed to rest on the distant future, so that the early Fathers could only make the most distant approaches

Digitized by Google

to any true understanding of the predictions, and the Protestants of the Reformation era, while coming much nearer the truth, could still see it only dimly and indistinctly, like "men as trees walking"; granting that a hundred incorrect calculations of the "times" have been made in different generations, only a few of the *later* of which have been justified by the event: granting all this, we still ask, is there not good ground for believing that God will fulfil His own word, "and that in the time of the end" *the wise shall understand these sacred predictions?* If they had been designed to be understood by those to whom they were given, they would of course have been couched in clearer language. If, on the other hand, they were never intended to be understood at all, *what was the use of giving them?* The style in which they are given, as well as the actual result, prove that they were *not* intended to be understood until history should interpret them, that they were given to one generation for the benefit of other and distant generations. Partial fulfilments began to throw partial light upon them many centuries ago, and the Reformers in their day obtained the true clue. Each additional accomplishment has given additional light, till now that we have reached "the time of the end" all stands out clearly and distinctly.

To Daniel it was said, as regards these sacred times and seasons, "Shut thou up the vision; for it shall be for many days." The words are closed up and sealed *until* "the time of the end." To John, 600 years later, it was said, "Seal *not* the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for *the time is at hand*"—clear evidence that the lapse of time is an element in the comprehension of prophecy. Now, after eighteen centuries more have passed, need we wonder that the true fulfilment can be, not only partially traced, but clearly demonstrated?

But granting that "the times of the Gentiles" are 2,520 years in duration, and that they began with the Babylonish captivity, are there no further difficulties attending the solution of the problem of our own chronological position in this long period?

There are very many! The truth never lies on the surface. The captivity era leaves a broad, historical margin, as in

Digitized by Google

its widest scope including both Israel and Judah, it lasted at least 160 years. If we can only reach the general conclusion that somewhere in an analogous period, after the lapse of "seven times," we may hope to behold the dawn of the blessed "times of the restitution of all things," we shall still be left with only a vague conviction that we are living somewhere in "the time of the end." If this was all that chronological prophecy could in these last days do for us, we might almost as well be without it! The general promises of Scripture, such as, "Behold, I come quickly," "the time is short," "the Lord is at hand," etc., would be almost as helpful as chronological predictions, which indicated the end of the age *only within a few centuries.*

Moreover, we must remember the lesson which we have learned from the book of nature, that there are *years of different lengths:* the lunar of 354, the calendar of 360, and the solar of 365 days each. Which scale shall we adopt in measuring the times of the Gentiles? or rather, which seems to have been adopted by the inspiring Spirit in chronological prophecy? Nature measures years on all three scales; and men in different ages have adopted sometimes one, and sometimes another. At this present time the Christian almanac is solar, and the Mohammedan lunar; and in the long period which we are considering it makes seventy-five years' difference whether we employ the first of these scales or the last. Here then is an *astronomical* margin of seventy-five years to be added to the *historical* margin of 160 years, and a period of 235 years results, any one of which might be said in a sense to be 2,520 years from the commencement of "the times of the Gentiles."

While therefore we may fearlessly assert in a broad, general way, that we are now living twenty-five centuries from the fall of Judah and the rise of Babylon,—since those events took place in the sixth century before Christ, and we are living in the nineteenth century after, and nineteen and six are twenty-five,—yet this is evidently only a rough and very inaccurate statement, a mere approximation to the truth, which ought not to satisfy us, any more than a similar approximation would have satisfied Daniel. *There is room for further "study of books."* There is more light than this

Digitized by Google

to be obtained by those who care to seek it—glad and glorious light, well worth the trouble of study! To those who seek such light the questions will present themselves:

I. Is it possible to make a rational and well-founded selection of the year or years which form the true starting-points of "the times of the Gentiles"? And

II. Is there anything to determine the scale by which the period should be measured?

The reply to the first of these questions is just what the Daniel parallel would lead us to expect. We shall find, as we look into it, that there are *several termini a quo*, leading to *several* corresponding *termini ad quem*. There are incipient, central, and final dates of *commencement*, from which respectively, after a lapse of 2,520 years, there are corresponding incipient, central, and final dates of *close;* moreover *the years of crisis* in the fall of Israel and Judah are answered, after "seven times," by years of crisis in the fall of those powers which have been the great oppressors of the Israel of God spiritual and literal. The years of crisis in the *rise* of the literal Babylon are followed, at the distance of "seven times," by years of crisis in the *fall* of the spiritual Babylon, and in the *fall* of Islam, the two last forms of Gentile power predicted by Bible prophecy.

The reply to the second question, as to the true *scale*, is again what the Daniel parallel would lead us to expect, that *all three scales are employed;* lunar, calendar, and solar measurements of the great period can all be *distinctly discerned*. Hence chronological prophecy directs our attention to no date, to no one year, as marking the end of "the times of the Gentiles," *but rather to an era;* an era in which, measured *from* the various commencing dates *by* the various scales, the period is found to run out *again and again*, each close being marked by events, which are distinctly *steps and stages* in *a great historical movement, of a nature directly contrary* to *the movement of Daniel's day*. *That* was the decline and fall of Judah, and the rise of Gentile Babylon; *this* is the decline and fall of "Babylon the Great," and the gradual rising again of the people of God, Jewish and Christian.

After the lapse of 2,520 years from the starting-points of Babylonian dominion, we find *not*, as then, the overthrow of

LIBRARY OF THE UNION THEOLOGICAL SEM

the people of God by their enemies, but the overthrow of those enemies themselves by the hand of God, in order to the deliverance of His people. As at the exodus, and on many a subsequent occasion, the destruction of the oppressor and the liberation of the oppressed coincide. God, who uses wicked men, warriors, conquerors, and tyrants, as rods wherewith to scourge His rebellious people, does not on that account excuse their wickedness. In *their* turn they also are judged; as witness Pharaoh and Egypt, and Nebuchadnezzar and Babylon. The principle of the Divine action is clearly announced over and over again in Scripture, and especially in connexion with the doom of the antichristian Papal power. "He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword."

We reach then the conclusion that, in order to understand like Daniel the number of the years in the period in which we are interested, we must study carefully, both in Scripture and in other authentic history open to us, the events of THE CAPTIVITY ERA of Israel and their dates; trying to realize what the story of those times really was, and what was the *relative importance* of the different crises that occurred in the overthrow of Israel and Judah, and in the rise of Babylon.

This on the one hand. On the other, we must study and ponder the events of the "TIME OF THE END," or the days in which we live, the events of the last century and a half, including many which we ourselves remember, and even those which are taking place year by year around us. And we must consider these events, not merely as isolated political changes, but as links in a chain, as *stages in the great movement*, characteristic of the time of the end. We must consider the *moral and spiritual nature* of that movement; we must compare it with the predictions of it in Scripture, and note the style in which it has so far fulfilled those predictions, so as to be prepared to form just conceptions as to the probable nature of the fulfilments of those parts of the prophecy which are still unaccomplished. *The analogy of past fulfilments* is our safest guide as to future fulfilments.

But when we have carefully studied these *two* eras, have

Digitized by Google

we obtained all the light which *can* be obtained as to our position in the course of "the times of the Gentiles"? Very far from it. In the mouth of two or *three* witnesses shall every word be established. The testimony of the *two* witnesses we have cited is in this case wonderfully confirmed by that of a *third*.

The great "seven times" is divided into two halves, and the predictions respecting the *second half* of the week are far more numerous than those respecting the whole period. Bisect a week, and you have three and a half days. Bisect seven times, and you have three and a half times. Bisect 2,520 years, and you have 1,260 years.

Now *this* last period is more frequently used in prophecy to measure historic episodes than any other. It is mentioned under various names, all conveying the same interval of time; it is sometimes called "forty and two months"; sometimes "1,260 days"; sometimes "time, times, and a half"—*some* mysterious designation being always employed instead of the clear statement, 1,260 years, in order that a veil might rest for a time over the period, and that its true scale might only become clear in the light of its fulfilment.

It is the duration assigned in Scripture to the dominion of the little horn (Dan. vii.), to the closing period of Jewish dispersion (Dan. xii.), to the treading under foot of the holy city (Rev. xi.), to the prophecies of the two witnesses (Rev. xi.), to the sojourn of the woman in the wilderness (Rev. xii.), to her flight from the serpent (Rev. xii.), and to the duration of the eighth or revived seventh head of the Roman empire (Rev. xiii.). We learn from history that *it has actually been the duration of the realities predicted by these symbols.*

It is also the duration of other historical episodes to which it is not attached in Scripture; it measures, as we shall see farther on, the duration of the four pagan empires of antiquity, which occupied the first half of the "seven times," as well as the lifetime of the two little horns, which occupy the second.

Hence we must study, in the third place, *a bisection era*, which throws additional light on the subject, and adds strong confirmation to the results indicated by the *captivity*

Digitized by Google

era and the *time of the end*. This bisection era lies centrally in the "seven times," and embraces the history of the fifth and sixth centuries. It was a period full of events of momentous interest to the people of God—events which have had a most mournful and long enduring influence on the Church; events the results of which are all around us this day, and which bear to the judgments which are to close the "times of the Gentiles" the relation of cause and effect. It witnessed the fall of Rome pagan, and the rise of Rome Papal—that great power which still *claims* the obedience of two hundred millions of mankind. It witnessed also the rise of that false Mohammedan religion, which to this day enslaves a hundred and fifty millions of men in Asia and Africa.

And not only should we study and consider these things for ourselves, but we may also avail ourselves of the study of those who have gone before us, as preserved in "books"; for in this science of the interpretation of prophecy, as in all other sciences, they who are rash enough to begin *de novo*, casting aside the results attained by their predecessors, on the ground that they sometimes arrived at wrong conclusions, are not likely to make much headway. The astronomer who should on the same ground refuse to utilise the researches, observations, and discoveries of all previous astronomers, would probably reach strangely erroneous results, and die before he could gain any well-founded comprehension of the true system of nature. Knowledge grows from age to age; the stores accumulated by one generation give a vantage ground to following ones. Rejecting all that time has proved false, we should avail ourselves of all that *time has proved true*, and to the amount of already recognised truth add the result of our own observations.

In the next five chapters we give the conclusions to which our own study of these three periods has led us, recognising that our selection of events may in some instances of course be mistaken. Where several answer more or less exactly to the terms of the prophecy, it is not always possible to select with certainty the one which does so *most* closely; other students may in some cases reach other conclusions; some whose judgment we highly esteem have indeed done so. But in

Digitized by Google

any case the limits are narrow and do not at all affect the main question.

We shall avoid introducing into the next chapter the question of chronological relations, reserving that for a still later one, in order that the impression of the *history* of these three eras may be left the more clearly and distinctly on the mind. When we reach the chronological question, we enter a region where there is much less room for opinion or for difference of judgment, as the results depend on astronomically verified data, and exact arithmetical calculation.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

THE STARTING-POINT; OR, THE CAPTIVITY ERA OF ISRAEL AND JUDAH.

HOWEVER accurately prophecy may have *been* fulfilled, it is impossible we should *perceive* the fulfilment, unless we are acquainted with the history which has fulfilled it. And even when we are familiar with the history, we may yet fail to trace the fulfilment of Divine predictions, from want of a due consideration of the moral and religious bearing of the events which it records; *i.e.* their bearing on the counsels of God with reference to the redemption of the world.

Symbolic prophecy is simply history written beforehand and in hieroglyphics. The whole bulk of it in Scripture is small; hence it is evident that the amount of history with which it is needful to be acquainted in order to understand such prophecy, and have well grounded convictions as to its fulfilment, is not very large. The Atlantic is broad, almost boundless, but the course over it steered by any given steamer is definite and restricted within very narrow limits: so the ocean of history is vast and wide, and every passing year makes it more and more impossible accurately to survey it all; but *the line of events in connexion with which the redemption of mankind has been and still is being wrought out* is comparatively restricted, and even in that narrow line certain points alone are of salient importance in connexion with our present subject.

The line, as we have seen, is that of the history of the Jewish nation and of the Christian Church, and of the kingdoms and powers with which they have had to do. It is the line of the four great empires of Daniel ii. and vii. The important periods in this line which it is needful specially to consider here are three:

Digitized by Google

I. THE CAPTIVITY ERA, introducing "the times of the Gentiles."

II. THE ERA OF THE RISE OF THE APOSTASIES, dividing "the times of the Gentiles" into two parts.

III. THE TIME OF THE END, closing that dispensation.

Before we can profitably consider the *chronological relations* between these three periods, and their respective years of crisis, it is necessary to recall the events of the periods themselves, and their dates. The force and meaning of the chronological facts to which we shall have to call attention later on, depend wholly on the character of the events of the three periods above named, in their relation to the natural and spiritual seed of Abraham. The events themselves are simple matters of fact, and can be verified by reference to reliable historical works on the periods. Scripture itself is the best authority as to the captivity era, though Ussher, Clinton, Rawlinson, and others may be consulted, and much light has been thrown in recent years on this remote age by the discovery and decipherment of the Assyrian and Babylonian inscriptions, especially the annals of Tiglath-pileser, Sargon, Sennacherib, Esarhaddon, Assurbanipal, and Nebuchadnezzar, etc. A multitude of historians, including Gibbon, Hallam, Milman, Ranke, and Ockley, give full details as to the bisection era; while Alison and many modern authors furnish the facts which we shall have to notice in connexion with "the time of the end." For recent years the annual *Times* summary is a trustworthy guide.

The following sketch will necessarily be brief. It will recall the history to those who are familiar with it, but it will hardly produce any adequate impression of the character of the epochs in question on those who are not so. We should advise such to refer to works like those just named or similar ones, so as to study for themselves, more fully than we can give them here, the important historical episodes mentioned, in order that their true and critical character in connexion with the providence of God may be duly appreciated. It is curious and interesting to note in the tables of contents of many of our great historical classics, that the epochs and divisions adopted by historians are precisely those indicated by chronologic prophecy.

Digitized by Google

THE CAPTIVITY ERA OF ISRAEL AND JUDAH extended over a period of about 160 years. The first deportation of the Israelites from their land took place under Tiglath-pileser, king of Assyria, whose accession is by the Assyrian canon determined to the year B.C. 745.

Nebuchadnezzar's conquests, extending from B.C. 605 to B.C. 587, over the first nineteen years of his reign, were the *final* stages of the decline and fall of Jewish independence. He was the great and typical monarch of Babylon, but he was neither the first nor the last.

When the prophet said to him, "Thou art this head of gold," he addressed the king *as representing the whole Babylonian empire.* This is evident, because he immediately adds, "After thee shall arise another king, inferior to thee," alluding to the Medo-Persian empire, which succeeded that of Babylon. Now we know that this latter empire did not arise after the death of Nebuchadnezzar *personally*, but only after the fall of his *kingdom* and the death of his fourth successor, Belshazzar. The head of gold therefore represents the Babylonian *empire*, just as the breast of silver represents the Medo-Persian.

Now the *first* king of the Babylonian empire of the image was NABONASSAR, and the year of his accession is an era of great historical importance, ranking with the greatest eras of history; such as the Greek era of the olympiads, the Roman A.U.C. era, the Syrian era of the Seleucidæ, the Christian era of the Nativity, the Papal era of Indictions, and the Mohammedan era of the Hegira. Its precise chronological point is also more certainly ascertained than that of any other ancient date, because it is connected with a series of exact astronomical observations, given by Ptolemy in the work containing his celebrated Canon; it is certain not only to a year, but to a day and to an hour: it is *noon of February 26th*, B.C. 747.

This most important era marks the commencement of the Babylonian empire, and therefore the commencement of "the times of the Gentiles."

Six years later, in B.C. 741, the future date of the destruction of the ten tribes was announced beforehand by Isaiah. Ahaz, the wicked king of Judah, had been terrified by a war-

Digitized by Google

like alliance formed against him by the king of Israel and the king of Syria, a powerful monarch named Rezin. The avowed object of their confederacy was to overthrow the dynasty of David and Solomon, and to place on the throne of Judah a stranger and an alien, "the son of Tabeal." Isaiah was directed to calm the fears of Ahaz by promising him deliverance, and reminding him of the unalterable purpose of God, that of the royal line of Judah, and of the kingly house of David, Christ was to be born; that the sceptre was not to depart from Judah till Shiloh came. A virgin (of the house of David) should conceive and bear a Son, whose name was to be called Immanuel. Ahaz was not therefore to fear.

Judah's national existence could not cease till SHILOH came; it might pass under an eclipse, as it did later on, but it must be restored, till the true Son of David should appear. Ahaz was informed that both his enemies would speedily be destroyed. As to Israel, the prophecy was a brief and a literal one, "*Within threescore and five years shall Ephraim be broken, that it be not a people.*" The national existence of the ten tribes, who were at that moment conspiring against Judah, would, it was predicted, terminate within sixty-five years.

Their captivity did actually take place, in several stages, within those limits. A careful study of the records given in the books of Kings and Chronicles shows that the first deportation of Israelites from their own land occurred as far back as the reign of Pekah, king of Israel, when TIGLATH-PILESER, king of Assyria, reduced the ten tribes to tribute, and carried the Reubenites, Gadites, and half tribe of Manasseh, from the other side of Jordan, into captivity. A second stage of the process was when Samaria was first besieged by SHALMANESER, in B.C. 723. The city fell after a three years' siege (B.C. 721), and Shalmaneser carried Israel away captive into Assyria, and placed them "in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes." [1]

[1] 2 Kings xv. 29; 1 Chron. v. 26. See also the inscriptions of Tiglath-pileser II., in "Assyrian Discoveries," by George Smith, pp. 276–286. The annals of this king are in a very imperfect and broken condition, but much of the deepest interest to Biblical scholars can still be made out

Digitized by Google

"For so it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the Lord their God . . . and had feared other gods, and walked in the statutes of the heathen, . . . and did secretly those things that were not right against the Lord their God. . . . And they set them up images and groves in every high hill, and under every green tree: and there they burnt incense in all the high places, as did the heathen whom the Lord carried away before them; and wrought wicked things to provoke the Lord to anger: for they served idols, whereof the Lord had said unto them, Ye shall not do this thing. Yet the Lord testified against Israel, . . . saying, Turn ye from your evil ways. . . . Notwithstanding they would not hear, but hardened their necks, like to the neck of their fathers, that did not believe in the Lord their God. And they rejected His statutes and His covenant. . . . They caused their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire, and used divination and enchantments, and sold themselves to do evil in the sight of the Lord. Therefore the Lord was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of His sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only. . . . So was Israel carried away out of their own land to Assyria unto this day."

The next critical date in the captivity era is that of the invasion of Judæa by Sennacherib, B.C. 713. The association of this memorable incident with Hezekiah's faith and prayer, and with the signal deliverance which God wrought for His people, the large space in the sacred narrative given to a description of it, compared with that devoted to other stages of the overthrow, makes this episode of the decline and fall of Judah one of special interest.

It occurred in the interval between the first destruction of Israel by Shalmaneser, and its final ruin by Esarhaddon, and it brought Judah to the *verge* of ruin, from which she was saved by a marvellous miracle. We read that "in the fourteenth year of Hezekiah did Sennacherib king of Assyria come up against all the fenced cities of Judah, and took them" (2 Kings xviii. 13). Hezekiah was distressed at the ruin of his kingdom, and, conscious of his inability to oppose the forces of the Assyrian invader, he asked for terms of peace, offering to recognise Sennacherib as his sovereign lord. An enormous ransom of 300 talents of silver and thirty talents of gold was demanded, to pay which Hezekiah had

from them. The names of Azariah and Jehoahaz, kings of Judah, of Menahem, Pekah, and Hoshea, kings of Israel, of Rezin of Damascus, and of Hiram of Tyre, occur in the records, which fully confirm the Biblical accounts of the campaigns of Tiglath-pileser in Syria.

Digitized by Google

to exhaust both the treasury of the temple and his own coffers. Having obtained this treasure, Sennacherib broke his treaty engagements, and continued to ravage the country, till of all the strong places of Judah *Jerusalem alone remained untaken.* Even the capital was so greatly reduced, that the foe offered 2000 horses, if Hezekiah could find riders for them! Proud and haughty blasphemies were hurled against the hapless defenders of the holy city by Rabshakeh and other generals of Sennacherib. Hezekiah's heart sank within him; but he spread the king's letter before the Lord, sought the intercession of Isaiah, and betook himself to prayer. God heard and answered; promised that the host of the Assyrian king should not even *attack* the city, but that He would Himself defend it for His servant David's sake. It was an awful emergency, and a great deliverance. Silently and swiftly the vast army was annihilated.

The following account of his exploits by the great conqueror himself is inscribed on one of the Assyrian cylinders. "And Hezekiah king of Judah did not submit to my yoke: forty-six of his strong cities I captured, 200,150 people, small and great, male and female, with horses, mules, asses, camels, oxen, and sheep without number, I brought out and as spoil I counted. Him, like a caged bird within Jerusalem, his royal city, I had made; towers round him I raised, and the exit of the great gate of his city I shut. I subjected him to my yoke." There is, it should be observed, no statement that Jerusalem was taken.

When the predicted sixty-five years had fully run out, in the year B.C. 676 (forty-five years after Shalmaneser's capture of Samaria), ESARHADDON, son of Sennacherib, king of Assyria, invaded the land of Ephraim, carried captive another detachment of Israelites, and thus finally destroyed the national existence of the *ten tribes.* They were carried away, never to be restored till "the times of the Gentiles" terminate. Unlike Judah, who, after their captivity in Babylon, enjoyed more than five centuries of renewed national existence, Israel were never again to dwell in their own land. Alien colonists were settled there, and Samaria ceased to be a royal city.

This crisis, B.C. 676, is a specially important one in the course of the Jewish captivity era. But for the prediction of the sixty-five years, we might have supposed that Shalmaneser's invasion was quite as important as that of Esar-

Digitized by Google

haddon; but the latter was divinely indicated beforehand as a terminal year in the historical movement, and the former must consequently be regarded as a minor stage in the process.

Esarhaddon's son and successor, Assurbanipal, carried captive at a later period Manasseh, king of Judah, some of the commanders of his army having made an inroad into Judæa, and God having delivered its wicked monarch into their hands for a time (B.C. 650–648). After some years in Babylon, Manasseh however repented of his sins. "When he was in affliction, he besought the Lord his God, and humbled himself greatly before the God of his fathers, and prayed unto Him: and He was entreated of him, and heard his supplication, and brought him again to Jerusalem unto his kingdom. Then Manasseh knew that the Lord He was God." This happened some time before his death, and during the interval the sincerity of his repentance was proved by his abolition of idolatry, and re-establishment of the worship of the true God. He could not however undo the evil he had done in Jerusalem; the final doom of Judæa, and overthrow of the throne of David, is especially attributed to "the sins of Manasseh, according to all that he did; and the innocent blood that he shed: for he filled Jerusalem with innocent blood; which the Lord would not pardon."[1] His son and successor, Amon, was also a wicked king; but the glorious reign of Josiah, a time of revival, followed, and the national existence of Judah was prolonged yet awhile.

As soon as the Babylonian empire was fully developed by the destruction of Nineveh, and had reached its height in the days of Nebuchadnezzar, the more serious disasters of Judah began. While still acting for his father, Nabopolassar, Nebuchadnezzar, in a war with Egypt, was victorious over Necho its king. This was the war in which Josiah king of Judah, foolishly engaging, was slain. The life of this good king seemed the last barrier that kept off the long predicted judgments from his people. A world of miseries followed his death, which was so bitterly mourned by the Jews, that the year of its occurrence became proverbial as a year of

[1] 2 Kings xxiv. 3, 4.

Digitized by Google

lamentations, "the lamentation of Hadadrimmon in the valley of Megiddo," the spot where Josiah was slain.[1]

His three sons all succeeded him. Jehoahaz was deposed by the king of Egypt, who placed on the throne his elder brother Jehoiakim. In the beginning of this king's reign Jeremiah, by the command of God, earnestly exhorted the people to repentance, and, standing in the court of the temple, denounced against them the seventy years of the Babylonish captivity, if they should not repent. Urijah also prophesied in a similar strain, and such was the enmity exhibited against him in consequence, that he had to flee to Egypt to save his life. He was captured, brought back to Jerusalem, and murdered; and Jeremiah narrowly escaped a similar fate. The prophet Habakkuk also had reason to complain of the stubbornness of the Jews, and was answered by God that He was about to punish them, and to bring on them the Chaldæans, "that bitter and hasty nation," which should march through the breadth of the land, and possess the dwelling-places that were not theirs, as if it were their own inheritance. "I will do a work in your days, which ye will not believe, though it be told you."[2] Baruch the prophet wrote in a book from the mouth of Jeremiah, "all the words" that the Lord had spoken to him concerning Israel and Judah, from the time of Josiah even unto that day. He read them in the house of the Lord, in the audience of all the people assembled at the feast of tabernacles, and was himself exceedingly overwhelmed and amazed with horror at the judgments which he was commissioned to denounce. Jeremiah comforted him, and assured him his own life should be spared in the midst of the Babylonian troubles about to burst on Judah.[3]

Nebuchadnezzar, who was at this time associated with his father in the kingdom, had overthrown the Egyptians at the battle of Carchemish, when he first besieged Jerusalem; and God gave the wicked city and its impenitent king into his hands, as He had foretold. He put Jehoiakim in chains, to carry him away to Babylon, but does not seem to have fulfilled his intention; for on Jehoiakim's submission, and promises of subjection, he left him in his own house, where

[1] 2 Chron. xxxv. 22. [2] Hab. i. 5. [3] Jer. xlv.

Digitized by Google

he reigned for three years as a tributary vassal to Babylon, and then rebelled. This brought down bands of the Chaldæans and others, who came against him, and after a four years' struggle he fell, and, according to the word of the Lord, was "buried with the burial of an ass," thrown out and cast forth beyond the gates of Jerusalem.[1] "Surely at the commandment of the Lord came this upon Judah, to remove them out of His sight, for the sins of Manasseh, according to all that he did; and also for the innocent blood that he shed; for he filled Jerusalem with innocent blood; which the Lord would not pardon."[2] This overthrow in the fourth year of Jehoiakim, when Nebuchadnezzar invaded Judæa, and rendered the king tributary, B.C. 605, is the first *terminus a quo* of the "seventy years" of the Babylonish captivity, as is proved by the issue of the restoration decree of Cyrus, seventy years later. It was the year in which the king and people of Judah first lost their *independence* and became *subject* to Babylon. It is consequently the beginning of the "seven times" of Gentile power. One or two years later Nebuchadnezzar had the vision of the great image, of which it was said to him, "Thou art this head of gold."

Jehoiakim was succeeded by his son Jehoiachin, then only eighteen, who reigned but three months; he also "did that which was evil in the sight of the Lord, according to all that his father had done," and a second time Nebuchadnezzar besieged Jerusalem. The king and his family, his servants, his officers, and all his courtiers surrendered themselves to the Babylonian monarch, who carried them to Babylon, with ten thousand of the principal men of the land, and seven thousand mechanics, "all that were strong and fit for war," together with the treasures of the temple and of the king's house, *leaving only "the poorest sort of the people of the land."*

Ezekiel the prophet was among this party of captives (as Daniel had been among the previous party), and consequently he always reckons from this year, "*the year of our captivity*," as he terms it in his prophecy. It was the year B.C. 598, and *a very important* and *principal* year of crisis in the captivity era, a year marking the height of Nebuchadnezzar's power. It was also the year of the birth of that

[1] Jer. xxii. 18, 19. [2] 2 Kings xxiv. 3, 4.

Digitized by Google

monarch who was to be the destroyer of Babylon and the deliverer of Israel, Cyrus the Persian. In the Persian language, this name signifies "the sun," and Cyrus is in some respects a type of the "Sun of Righteousness," who shall yet arise with healing in His wings, to deliver Israel in a far more glorious sense.

One more fatal stage of overthrow and captivity awaited Jerusalem. Judah had been destroyed, and its noblest sons and daughters, including most of the priests, languished in exile. But the temple of Solomon still stood, though bereft of its treasures and its glory. After the fall of Jehoiachin, Zedekiah, his uncle, not his legal heir, had been placed by Nebuchadnezzar on the throne at Jerusalem, nominally as king, but virtually as Babylonian viceroy; a position he occupied for eleven years.

Like his predecessors, this man did evil in the sight of the Lord, and by his rebellion against Nebuchadnezzar, to whom he had taken an oath of subjection, he provoked the final stage of Judah's destruction. The result was that in the year B.C. 589, nine years after the fall of Jehoiachin, the city was a third time besieged.

Jeremiah had forewarned the people of the total destruction that was coming, but they would not hearken. When the Chaldæan armies actually approached the walls, they were in the end of the observances of the sabbatical year, when according to Mosaic law liberty was to be proclaimed to all servants. In the fear engendered by the siege the people complied with this Divine statute, and liberated their slaves; but when Pharaoh-Hophrah approached for their succour, and the Babylonians for a time raised the siege, they took back their Hebrew slaves again, and made them serve as before, contrary to the covenant into which they had entered. For this sin they were severely reproached by Jeremiah, who told them that God would "proclaim liberty to the sword, to the pestilence, and to the famine against them," and that the siege should be renewed by the Chaldæans, and their city taken and destroyed by fire. And so it came to pass. In the second year of the siege the city fell. Zedekiah and all the men of war fled by night, but were pursued and overtaken; the king was brought

Digitized by Google

before Nebuchadnezzar at Riblah; his children were slaughtered before his eyes, which were then put out, and, loaded with chains, he was carried away to Babylon, fulfilling thus the remarkable prophecy, that with his eyes he should see the *king* of Babylon, but that he would never see the *city*, though he would die there (Ezek. xii. 13). Then followed the supreme act of destruction. Nebuzaradan, captain of the guard, made his entry into Jerusalem on a sabbath day, set fire to the king's palace, to all the mansions of Jerusalem, *and to the temple!* That sacred temple—in which the glory of Jehovah had been manifested, which Solomon had erected, Hezekiah and Josiah restored, which had stood for between four and five centuries, the scene of Jewish sacrifice and the centre of Jewish worship, the "holy and beautiful house" in which so many generations had praised God—perished in the flames. A second temple was afterwards reared on its site, but was "as nothing" to Solomon's temple in its glory. After having been wonderfully enlarged and improved by Herod, it also perished in the flames kindled by the Roman soldiery of Titus. Five centuries later a Christian church crowned the sacred site. When Omar the Saracen captured Jerusalem, it became a Mohammedan mosque, and for twelve centuries that mosque, and the adjoining one erected by Omar, which bears his name, have defiled the sacred hill of Moriah, where Abraham offered his son, his only son. But all these events lay in the distant future on that fateful day when Jerusalem finally fell before Babylon, B.C. 587. The walls of the city were rased to the ground, and the rest of the Jewish people were deported to Babylon, and continued there for the remainder of the seventy years, while the land kept sabbath.

This period of 160 years, extending from B.C. 747 to B.C. 587—that is, from the first of Nabonassar to the nineteenth of Nebuchadnezzar—may well therefore be called the *captivity era*. It was a period during which the Jewish monarchy was falling, and Babylonish or Gentile monarchy rising triumphant over it, as well as over Egypt and other countries. In 2 Kings xxiv. 7 we read, "The king of Babylon had taken *from the river of Egypt unto the river Euphrates all that pertained to the king of Egypt*," as well as

Digitized by Google

all that pertained to the king of Judah. He had virtually rendered himself supreme.

There is no doubt either about the above events or their dates; they are not drawn from the Bible alone. The records on the stones in the British Museum confirm the statements of Scripture. On one of these, for instance, we read Shalmaneser's vainglorious description of his conquests.

"I am Shalmaneser, king of multitudes of men, prince and hero, king of all the four zones, the marcher over of the whole world! In my first year I crossed the Euphrates in its flood to the sea of the setting sun; my weapons on the sea I rested; to Mount Amanus I went up; logs of cedar wood and pine wood I cut; an image of my royalty I erected; of large size I constructed it. . . . In my eleventh year cities too of countless number I captured in the land of the Hittites. . . . I forced under my dominion the land which would not bow to me, I broke the pride of kings; being king, I have had no equal among the kings from the first day of my accession; being a warrior, I did not withdraw from battles and fights; all countries I crushed; I asked from them the symbols of submission; I besieged and occupied the town of Samaria; I brought into captivity 27,280 persons; I took them to Assyria, and instead of them I placed men to live there whom my hand had conquered. I instituted over them my lieutenants as governors, and imposed on them tribute like the Assyrians."

After naming a number of other places which he had subdued, he adds of one of them, "Those who remained I pulled them out of their dwellings, and placed them in the town of Samaria."

"Hezekiah, king of Judah, did not submit to my yoke; forty-six of his cities, strong fortresses, and cities of their territory which were without number, I besieged, I captured, I plundered, I counted as spoil. I made Hezekiah himself like a caged bird in the midst of Jerusalem, the city of his royalty. Garrison towers over against him I raised; his cities which I had plundered from the midst of his country I separated, and made them over to the kings of Ashdod, Askelon, Ekron, and Gaza. I diminished his land. In addition to previous taxes I imposed on them a tribute. The fear of the approach of my majesty overwhelmed Hezekiah himself, and the soldiers whom he had called to enter Jerusalem, his royal city; he consented to the payment of tribute; the treasures of his palace, his daughters, the women of his palace, male and female musicians, he sent to Nineveh, the city of my power. . . . On my return I seated Esarhaddon, my son, on the throne of his dominion, and entrusted him with authority."

Digitized by Google

Such were the *facts* of this melancholy CAPTIVITY ERA. Its moral features are most solemn and instructive. Though long threatened and distinctly foretold by revelation, it was not expected, or feared, or even deemed credible. When the judgments had actually begun, they were not accepted as from God, nor did their early stages awaken conscience, produce repentance, or lead to serious apprehension. The warnings of the prophets were despised, treated either with ridicule or resentment, and produced only persecution to those who uttered them. The words of Jeremiah, recorded by Baruch, were read to King Jehoiakim; but though he witnessed one Babylonish overthrow, and had himself been bound and all but carried away captive, and was even then tributary to Nebuchadnezzar, yet he turned a deaf ear to the word of the Lord, and dared *to burn the book* that contained the Divine denunciations. The dungeon was awarded to Jeremiah as his due, and his life was preserved with difficulty by his friends. False prophets who cried peace, peace, when there was no peace, were heard and heeded, and the true witness was despised and rejected.

A vain alliance with idolatrous Egypt was eagerly sought, though it had been foretold that it would prove but as a staff of reed, wounding the hand of him who leant on it: its only result was that Egypt and Judah had to share one and the same sad fate. Jehoahaz, Jehoiakim, Jehoiachin fell one after another, yet Zedekiah learned no lesson! When the Chaldæan armies had ravaged the country, and were actually within sight of Jerusalem, he repented, like Pharaoh, for a moment; but no sooner was the danger averted than he afresh defied the Lord.

Even at the very last, when God set before them life and death, comfirmaing His oft-repeated assurance that the city would be miserably destroyed, together with all those who chose to abide in it, but confirming also His promise of life and safety to those who voluntarily surrendered to the Chaldæans, Zedekiah and his people would not heed, but rushed madly on their tragic fate.

The terrible doom denounced was only too well deserved. Boastful self-exaltation, inveterate and multiplied idolatry, rebellion against every law of God, secular and sacred, cor-

Digitized by Google

ruption and cruelty, violence and blood, refusal to amend, refusal to believe, slaughter of the faithful witnesses, and Pharaoh-like hardening of the heart against the first stages of the Divine judgment,—these were the iniquities that brought down the righteous wrath of God until there was "no remedy."

No remedy! No "healing," as the margin has it; no possibility of healing the inveterate sore of Judah! Of Zedekiah, who reigned in Jerusalem for the last eleven years of its existence, the Divine record is, that he only "did that which was evil in the sight of the Lord his God, and humbled not himself before Jeremiah the prophet speaking from the mouth of the Lord. And he also rebelled against King Nebuchadnezzar, who had made him swear by God: but he stiffened his neck, and hardened his heart from turning unto the Lord God of Israel." And as to his subjects, it is said:

"Moreover all the chief of the priests, and the people, transgressed very much after all the abominations of the heathen; and polluted the house of the Lord which He had hallowed in Jerusalem. And the Lord God of their fathers sent to them by His messengers, rising up betimes, and sending; because He had compassion on His people, and on His dwelling-place: but they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His words, and misused His prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against His people, till there was no remedy. Therefore He brought upon them the king of the Chaldees, who slew their young men with the sword in the house of their sanctuary, and had no compassion upon young man or maiden, old man, or him that stooped for age: He gave them all into his hand. And all the vessels of the house of God, great and small, and the treasures of the house of the Lord, and the treasures of the king, and of his princes; all these he brought to Babylon. And they burnt the house of God, and brake down the wall of Jerusalem, and burnt all the palaces thereof with fire, and destroyed all the goodly vessels thereof. And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his son until the reign of the kingdom of Persia: to fulfil the word of the Lord by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed her sabbaths: for as long as she lay desolate she kept sabbath, to fulfil threescore and ten years" (2 Chron. xxxvi. 14–21).

Now these various stages of the captivity of Israel and Judah occupied a period of 160 years. We must therefore measure the Gentile dispensation, at the close of which we

Digitized by Google

live, *not from any one year exclusively*, but from *this era of* 160 *years in length*, and from its various years of crisis. Considering that the whole period embraces twenty-five centuries, this historical margin of 160 years is not so wide a one, *in proportion*, as the historical margin which Daniel had to consider when he sought to ascertain where the starting-point of the seventy years' Babylonish captivity should be placed.

If the opening era of this Gentile age occupied 160 years, we may expect that the closing era, from the early *incipient* stages of its characteristic movements to their *final* stage, will at least do the same. It is likely indeed to do more; for it is evident that lunar as well as solar measurements of the year are employed in the chronological predictions of Scripture: so we must be prepared for an *astronomical* margin as well as an *historical* one. The difference between solar and lunar years in "seven times" (or 2,520 years) amounts to as much as seventy-five years; if we add this astronomical 75 to the historical 160, we have a *period of* 235 *years*, in which the closing events of the age—reversing those of the captivity era—may be looked for. Some of these would be likely to fall out at the *lunar* close of the period, dated from the *earliest* starting-point; others at the *solar* close, dated from the *latest;* and others again at various intermediate points.

A *series* of commencing dates would, in any case, give rise to a *series* of terminal ones, extending over an equal period; and as from each starting-point the time may be measured by a short scale, or by a medium scale, or by a long scale, the terminal era will, in all probability, be lengthened. That

Chronological Predictions are fulfilled in Lunar as well as in Solar Years

is proved by the case of the celebrated prophecy of "seventy weeks" to Messiah the Prince;[1] a prophecy which is perhaps more fundamental than any other in the Bible, as evidence that Jesus of Nazareth was the promised Messiah of Israel.

[1] Dan. ix. 27.

Digitized by Google

It will be well, before we go further, to point out the evidence of this fact, as it is very remarkable and important, and amounts to a demonstration.

That chronological prediction was given to measure the interval from the rebuilding of Jerusalem to the first advent of Christ. For fifteen hundred years the children of Abraham had been looking for his promised "Seed," in whom they and the whole world were to be blessed. Cyrus was a *type* of the great Deliverer who formed the goal of Jewish expectations, but only a type; and soon after Cyrus overthrew Babylon, before he had issued his great restoration decree, it was revealed to Daniel that "seventy weeks" had yet to elapse before MESSIAH would appear. The event proved, as might have been expected, that weeks of *years*, not *days*, were intended—a period of 490 years; and it is undeniable that this prophecy was fulfilled both on the solar and lunar scales, *and on the latter with most marvellous exactness.*

The starting-point was to be *a decree to restore and to build Jerusalem*, and the terminus was to be "*Messiah the Prince.*" Now there were two restoration decrees issued by Artaxerxes, and they were thirteen years apart. Either of them may be taken as the starting-point, as each involved a measure of rebuilding of Jerusalem and of re-establishment of Jewish polity and national existence. The two decrees are associated with the two names of Ezra and Nehemiah, and the second of the two—that given to Nehemiah—answers *most* fully to the terms of the prophecy. The first was given by Artaxerxes in the seventh year of his reign,[1] B.C. 457, and the second in the twentieth year of his reign, B.C. 444. The 490 years ran out on the *solar* scale from the first date, in A.D. 34; and, more accurately, on the lunar scale from the second date, A.D. 32-3. In both cases the last or seventieth

[1] It has been contended by some that the decree of the seventh of Artaxerxes must not be taken into account, because it makes no explicit mention of the *city*, as the later decree does. But the same might, with even more force, be alleged against the still earlier decree of Cyrus, which speaks exclusively of the temple (Ezra i.). Yet in Isaiah xliv. 13 God says of Cyrus, two hundred years before he was born, "He shall build My *city*."

Digitized by Google

week of years included most of the ministry of Christ, His death, resurrection, and ascension; together with the formation of the Church by the descent of the Holy Ghost at Pentecost, and the early proclamation of the gospel in Palestine.

But the prophecy states that the Messiah was to be cut off *before* the close of the seventy weeks (or 490 years), "*after*" the sixty-ninth had elapsed, and *before* the seventieth fully ran out; that is to say, *in the course of the seventieth week.* He was to be cut off "in the midst of the week," *i.e.*, of the last supreme week—the one week which is marked off from its fellows; the week which stands pre-eminent, not only among the seventy, but among all the weeks the world has ever seen; the week of seven years which witnessed the miracles, the death, the resurrection, and the ascension of the Son of man and Son of God. In the middle of this terminal week of the seventy Messiah would, according to the prophecy, be "cut off," and by the shedding of His own blood would confirm the new covenant with "many"—not with the nation of Israel, but with many, both Jews and Gentiles. He would also cause all Jewish sacrifice and oblation to cease by putting away sin for ever "by the sacrifice of Himself."

This chronological prediction was fulfilled on the solar scale from the *first* edict of Artaxerxes, and on the lunar scale *to a day* from the *second.* A simple calculation shows this. Seventy weeks are 490 years, but sixty-nine and a half weeks are only 486½ years; *this* is therefore the number of the years predicted to elapse *between Artaxerxes' decree and the death of Christ.* Nehemiah commenced his journey to Jerusalem in accordance with the decree given in the twentieth of Artaxerxes, during the Passover month, the month of Nisan, B.C. 444; and, as we know, our Lord was crucified at the same season, the Passover, A.D. 29. (See Appendix B.) From Nisan, B.C. 444, to Nisan, A.D. 29, 472 ordinary solar years only elapsed, not 486½. *But* 472 *solar years are exactly* 486½ *lunar.* Hence sixty-nine and a half weeks of lunar years, from Passover to Passover, *did* extend between Artaxerxes' decree in the twentieth year of his reign, and the crucifixion, or cutting off, of "Messiah the

Digitized by Google

Prince," A.D. 29. Thus the prophecy was accurately fulfilled, even to a day, *on the lunar scale.*

Now if the most important of *all* events was chronologically predicted *in lunar form*, as well as in solar, it is clear we may expect other periods also to run out on both scales.[1]

Now the long period we have to consider—the "seven times" of Gentile dominion, the lifetime of the fourfold metallic image—if measured on this lunar scale, comprises 2,445 ordinary years only, and not 2,520, the difference in that period amounting to seventy-five years.

We have said that these "seven times" extend from the gradual fall of Israel and Judah to their gradual restoration in the time of the end, that they measure the long period of Jewish dispersion and subjection to Gentile powers. This is true as a general statement, but accuracy requires that a distinction be made between Israel and Judah at this point.

The Divine grant of the LAND is to *all* the seed of Abraham;[2] the grant of the THRONE is to the tribe of Judah and house of David exclusively;[3] and the restoration of the glory of God to the TEMPLE is distinct from either. In chronologic measurements this distinction is important.

[1] The prophecy asserts that the death of Messiah would be followed by the destruction of the second temple (the temple just about to be rebuilt by order of Cyrus), by a fresh cessation of the daily sacrifice (just about to be recommenced), and by a longer and more terrible judgment than the Babylonish captivity (just about to terminate); that Judah's crowning sin in rejecting her Messiah would bring down God's severest judgments upon her, which would rest upon the Jewish nation till "the times of the Gentiles" being fulfilled, Rome, the great desolator, should itself be desolated and judged,—an event which, as we learn from other Scriptures, will take place at the second advent. *No chronology, however, is attached to this last event*, the object of the prophecy of the "seventy weeks" being to measure the time up to the *first*, and not up to the *second* advent of Christ. Chronological measures, terminating in this *latter*, had been previously given to Daniel in connexion with his earlier visions (Dan. vii.).

The reason why the first advent of Christ is not alluded to in either of the great prophecies of the "times of the Gentiles" (Dan. ii. and vii.) is, that it is too important an event to appear as a *mere incident* of the history of the fourth, or Roman empire. *It has an entire prophecy dedicated to itself and its consequences.*

[2] Gen. xii. 7; xiii. 14, 15, 17; xvii. 8.

[3] 2 Sam. vii. 13, 16.

Digitized by Google

Seven times of dispersion *have* passed over Israel or the ten tribes; for 2,520 years they have been driven from the land given by God to Abraham and his seed for ever. But not so Judah. Their *exile and dispersion* did not begin till the Roman war, A.D. 70–135, seven or eight hundred years later. In what sense then has "seven times" passed, or all but passed, over them? In the sense of *the loss of their peculiar and distinctive privileges*, the loss of their *regal honours* and pre-eminence, the loss of *the throne*, the loss of national independence. *That* dates from the captivity era, though their complete expulsion from the land of their fathers did not take place until 1,800 years ago. The throne of Judah has been vacant since the days of Nebuchadnezzar, and is to be vacant for "seven times." It is entailed however in the tribe of Judah, and in the family of David, to whom God sware "with an oath, that He would raise up Christ to sit upon His throne."

The critical dates in this captivity era which we have mentioned are the following

B C.

747. Era of Nabonassar, king of Babylon.
741. First chronological prophecy of Israel's desolation.
738. First deportation of Israelites under Tiglath-pileser, king of Assyria.
727. Shalmaneser's accession.
723. His campaign against Israel and Judah.
713. Sennacherib's invasion of Judah.
676. Esarhaddon's deportation of the ten tribes.
650–647. Captivity of Manasseh, king of Judah.[1]

[1] The exact date of Manasseh's captivity is not given in Scripture, but it can be gathered from the Assyrian annals of Assurbanipal. It is fixed by the rebellion of Saulmugina, in the year B.C. 650–648, as it was Manasseh's connexion with that movement which occasioned his deportation to Babylon. Saulmugina was a younger brother of Assurbanipal, and had been appointed both by him, and previously by their common father Esarhaddon, governor of Babylon, then a dependency of Assyria. He raised a dangerous and nearly successful revolt against his brother, in which Manasseh, as well as many other tributary kings, was compromised. The rebellion was crushed with revolting cruelty. See "Assyrian Eponym Canon," p. 162.

Digitized by Google

606–5. Nebuchadnezzar's overthrow of Jehoiakim in the first year of his reign.

598. Nebuchadnezzar's overthrow of Jehoiachin in the eighth year of his reign.

587. Nebuchadnezzar's overthrow of Zedekiah, with final destruction of the city and temple, in the nineteenth year of his reign.

The captivity era lies chronologically thus

160 years.

B.C. 747 ——————————————— B.C. 587

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

THE BISECTION; OR, THE ERA OF THE RISE OF THE APOSTASIES.

We must proceed now to recall the events connected with the rise of the two powers whose rule is in prophecy viewed as occupying the second half of the "times of the Gentiles."

The first half was occupied by the succession of four pagan empires, all of which ruled in turn over Israel, and held Jerusalem; and the last of which was officially responsible for the crucifixion of Christ, the destruction of Jerusalem and the Jewish nationality, as well as for the ten cruel persecutions of the primitive Church, ending with that of Diocletian.

When imperial Rome passed away, the commonwealth of kingdoms which constitute modern Europe rose up, and has existed ever since, united for the first twelve centuries of its existence by a common bond of subjection to Rome Papal, the rule of Rome being thus the characteristic feature in both the latter part of the first, and the whole of the second half, of this great period. During the second or tenfold stage of the Roman world, the bond has, it is true, been a *religious* instead of a *political* one, but it has been none the less real. The prophecy foretold precisely what has come to pass, that when the Roman empire ceased to exist as *one*, it should continue to exist as *ten;* that, losing its pristine strength and unity, it should be broken up into a commonwealth of nations, bound together by a common connexion with and subjection to Rome, a subjection differing in character from the previous one, inasmuch as it would be consistent with political independence, but one even more injurious, since it would at last bring down Divine judgment on the Roman or Latin earth.

Digitized by Google

That the number of these kingdoms, *ten*, would not be invariable or constant is implied by the statement that there would spring up amongst them a "little horn," which would make the number eleven, and that three others would be plucked up before this "little horn," when of course there would be only eight left for a time. Fresh "horns," or kingdoms, however would take the place of the uprooted ones, for at the end of the history the number is presented as still ten. Hence the number of the kingdoms was to be generally, but not rigidly or unvaryingly, ten. There would as a rule, throughout the whole period, be ten kingdoms, occupying the sphere of the western empire of Rome; the number would be elastic, sometimes more, sometimes less, but always *about* ten. Alexander's empire was represented by *one* notable "horn," and the dynasties that arose out of its broken fragments by *four* "horns." But Daniel foretells that Rome was to break up into a larger number, and that *ten* different kingdoms would appear upon the scene, and occupy, even to the end, the territory belonging to Rome, still having that great city as in some sort their centre and bond of union.[1]

European history from the fifth century onwards presents us with the fulfilment of this remarkable prediction, all the more remarkable because it foretold a state of things which had never existed in the world at the time when the prophecy was given, and which never did exist till a thousand years afterwards. Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome in

[1] These ten kings should be looked for in the territory of the western empire of Rome only. "The ten horns of the fourth empire must none of them be sought for in the realms of the third, second, or first, but exclusively in *the realm of the fourth*, or in the territory peculiar to ROME, and which had never formed part either of the Grecian, Medo-Persian, or Babylonian empires. The master mind of Sir Isaac Newton perceived this long ago. He says: 'Seeing the body of the third beast is confined to the nations on this side the Euphrates, and the body of the fourth beast is confined to the nations on this side of Greece, we are to look for all the four heads of the third beast among the nations on this side the Euphrates, and for all the eleven horns of the fourth beast among the nations on this side of Greece.' Therefore we do not reckon the Greek empire seated at Constantinople among the horns of the fourth beast, because it belongs to the body of the third."

Digitized by Google

its first phase, all sought and obtained *universal* dominion, and could brook no rival power. The prophecy foretold that in the distant future another state of things should arise, and that, co-existing side by side, a family of about ten kingdoms should divide the heritage of Rome, and, though no longer in subjection to it as the provinces of an empire, should yet, as independent kingdoms, continue to own a voluntary and spontaneous allegiance to Rome; they should "have one mind, and give their power and strength" to the Papacy, for the greater part of their existence, though in the end they should turn against it.

That this is a *fulfilled* prediction is evident from the fact, that never since the fall of the old Roman empire has Europe been united under one monarch, nor has it ever been divided into thirty or forty kingdoms. On the contrary, amid incessant changes, the number of the kingdoms of the European commonwealth has, as a rule, averaged ten. Machiavelli, without the slightest reference to this prophecy, mentions, as the kingdoms occupying the western empire at the time of the fall of Romulus Augustulus, the last emperor of Rome, the Lombards, the Franks, the Burgundians, the Ostrogoths, the Visigoths, the Vandals, the Heruli, the Sueves, the Huns, and the Saxons—ten in all. And it is beyond all question that, amid countless fluctuations, the kingdoms of Europe have, from their birth in the fifth century to the present day, *averaged about ten in number.* A census taken at different intervals reveals the fact that the number has sometimes risen as high as thirteen or fourteen, and sometimes fallen as low as eight or nine, and that it has incessantly oscillated between these extremes. And the division is as apparent now as ever; plainly and palpably inscribed on the map of Europe this day, it bears its silent testimony to the fulfilment of this great prophecy. The Franco-Prussian war and the unification of Italy have once more distinctly developed the normal number of the kingdoms of western Europe in the territory of old Rome. Italy, Austria, Switzerland, France, Germany, England, Holland, Belgium, Spain, and Portugal—ten and no more, ten and no less. Divided consequently at the point where the prophecy itself divides the history of Roman rule, we find that the

Digitized by Google

bisection takes place A.D. 476, when the last of the Cæsars fell, and the tenfold commonwealth of modern Europe commenced.

It is in the midst of these ten kingdoms that we are to look for the rise of the great apostasy. "I considered the horns," says Daniel, "and, behold, there came up among them another little horn." It is stated also in the seventeenth chapter of Revelation (where fuller details of later stages are given) that these ten horns are ten kings, which receive their power and authority as kings "*at one and the same time with the beast*," or Papal antichrist. The initial rise of the Papacy consequently must be looked for in the latter part of the fifth century; and the records of that age show only too plainly that already the characteristics of antichrist had begun to be manifested in the bishops of Rome. The high ecclesiastical rank attached from the earliest days to the Roman bishop arose from his position as *bishop of the imperial city*, which had so long been the metropolis of the world.

Roman Catholic and Protestant writers alike recognise the importance of this epoch in connexion with the rise of the Papacy. Cardinal Manning, for instance, writes:[1]

"To the least discerning mind it must be manifest that God had some purpose of His Divine wisdom in the migration of Constantine and of the empire from Rome to Byzantium. What could be more improbable than that an emperor should forsake an imperial city of a thousand years? . . . The Byzantine emperors ceased to be proprietors of Italy and of Rome. . . . Now *the abandonment of Rome was the liberation of the pontiffs*. Whatsoever claims to obedience the emperors may have made, and whatsoever compliance the pontiffs may have yielded, the whole previous relation—anomalous, and annulled again and again, was finally *dissolved*. . . . The providence of God permitted a succession of irruptions, Gothic, Lombard, and Hungarian, to desolate Italy, and to efface from it every remnant of the empire. The pontiffs found themselves alone, the sole fountains of order, peace, law, and safety; and *from the hour of this providential liberation*, . . . the chains fell off from the hands of the successor of St. Peter, as once before from his own. *No sovereign has ever reigned in Rome since, except the vicar of Jesus Christ*. . . .

"The throne of sovereignty was vacant by the visitation of God. . . . A power had grown up in Rome, far more imperial over the reason and will of man than the iron despotism of the Roman empire. . . . This interior and supernatural power of direction and govern-

[1] "Temporal Power," Preface, p. xlii.

Digitized by Google

ment over the actions and hearts of men flowed from one centre, and was embodied in one person, the bishop of Rome. . . . The floods which swept all the other authorities away threw out into bolder relief and more conspicuous prominence *the supreme pastoral authority of the vicars of Jesus Christ.* To whom else should the people go? They alone had, not only the words of eternal life, but the sole and supreme moral power to support and to reorganise the shattered society of Rome. . . . *The possession of the pontiffs commences with the abandonment of Rome by the emperors.* . . . The rebellion against the vicar of Jesus Christ is in the same order as the rejection of his Master. . . . God has instituted His kingdom upon earth, and fixed the head and centre of it in Rome, as of old in Jerusalem. . . . I showed you how, by an indirect but Divine providence, our Lord liberated His vicar on earth, in the plenitude of His spiritual sovereignty, from all civil subjection—first, by the translation of the seat of empire to the East, and then by the eventual *extinction of the Roman empire in Italy.* . . . The world has been waiting at least for twelve hundred years for the fall of the civil sovereignty of Rome, to see if the test of Gamaliel would have effect: 'If this counsel be of man, it will come to nought.'"

Shortly after these sentences were written, it did come to nought. Again the cardinal writes:

"The conversion of the empire to Christianity, and then its removal into the far East, freed the vicar of Christ from temporal *subjection;* and then, by the action of the same providence, he was clothed with the prerogatives of *a true and proper legal sovereignty*, for that state and territory and people was committed to his charge. . . . From that hour, which I might say was fifteen hundred years ago, or to speak within limits, I WILL SAY WAS TWELVE HUNDRED, THE SUPREME PONTIFF HAS BEEN A TRUE AND PROPER SOVEREIGN, exercising the prerogatives of royalty committed to him by the will of God over the people to whom he is father in all things, both spiritual and temporal. . . . *In the person of Pius IX. Jesus reigns on earth, and 'He must reign till He hath put all enemies under His feet.'*"[1]

The blasphemous pretensions of these passages are not more clear than their indication of *the point* at which we should place the first rise of the Papacy—the rise of that antichrist, who, sitting in the temple of God, or Christian Church, was to claim to be as God, and to be so regarded, obeyed, and worshipped by men. Cardinal Manning thus strongly describes the deadly wound which old, imperial Rome received in the fifth and sixth centuries:

"When the Church went out into the world, it found there a vast empire, which covered it with a perfect organization, social and political.

[1] Manning: "Temporal Power" pp. 182, 245.

Digitized by Google

It had one chief city, reigning over the whole world; it had one emperor whose will was the fountain of all law, one senate, one legislature, one code of laws. It had one political organization, uniting all nations, and one vast military system, holding all people in subjection. It had one great chart, and one centre, the *milliarium aureum*, the golden milestone, which stood by the arch of Severus, upon which were marked all the distances throughout the world-wide empire of Rome. It was ruled by the most perfect and minute legislation which had ever governed the natural order of the world.

Perhaps you may think that it was this organization of which the Church took possession. No; before the Church assumed its civil mission to create modern Europe, the seven vials from heaven were poured out upon that empire, and the seven trumpets blew, and the four winds of heaven were let loose, and the great angel cast the mighty stone into the sea, and said, 'Babylon the Great is fallen'; for that great empire was ravaged, desolated, and pillaged by the invasion of barbarians, by hordes from every quarter, until there remained of all its structures scarcely anything but mutilated ruins of its greatness, its aqueducts, its military roads, the Flavian amphitheatre, and the Pantheon. Before Almighty God sent His Church out into the world on its civil mission, the whole of that vast empire was burnt up as by fire and deluged by blood. Italy became a desolation, and Africa was abandoned to itself, and Britain was cast off, and Spain was forgotten: for the empire departed to Constantinople; the Byzantine emperors were feeble and helpless; they were harassed by the assaults of the oriental tribes, and Italy they were no longer able even to protect. This is what all historians tell us. There was a time when even Rome itself is said to have been without a living inhabitant, when foxes ran over the Palatine Hill, and their bark alone was heard in the golden house of the Cæsars. Such was Rome, this mighty Rome, which once had some two millions of inhabitants, and twelve miles of diameter, stretching from the Mediterranean Sea to the Sabine Hills; it was gone to desolation. And for centuries after this it was ever and again the object of attack. It was besieged, it was sacked, it was ruined again and again. All its civil power had departed, and its sovereignty existed no more.

"It was into such a world as this that the Church was sent forth to do its work. Christian Europe is *not the remains of the old Roman empire; it is a new creation.*" [1]

For some time previous to this crisis, the mystery of iniquity had been working in the Church. In an earlier part of the fifth century another claim to supremacy on the part of the bishops of Rome had been urged—*the authority of the keys, the successorship of Peter.* As early as the Council of Chalcedon, A.D. 449, and then in the Council of Ephesus, A.D.

[1] Manning: "Temporal Power," pp. 37, 38.

Digitized by Google

431, these claims were distinctly made. The headship of Christendom and the world was claimed by Pope Leo, A.D. 457; and Gelasius, Bishop of Rome A.D. 494, strenuously asserted this prerogative, styling himself the vicar of the blessed Peter, and saying in a letter to the emperor, "There are two authorities by which the world is governed—THE PONTIFICAL AND THE ROYAL, the sacerdotal order being that which has charge of the sacraments of life, and from it must be sought salvation. Hence in Divine things *it becomes kings to bow the neck to priests*, especially to *the head of priests*, whom Christ's own voice has *set over the universal Church*." The haughty assumption was followed up by his next successors; "so evidently," says Mosheim, "was the foundation laid, even thus early, of the subsequent Papal supremacy."

The event then which marks the commencement of the era we are considering is *the fall of Romulus Augustulus*, A.D. 476—the end of the ancient, and the beginning of the modern; the end of the empire, the beginning of the ten kingdoms; the end of the mere *secular* power of Rome, and the point at which its *spiritual* power began to be paramount. The Apostle Paul distinctly intimates this point as that of the *commencement* of the apostasy in 2 Thessalonians ii., where, speaking of the then existing pagan Roman empire, he says: "He who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way (or, that which now hindereth will hinder, until it be removed); *and then* shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His coming." From this initial point of the incipient rise of the Papacy to the time when all Europe bowed down before its pretensions, and the Papal antichrist sat firmly on his seat at Rome, is the period which we call THE ERA OF THE RISE OF THE APOSTASIES. The further principal stages by which the Christian Church fell before Babylon the Great, anti-typing thus the fall of Israel before the ancient Babylon, were:

I. The point at which the saints were delivered into the hand of the Roman pontiff by the famous decretal letter of the Emperor Justinian, in March, A.D. 533, constituting the Bishop of Rome "head of all the holy Churches and of all the holy priests of God" The emperor also in this decree

Digitized by Google

recognises him as his own head and as judge of the faith, and appeals to him for his approbation before publishing to the Roman world a formal statement of Christian faith; and he represents the unity of all the Churches *as converging to Rome as its centre.*

II. The accession of Gregory the Great, A.D. 590, is another marked stage in the rise of the Papacy. This man, who "stands at the meeting place of ancient and mediæval history, did more than any other to set the Church forward upon the new lines on which henceforth it must travel to constitute a *Latin Christianity.*"[1] Gibbon speaks of his "temporal reign," and others of his "sacerdotal monarchy." He was contemporary with the Emperor Phocas.

III. Seventy-five years after Justinian's edict there was issued another equally notable one by this Phocas, a centurion, who rebelled against the Emperor Mauritius, usurped his throne, and subsequently slew four of the late emperor's sons, as well as his brother, and tortured and beheaded his widow and her daughter. In the year A.D. 607 this cruel monster issued a decree conceding to Boniface III. the headship over all the Churches of Christendom, and even over that of Constantinople. This event is memorialized by the PILLAR OF PHOCAS, still standing at Rome, bearing the inscription: "Die prima Mensis August. Indict. Und. ac Pietatis ejus Anno Quinto. Pro innumerabilibus Pietatis ejus Beneficiis." This year constitutes a notable epoch in the rise of the Papal apostasy, especially as it marked also the time at which both the Anglo-Saxon and the Lombard kingdoms (the last of the ten) gave in their formal submission to the religious supremacy of Papal Rome. Clovis I., king of France, had been the first to do so, in A.D. 496, and so received the title, transmitted through fourteen centuries to the French kings, his successors, of "oldest son of the Church." In the days of Phocas there had already "appeared, on the part of the western princes, indications of submission and subserviency to the Roman pontiff in all that concerned religion and the Church, as of inferiors to a superior, of children to a father, of common mortals to one who, like the great Druid of their ancestral paganism, was

[1] ARCHB. TRENCH: "Lectures on Mediæval Church History."

Digitized by Google

the chief mediator, and the administrator of Divine wrath and favour."[1]

Anti-heretical decrees were also at this time first promulgated, and legal intolerance of the true faith of the saints furnished means for future persecution and oppression.

IV. In A.D. 663 Pope Vitalian enjoined the exclusive use of the LATIN tongue in the offices of Divine worship *throughout Christendom*, and thus completed the development of the *Latin, or Roman, Church*. Thus far as to the Papacy, or great apostasy of the *West*.

MOHAMMEDANISM, or the great apostasy of the *East*, rose also towards the close of this period. It was in A.D. 622 that the so called "flight" of Mahomet took place, an event which forms the era of the Hegira, the *terminus à quo* of the Mohammedan calendar to this day. He fled from Mecca to Medina, where he was received as a prophet and prince. The conquering career of his Saracenic followers commenced the year of his death, A.D. 632. The Caliph OMAR led his army into Syria in the course of that year; in August A.D. 634, Damascus was taken. At the battle of Yermouk the eastern Roman armies were overthrown, and the fate of Syria determined; and in the year A.D. 637 JERUSALEM was captured after a four months' siege. The Patriarch Sophonius, who was governor of the city at the time, had to surrender to Omar; and all the other towns in Syria followed his example. The conquest was completed in 638, and the Mosque of Omar was erected on the site of the temple.

Mohammedanism is one of those great movements which have impressed a new and lasting character on a vast number of the nations of the world. No power known to history ever wielded the sceptre over a wider sphere than this has done. In less than a single century Arabia, Palestine, Syria, Armenia, Asia Minor, Persia, part of India, Egypt, Numidia, Tripoli, Tunis, the Barbary States, Morocco, the African coast as far down as the Niger, Spain, Sicily, Candia, Cyprus, and other islands of the Mediterranean, and even parts of Italy itself, had fallen under Saracenic sway; and that sway extended,

[1] ELLIOT: "Horæ," vol. iii., p. 149.

Digitized by Google

not only to civil government, but to religious faith as well. Everywhere the corrupt and idolatrous form of Christianity prevalent succumbed before the onslaught of the vigorous monotheistic faith of Islam. Gibbon, the historian, writes:

"At the end of the first century of the Hegira the caliphs were the most potent and absolute monarchs of the globe. Their prerogative was not circumscribed, either in right or in fact, by the power of the nobles, the freedom of the commons, the privileges of the Church, the votes of the senate, or the memory of a free constitution. The authority of the companions of Mahomet expired with their lives, and the chiefs or emirs of the Arabian tribes left behind in the desert the spirit of equality and independence. The regal and sacerdotal characters were united in the successors of Mahomet; and if the Koran was the rule of their actions, they were the supreme judges and interpreters of that divine book. They reigned by the right of conquest over the nations of the East, to whom the name of liberty was unknown, and who were accustomed to applaud in their tyrants the acts of violence and severity that were acted at their own expense. Under the last of the Ommiades the Arabian empire extended two hundred days' journey from east to west, from the confines of Tartary and India to the shores of the Atlantic Ocean. And if we retrench the sleeve of the robe, as it is styled by their writers, the long and narrow province of Africa, the solid and compact dominion from Fargana to Aden, from Tartary to Surat, will spread on every side to the measure of four or five months of the march of a caravan. We should vainly seek the indissoluble union and easy obedience that pervaded the government of Augustus and the Antonines; but the progress of the Mohammedan religion diffused over this ample space a general resemblance of manners and opinions. The language and laws of the Koran were studied with equal devotion at Samarcand and Seville, the Moor and the Indian embraced as countrymen and brothers in the pilgrimage of Mecca, and the Arabian language was adopted as the popular idiom in all the provinces to the westward of the Tigris."—*Gibbon: "Decline and Fall," p.* 318.

Does any one inquire why these two powers, the Papal and the Mohammedan, should occupy so prominent a position in the predictions of Scripture as regards this Gentile dispensation? The reply is easy. No power ever exercised on earth has proved, on the whole, so injurious to mankind and so antagonistic to the redeeming purposes of God, as the Papacy. Its reign has been long, its sphere has been wide, its power has been vast. It has usurped the headship of the Christian Church, and the titles and prerogatives of Deity. It has corrupted the gospel, suppressed the Bible, and turned

Digitized by Google

Christianity into a mere baptized heathenism. Idolatries and false doctrines have been inculcated and promulgated throughout Christendom by its instrumentality. For centuries it made war with the saints, and overcame them. Millions of evangelical martyrs have been slain by its authority. It has injuriously affected countless myriads of human beings, during its course of more than 1,200 years, thirty or forty generations having suffered under it, either in the way of corruption or persecution. In a word, it has vindicated its title to be considered that system of supernatural and soul-destroying error, that dire and dreadful apostasy revealed by prophecy as THE principal power of evil, to arise between the first and second advents of Christ.

"How worthy of such conspicuous mention in the sacred oracles, of such solemn denunciation by the Holy Ghost,—how worthy of such pre-eminent fame (or rather infamy!) among the gigantic evils that have afflicted mankind,—how deserving of every dark designation bestowed, and of the dread doom denounced, has the PAPACY proved itself to be! The self-styled vicar of Christ has been His worst enemy in the world; the crowned priest on the Papal throne has been the undoing of the Church on earth. The system which asserts salvation impossible beyond its borders has destroyed the spiritual and temporal well-being of untold multitudes of men. Unutterably disastrous as have been its direct effects,—its millions of slaughtered saints, its myriads of deluded disciples,—its indirect effects have been hardly less terrible. By its priestly assumptions and pious frauds; by its notorious cupidity and mercenary practices; by its gross perversions of the truth and unblushing corruptions of morality; by its reason-revolting dogmas, childish superstitions, and endless old wives' fables; by its uniform opposition to social progress, and its habitual alliance with political tyranny,—it has brought all religion into contempt, and filled Catholic Christendom with scorners, infidels, and atheists."—"*Approaching End of the Age*," p. 225.

Could sacred prophecy have passed by unnoticed this gigantic and universally influential power, which ruled the whole of Christendom with despotic sway, and with inconceivably evil results, for more than a thousand years? No; to lead the people of God to shun all connexion with it, ample and repeated descriptions of it are given, and unparalleled denunciations are made against it. And as to the power of Islam, when it is remembered that, not only did it exterminate Christianity in northern Africa, leaving but a feeble and ignorant remnant of the Coptic Church in Egypt,

Digitized by Google

but that the professing Christians of the Greek Church fell by millions before the invasion of its savage and devouring hordes, its myriad horsemen from Central Asia, and that millions more of subject Christian races have groaned under its cruel oppression and destructive exactions; when we remember that it has put out the light of the gospel in the lands where it had its birth, and that, moreover, it has devastated Palestine and trodden down Jerusalem, carried war and bloodshed to the gates of Vienna and the northern slopes of the Pyrenees, threatening the very existence of Christendom; when we remember that to this day it dominates 150,000,000 of mankind, involving them in the darkness of fatal error and antichristian unbelief;—can we wonder that the spirit of prophecy should indicate beforehand its rise and its career, and announce its final doom.

The dates of the chief stages of the rise of these two powers in this bisection era are as follows:

A.D.	WESTERN.
476.	End of western empire of Rome.
494.	Council of Rome. Gelasius.
533.	Pope-exalting decree of Justinian.
590.	Accession of Gregory the Great.
607.	Pope-exalting decree of Phocas.
663.	Latinising decree of Pope Vitalian.
	EASTERN.
610.	Mahomet's announcement of his mission.
622.	Hegira Era of Islam. Flight of Mahomet.
637.	Capture of Jerusalem by the Saracens.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

THE TIME OF THE END. WESTERN OR PAPAL ASPECT.

We turn now to consider the closing era of "the times of the Gentiles," called by Daniel "the time of the end." The period must, as we have seen, combine six distinctive peculiarities.

1. It must be removed by *twenty-five centuries from* the captivity era; that is to say, from the fall of Judah and the the rise of Babylon, the first of the four great empires.

2. It must be removed by *twelve and a half centuries* from the rise of the western and eastern apostasies, the Papacy and Mohammedanism, each of which lasts "time, times, and a half," and perishes at the advent of Christ.

3. It must be a period in which "Babylon the Great" is passing through a series of distinct stages of decline and fall.

4. It must be a period in which the eastern apostasy, or Mohammedanism, is undergoing similar experiences.

5. It must be an era during which there takes place *a marked renaissance of the Jewish nation*,—a commencement of that liberation from Gentile oppression and of that material uplifting, which will issue in their restoration to their own land, and recovery of independence.

6. It must also be a period in which the *spiritual Israel, or true Church*, is experiencing a similar but spiritual liberation from the yoke of the anti-typical Babylon, an uplifting —a time of spiritual revival in the Christian Church, and of widely extended gospel preaching, not in Christendom only, but in heathendom.

Here then are six distinctive and peculiar characteristics of the period as a whole; and if we find them all attaching to the days in which we live, and if careful study reveals

Digitized by Google

the fact that never in the course of twenty-five centuries have all these features similarly characterized *any other period*, we shall then surely have good ground to conclude that we have reached "the time of the end."

As regards the first of these points, that the time of the end must be removed by twenty-five centuries from the captivity era, we have seen that the captivity era extended over 160 years, from B.C. 747 to B.C. 587, from the incipient rise of Babylon to the final fall of Judah. The corresponding 160 years after the lapse of "seven times" extend, on the lunar scale, from A.D. 1699 to A.D. 1860; and on the solar scale, from A.D. 1774 to A.D. 1934.

B.C. 747	seven times, lunar	A.D. 1699
587		1859–60
B.C. 747	seven times, solar	A.D. 1774
587		1934

We are consequently living (in this year 1886) 187 years from the *earliest commencement* of "the time of the end," and within fifty years of its *latest close*. This "time of the end" is, from the nature of the case, a longer period than the captivity era, because the difference between lunar and solar measurement has to be included (160 + 75 = 235). Reckoned from the earliest date on the shortest scale, the 2,520 years ran out in 1699. Reckoned from the latest date on the longest scale, they do not terminate until A.D. 1934.

The first observation we naturally make is that as forty or fifty years of the period are still unexpired, it is of course impossible for us to discern in history the fulfilment of the *closing* predictions of the prophecy. This is clearly the case; but we need not wait till it is high water before we decide that the tide is rising; nor do we hesitate to say that it is falling, even though it may not yet have reached low-water mark. Moreover, when we know that the fall of the tide occupies about six hours, and when we have watched it

Digitized by Google

steadily retiring for five, we have little question that the remaining hour will complete the ebb, and reveal low-water mark again.

So in this case. We do not say that "the times of the Gentiles" either have closed, or will close this century; nor do we touch any speculative question as to what events the next few decades may bring forth, nor as to the exact point in this "time of the end" which will witness the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ. Time will decide. All we do is to *study the history of that part of the period which has already elapsed*—nearly four-fifths of the whole—and to observe if *so far* the general movement seems to be in the predicted direction, and if special and definite fulfilments are perceptible.

The question therefore is, Have the 187 years of this closing era which lie *behind* us, the years from A.D. 1699 to the present time, presented the characteristic features of *the "time of the end,"* as above indicated? Have they been years of decay and fall both to the Papal and Mohammedan powers? Have they been conspicuously and undeniably such, so that the fact admits of no question, so that no previous period of their entire history presents anything at all similar or approaching to the course of events throughout this period. *Was there a turn in the tide* of their fortunes at the end of the seventeenth century? and has the subsequent movement been a steadily downward one? Further, is there any sign that the movement is even now arrested? or do things look as if it were absolutely irresistible? Has the world itself observed and noted this phenomenon? or is it a dream of prophetic students only? Is it or is it not a fact so familiar to civilized nations, as that the not distant result is taken for granted, as much as that the sun, when low in the heavens, will quickly sink beneath the horizon?

To ask these questions is to answer them. What historian, what statesman, what newspaper editor, what well educated person, could hesitate for a single moment to grant that the last two centuries have been a time of special, and previously unparalleled, decay and fall to the Papacy and to the Porte; so that these two great politico-religious dynasties, before whom for so many centuries western and eastern Europe

Digitized by Google

trembled and bowed down in abject submission, are now scarcely practical factors at all in European politics? Has not the king of Italy instead of the pope ruled at Rome for the last sixteen years? Is not Italy respected as a power of at least secondary importance, while "the States of the Church" and the patrimony of Peter have long since disappeared from the map of Europe? The pope is now simply a priest; he is a monarch no longer. As to the Porte, every one knows that it is an effete kingdom, "a sick man" already at the last gasp! Step by step within the period we are considering *both these dynasties have fallen from their once high estate*, losing first power, then independence, then tribute, and at last, as far as the temporal sovereignty of the Papacy is concerned, *existence itself*. The Porte still remains a temporal power in Europe, but does any one expect it to do so much longer?

It survives simply because European arrangements for replacing it are still incomplete. Its structure has long been so rotten, and its foundations so shaken, that it would have fallen to pieces like a ruinous old building, but that, in order to avert public danger, it has been propped up and buttressed by external support, until the fences and scaffolding needful for its safe removal can be erected.

The cause and the course of this double decay need not long detain us here, as we write for the educated, who are sufficiently familiar both with the facts and with their philosophy.

Both Popery and Mohammedanism as *religious* systems, as blasphemous apostasies from the true faith, are doomed, according to Scripture, to perish only at the coming of the Lord; but as *political* powers in Europe, their destiny—revealed twenty-five centuries ago—is to perish *before* the advent, in this "the time of the end," an era which to them politically is one of solemn and awful retribution for their deeds of corruption, tyranny, and blood, for their opposition to God and to His truth, and for their persecution of His people. To the world at large, this same period is an era of great and growing prosperity, so that when the end comes as "a thief in the night" men will be saying, "Peace and safety," and things go on as in the days of Noah and in the

Digitized by Google

days of Lot. But these two politico-ecclesiastical powers will as such have ceased to be beforehand.

The doom of the Papacy, as revealed both by Daniel in the Old Testament, and by Paul in the new, is twofold, consisting of, first, the progress of *slow consumption by the spirit of God's mouth*, and secondly, of sudden destruction by the brightness of His coming.[1]

Already the first of these has been marvellously accomplished, and that by the means indicated—"the spirit of His mouth"; *i.e.*, the word of God, the circulation of the Scriptures. The Reformation of the sixteenth century gave back to the world the Bible, which had for a thousand years been virtually taken from the Church, and buried in the Latin language. Now wherever an open Bible is found, there Popery loses its power; "The Bible, the whole Bible, and nothing but the Bible," is the watchword of Protestantism; and what has been the result of its circulation in the sphere of Catholic Europe within the last three centuries?

Just prior to Luther's movement, the pope, in a bull closing the Lateran Council, A.D. 1517, felicitated himself and his bishops, because the unity of the Catholic Church was at the moment untroubled by a single heresy. There was an end of all resistance to Papal tyranny. The long persecuted witnesses of Christ had sealed their testimony with their blood. Not an *avowed* heretic was to be found in Europe! And how stands the matter now? To-day there are no less than *one hundred and sixteen millions of Protestants in the world*—a hundred and sixteen millions of those whom Rome calls heretics! Germany, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, England, the United States—the greatest and most progressive kingdoms of the world—are *what the Bible has made them;* and the Latin nations of Europe, Italy, Spain, Portugal, and France, are what Popery has made them—Catholic in name only, infidel at heart, and just as much opposed to the temporal sovereignty of the Papacy as Protestants themselves.

The Reformation undoubtedly aimed the first and the most fatal blow at the power of the Papacy in its character

[1] See Dan. vii. 26 and 2 Thess. ii. 8.

Digitized by Google

as a religious system, for it never recovered from the wound inflicted by that movement. The Protestant states, instead of suffering for their revolt under the anathemas of the Vatican, quickly rose to be the leading powers of Europe. The pope was ere long obliged to defer to them; and the other European sovereigns who remained in his communion, observing the liberty and the prosperity of the Protestant nations, no longer trembled before the transcendental claims of Rome, no longer feared the Papal curse, or cared for the Papal benediction. The thunderbolts of the Vatican thenceforth produced ridicule and resentment, rather than fear and dread.

The Reformation had also the effect of largely reducing *the sphere of Papal dominion* in Europe. Germany, Switzerland, Norway, England, Sweden, Denmark, Holland, Finland, Iceland, and other countries, were henceforth withdrawn from the influence of Rome. The official report at Rome summed up the losses of the holy see in the Reformation movement in these words: "England, Scotland, Denmark, Norway, Sweden, and all the northern countries are alienated; Germany is all but lost; Bohemia and Poland are largely infected; the low countries of Flanders are so far gone that the Duke of Alva's remedies will hardly recover them; and finally France is full of confusion: so that nothing appears sound and secure to the Papacy but Spain and Italy."

But the decline and fall of the Papacy had at this time scarcely begun. Its still mighty and terrible power was wielded with deadly force for more than a hundred years after the Reformation, in the vain and cruel effort to crush the Protestants and their faith. The dark chapter of *the Papal reaction* against the Reformation may be dated from about the time of the anti-Protestant Council of Trent, for a century after which the pope, directly or indirectly, deluged Europe with blood in a desperate attempt to re-establish his supremacy. It has been computed that the popes of Rome have been the occasion of more wars and slaughter than even Mohammedanism itself.

The two great instruments of this Papal reaction were the inquisition and the Jesuits; and both were mercilessly

Digitized by Google

wielded. In Bohemia 30,000 Protestant artisans and 200 of the nobility were driven into exile before that kingdom could be re-subjected. In Switzerland, Protestant villages were laid waste with fire and sword; the Thirty Years' War raged among the kingdoms of Europe; the pope contrived to sow dissension amongst them in order to weaken his enemies by mutual antagonisms. The Spanish armada was sent against Elizabeth of England, her kingdom having been bestowed by the pope upon Mary Queen of Scots. The Dutch republic was almost annihilated by the Duke of Alva; deeds of cruelty were perpetrated, surpassing in horror any of the darkest period of pagan antiquity. After the inquisition had exhausted its list of infernal tortures, and the Protestants remained firm in their faith, Alva's campaign added the last touch of horror to their sufferings. Commissioned in 1567 by Philip II. of Spain to exterminate them, he in less than six years put to death no less than 18,000 by the sword, the gibbet, the rack, and the flames. The bloody council established by him soon cast its awful shadow over the land; men, women, and children were burned before slow fires, pinched to death with red hot tongs, starved, flayed alive, broken on the wheel, suffocated, drowned, subjected to all kinds of lingering agonies; and the whole country became one vast sepulchre.

In France the reaction was equally terrible. Civil wars desolated the country, and intervals of severe persecution intervened, and at last the awful massacre of Saint Bartholomew slaughtered at one fell blow a whole hecatomb of martyrs. Murder raged uncontrolled through Paris and the provinces; neither sex nor age nor noble rank was regarded by the murderers. The streets were paved and the gateways blocked up with ghastly heaps of the dead and dying. The small streams were filled with blood, and rolled in red torrents to the rivers. Fifteen thousand Huguenots were slaughtered in Paris alone, and 60,000 throughout the country in the course of one month. The pope, Gregory XIII., commanded special services and brilliant illuminations in honour of the event, of which he caused a medal to be struck, that Roman Catholics from all parts of the world might thank God for what he considered to be a triumph of

Digitized by Google

Christianity. Jesuit missionaries traversed France in all directions, and within a few years Protestanism in that country fell seventy per cent.

Elsewhere the reaction was equally powerful. The Emperor Ferdinand sought to extinguish civil and religious liberty in Germany, and would have succeeded in doing so, had not God raised up the valiant and godly Protestant hero, Gustavus Adolphus of Sweden, who saved Germany, and rolled back the flood of Papal invasion.

The struggle between the Church of Rome and the Reformation may be said to have continued in full force up to the time of the Peace of Westphalia, in 1648, when the prolonged agony of the Thirty Years' War terminated. Rome had to some extent been successful in its resistance of Protestantism. It had recovered its supremacy in France, and had re-imposed its yoke on Austria, Bohemia, and Bavaria; but the other Protestant countries had maintained their ground, and a line of demarcation had at last been drawn, after a century of conflict, between the territories of the two religions. The princes of Europe were never again arrayed against each other in war on religious grounds. Rome was obliged to abandon the dream of universal empire, and the boundaries between Protestantism and Papacy, which exist in our own days, were defined by this treaty. Protestantism became an element in the European system, in spite of the pope, and erelong the most progressive and important element. The nations of Europe refused thenceforth to engage in mutual slaughter, in order to uphold the Papacy. But Rome still retained terrible power to stir up political troubles, to incite monarchs to persecute their subjects, and subjects to rebel against their rulers. Louis XIV. made himself a willing tool in the hands of Rome, in France; and so did James II. in England and Ireland. The Jesuits made a desperate effort to subvert civil and religious liberty in England, and this brought about the English Revolution, which established Protestantism firmly in this country. It had of course been previously established under the Tudors, but was very nearly overthrown by the desperate efforts of Louis XIV. to re-establish Catholicism by crushing the Protestant nations of Europe. Holland, Germany, and England.

Digitized by Google

The Revolution, which delivered our land from political and ecclesiastical tyranny, by placing William of Orange on the throne, gave the power of England into the hands of that heroic champion of the reformed faith, and he knew how to use his opportunity.

In France Louis XIV. revoked, at the instigation of the Jesuits, the Edict of Nantes, by which Henry of Navarre had secured religious toleration to the Protestants of that country in 1598. Eighty-seven years of toleration had made them numerous, respected, and wealthy, and had the Reformed Church even then been let alone, it might have saved France. But in consequence of the determination of Louis to extirpate heresy entirely from his kingdom by the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, which had so long protected them, a most cruel and deadly persecution against them broke out. Large numbers were imprisoned, sent to the galleys, and slaughtered; there was no choice but suffering and death, or treachery to the faith they held; emigration was not permitted, and voluntary exile was therefore a difficult matter. They could not fly, as the Huguenots of former days had done; their exit from the country was prevented by dragoons, and to attempt to leave France was death. In spite of these laws some 400,000 are calculated to have made good their escape, and to have secured refuge in England, Prussia, Switzerland, and America, while an almost equal number perished in the attempt.

This terrible chapter in the history of Papal persecutions was nearly the last. A series of similar dark deeds had extended over about five centuries, the most sanguinary period of Rome's "war against the saints." But the days of her might were drawing to a close, and the end of the seventeenth century may be regarded as the time when the Papacy lost the power, though not the will, to persecute. Some few after-waves of the terrible storm of that Papal war against the truth and those who held it did indeed extend into the first decade of the eighteenth century, but they were local and temporary, though terrible enough in character.

Such was the three years' war of extermination waged against the Camisardes in the Cevennes, whose fair and

Digitized by Google

fruitful hills and valleys were turned into a desolation by the cruel crushing out of its Protestant population. But the PEACE OF RYSWICK, which was signed in 1697 between the Emperor Leopold, Great Britain, the United Provinces, France, and Spain, and which was ratified by William of Orange, marked the end of the sanguinary conflicts between the Protestant and Papal nations of Europe, and secured the recognition of our "glorious Revolution," and of William and Mary as lawful sovereigns of England. It marks the full establishment of civil and religious liberty, and St. Paul's was opened for the great thanksgiving service celebrated on the occasion of the conclusion of this peace. Protestantism was never fully and firmly established in England until this epoch, nor indeed, it may be said, anywhere else.

But if the beginning of the eighteenth century saw—as it undoubtedly did—the end of the period when the Papacy could use the nations of Europe as its tools, the end of its power to persecute the Protestant witnesses for the truth, three-quarters of a century had yet to elapse before the judgments which brought about the more acute stages of its decline and fall, began to be poured out on it. The intervening period was full of signs of what was coming; it was the lull before the storm, the gathering time of the forces which were about to explode with terrific violence. About the year 1750 Voltaire began his scoffing attacks on Christianity in France, and for fifty years from that time he and his colleagues in the task of undermining all religious faith in the masses of the people, Rousseau, Diderot and the Encyclopædists, and others, were indefatigable in their attacks on the only form of Christianity with which they were acquainted—Popery. They succeeded in producing in France an intense hatred and contempt for the priesthood and the Church of Rome. All the Catholic nations, irritated and wearied by the atrocious crimes and terrible immorality of the Jesuits, began one after another to expel them. Savoy did so in 1729, Portugal in 1759, Spain in 1767, France in 1762, Sicily in 1767; in fact, they suffered no less than *thirty-seven* expulsions on account of their intrigues, their immoral doctrines, and evil practices, between 1555 and 1773. In this last year the ambassadors of all nations

Digitized by Google

demanded the abolition of the order itself, and Pope Clement XIV. was obliged to sign a bull for their entire suppression. The act, however, cost him his life.

The inquisition, the other great pillar of the Papacy, was abolished in Naples, Tuscany, and Parma in 1782, and in 1784 monasteries were also suppressed in Naples. There was not a single kingdom which had confidence in the Roman court, or was willing to fight in its defence, when the French Revolution burst like a hurricane on its head, and for the time swept it away.

From A.D. 1774, the year of the accession of Louis XVI., the unfortunate monarch who lost his crown and life in that Revolution, and whose accession took place in the year following the suppression of the Jesuits, we may date *the commencement of the overthrow of the Papacy under the judgments of the last days.*

France, which ever since the conversion of Clovis and the donations of Pepin and Charlemagne, had taken rank as "the eldest son of the Church," and been the first of Papal nations; France, which had been so prominent in her persecution of the reformed religion, and which had crushed out the new life and extinguished the rekindled gospel light in the massacre of Saint Bartholomew and the revocation of the Edict of Nantes; France, for more than a thousand years the main pillar of the popedom in Europe,—had by this time become anti-Papal to the core. Her people, once so superstitious, had revolted from the tyranny of priestcraft, and become openly and fiercely infidel. All restraints of law and order were then thrown off, and the country plunged into the maddest excesses of revolution and crime.

In the reign of Louis XVI. came to its crisis a tremendous, unparalleled, irresistible movement, which put an end at once to absolute monarchy, aristocracy, and ecclesiastical power in France; and which communicated to the neighbouring nations of Europe the shocks of revolution and the fierce fires of democracy, together with an anti-ecclesiastical mania that has never since been allayed.

The French Revolution is, by common consent, regarded as the commencement of a new era. It could never have assumed the character it did, had not the people previously

Digitized by Google

lost all fear of God and all respect for man, had not the national mind been blinded, and the national heart hardened against all claims, human and Divine. It is needless to dwell on the details here; our readers will mostly be familiar with the tragic facts: how the infidel democracy suddenly uprose in its might, destroyed the Bastile, issued its declaration of the rights of man; assaulted the king and queen by night at Versailles, and, murdering some of their bodyguard, forced them to proceed as prisoners to Paris, the bloody heads carried on pikes before the royal carriage: how the people confiscated all the vast revenues of the Church, all the domains of the crown, and all the estates of refugee nobles, for the use of the State; subjected to themselves all ecclesiastical, civil, and judicial power throughout the country; murdered the royal guard, and some five thousand leading royalists; dethroned, imprisoned, tried, condemned, and murdered the king and then the queen; declared war against all kings, and sympathy with all revolutionists everywhere: how the "reign of terror" witnessed the slaughter of 1,022,000 persons, of all ranks and ages, and of both sexes, till the streets of Paris ran with blood, and the guillotines could not overtake their work: how thousands were mown down by grape-shot fusillades; drowned in *noyades*, where in loaded vessels hundreds of victims were purposely sunk in the rivers; roasted alive in heated ovens; or tortured to death by other infernal cruelties: how Christianity was publicly renounced, and a prostitute enthroned as "goddess of reason" at Notre Dame, and worshipped by the National Convention and by the mob of Paris, with the wildest orgies of licentiousness—morality as well as mercy having perished with religion—how the most horrid mockery of the solemn rites of Christianity was publicly enacted, an ass being made to drink the sacramental wine: how the sabbath itself was abolished, and the decade substituted for the week: and how hundreds and thousands of priests were massacred or driven into exile, and the churches and cathedrals turned into stables and barracks. Taken as a whole, the French Revolution was a convulsion, in which the angry passions of men, set free from all restraint, manifested themselves, with a force and fury unprecedented in the history of

Digitized by Google

the world, against monarchical, aristocratic, ecclesiastical, and religious institutions.

Let these things be considered in the light of a mighty and successful revolt against, and overthrow of, absolute monarchical power, and Papal tyranny and usurpation, and it will at once be granted that *nothing similar had ever occurred previously* in the history of the fourth great empire.

Terribly iniquitous had been the career of the monarchical power thus rudely overthrown; and fearfully corrupt the priesthood and religion thus utterly and with abhorrence rejected. A solemn character of retribution attaches to even the worst excesses of the French Revolution. The Papacy in the hour of its agony was exultingly reminded of its own similar cruelties against Protestants. Papists were treated according to the example set by Papists of other days, and the worst barbarities of revolutionary France could not outherod the previous barbarities of Papal France.

"The more deeply and earnestly the French Revolution is considered, the more manifest is its pre-eminence above all the strange and terrible things that have come to pass on this earth. . . . *Never has the world witnessed so exact and sublime a piece of retribution.* . . . If it inflicted enormous evil, it pre-supposed and overthrew enormous evil. . . . In a country where every ancient institution and every time-honoured custom disappeared in a moment, where the whole social and political system went down before the first stroke, where monarchy, nobility, and Church were swept away almost without resistance, the whole framework of the State must have been rotten—royalty, aristocracy, and priesthood must have grievously sinned. Where the good things of this world, birth, rank, wealth, fine clothes, and elegant manners, became worldly perils, and worldly disadvantages for a time, rank, birth, and riches must have been frightfully abused. The nation which abolished and proscribed Christianity, which dethroned religion in favour of reason, and enthroned the new goddess at Notre Dame in the person of a harlot, must needs have been afflicted by a very unreasonable and very corrupt form of Christianity. The people that waged a war of such utter extermination with everything established, as to abolish the common forms of address and salutation, and the common mode of reckoning time, that abhorred 'you' as a sin, and shrank from 'monsieur' as an abomination, that turned the weeks into decades, and would know the old months no more, must surely have had good reason to hate those old ways from which it pushed its departure into such minute and absurd extravagance. The demolished halls of the aristocracy, the rifled sepulchres of royalty, the decapitated king and queen, the little dauphin

Digitized by Google

so sadly done to death, the beggared princes, the slaughtered priests and nobles, the sovereign guillotine, the republican marriages, and the Meudon tannery, the couples tied together and thrown into the Loire, and the gloves made of men's and women's skins: these things are most horrible; but they are withal *eloquent of retribution*, they bespeak the solemn presence of Nemesis, the awful hand of an avenging power. They bring to mind the horrible sins of that old France: the wretched peasants ground for ages beneath the weight of imposts from which the rich and noble were free; visited ever and anon with cruel famines by reason of crushing taxes, unjust wars, and monstrous misgovernment, and then hung up or shot down by twenties or fifties for just complaining of starvation: and all this for centuries! They call to remembrance the Protestants murdered by millions in the streets of Paris, tormented for years by military dragoons in Poitou and Béarn, and hunted like wild beasts in the Cevennes; slaughtered and done to death by thousands and tens of thousands in many painful ways and through many painful years. . . .

"In no work of the French Revolution is this, its retributive character, more strikingly and solemnly apparent than in its dealings with the Roman Church and Papal power. It especially became France, which, after so fierce a struggle, had rejected the Reformation, and perpetrated such enormous crimes in the process of rejection, to turn its fury against that very Roman Church on whose behalf it had been so wrathful, . . . to abolish Roman Catholic worship, as she had abolished the Protestant worship; to massacre multitudes of priests in the streets of her great towns; to hunt them down through her length and breadth, and to cast them by thousands upon a foreign shore, just as she had slaughtered, hunted down, and driven into exile hundreds of thousands of Protestants; . . . to carry the war into the Papal territories, and to heap all sorts of woes and shames upon the defenceless Popedom. . . . The excesses of revolutionary France were not more the punishment than *the direct result* of the excesses of feudal, regal, and Papal France. . . . In one of its aspects the Revolution may be described as a reaction against the excesses, spiritual and religious, of the Roman Catholic persecution of Protestantism. No sooner had the torrent burst forth, than it dashed right against the Roman Church and Popedom. . . . The property of the Church was made over to the State; the French clergy sank from a proprietary to a salaried body; monks and nuns were restored to the world, the property of their orders being likewise gone; Protestants were raised to full religious freedom and political equality. . . . The Roman Catholic religion was soon afterwards formally abolished.

"Buonaparte unsheathed the sword of France against the helpless Pius VI. . . . The pontiff sank into a dependent. . . . Berthier marched upon Rome, set up a Roman Republic, and laid hands upon the pope. The sovereign pontiff was borne away to the camp of infidels, . . . from prison to prison, and finally *carried captive into France*.

Digitized by Google

Here . . . he breathed his last, at Valence, in the land where his priests had been slain, where his power was broken, and his name and office were a mockery and a byword, and in the keeping of the rude soldiers of the unbelieving commonwealth, which had for ten years held to his lips a cup of such manifold and exceeding bitterness. . . . It was a sublime and perfect piece of retribution, which so amazed the world at the end of the eighteenth century: this proscription of the Roman Church by that very French nation that had slaughtered myriads of Protestants at her bidding; this mournful end of the sovereign pontiff, in that very Dauphiné so consecrated by the struggles of the Protestants, and near those Alpine valleys where the Waldenses had been so ruthlessly hunted down by French soldiers; this transformation of the 'States of the Church' into the 'Roman Republic,' and this overthrow of the territorial Popedom by that very French nation, which, just one thousand years ago, had, under Pepin and Charlemagne, conferred these territories. Multitudes imagined that the Papacy was at the point of death, and asked, would Pius VI. be the last pontiff, and if the close of the eighteenth century would be signalised by the fall of the Papal dynasty. *But the French Revolution was the beginning, and not the end of the judgment;* France had but *begun* to execute the doom, a doom sure and inevitable, but long and lingering, to be diversified by many strange incidents, and now and then by a semblance of escape, a doom to be protracted through much pain and much ignominy."[1]

The career of Napoleon, in the course of which these things happened to Pius VI., was a *second phase of the French Revolution*, and involved thus the total wreck of the Papal power for a time, and the loss of Rome itself to the popes. His coronation took place in 1804.

A single campaign made Buonaparte master of Italy; Milan, Sardinia, Parma, and Naples were successfully reduced, and all the great cities of the peninsula. The Austrians were defeated, and many of the pope's territories incorporated with the French dominions. Pius VI. had to pay five millions of livres towards the expenses of the war, and subsequently, when a democratic riot took place in Rome, it was made a pretext for summoning the aged monarch to surrender the temporal government; and on his refusal, he was dragged from the altar, and carried a prisoner into Tuscany, the Vatican was plundered, and the Papal States converted into a Roman Republic. The possessions of the clergy and monks were declared national

[1] THOMAS H. GILL: "The Papal Drama," book x.

Digitized by Google

property, and they themselves were cast into prison. "The Papacy was extinct, not a vestige of its existence remained; and among all the Roman Catholic powers, not a finger was stirred in its defence. The Eternal City had no longer prince or pontiff, and the decree was already announced that no successor would be allowed in its place" (1798).[1] The pope was forced to sign the Treaty of Tolentino, and was carried captive into France, where he died in exile in 1799.

In 1800, however, the fortunes of war leaving them free to do so, the cardinals were able to elect another pope, who assumed the name of Pius VII. Napoleon had just returned from his unsuccessful expedition to Egypt, and from selfish motives, perceiving that without religion it was impossible to govern the nation, he entered into negotiations with the new pope, and once more established the Roman Catholic religion in France, where it had been abolished by the Revolution. The position of the pope, however, was a very insecure one, and as he firmly refused to fall in with some of Napoleon's views, he in his turn speedily fell a victim. In 1808, the French troops again entered Rome, exiled the cardinals, and kept the pope a prisoner; and in the following year the Papal States were annexed to the *French* empire, of which *Rome* was declared to be the *second* city!

On this Pius VII. excommunicated Napoleon, and in retaliation the French troops broke into his palace, arrested him, conveyed him across the Alps to Grenoble, while Napoleon revoked the gift of Charlemagne, confirmed the annexation of the Papal States, and detained the pope a close prisoner. Pius VII. was treated with great severity, his friends taken from him and confined in different dungeons, while he himself was obliged to live on half a crown a day. On his return from Moscow, Napoleon induced the old man to sign the concordat by which he renounced *all claim to Rome for ever, and abandoned the temporal power.*

In 1815 Napoleon fell, and the allies once more restored the pope, at the same time that they restored the Bourbons. Vain effort to resist the purposes of God!

The restoration lasted but a few years, and even during

[1] "Rome, from the Fall of the Western Empire." By Rev. Canon Trevor. Religious Tract Society, 56, Paternoster Row, London, E.C.

Digitized by Google

that brief interval the Papal power was a name, rather than a reality, compared to what it had been in former times. "The pope sat not on his throne as once before; his power was crippled, his seat unstable; the riches of his Church were rifled, and a mighty precedent and principle of action had been established against him, which could scarcely fail of bearing similarly bitter fruit afterwards."

The year 1830 brought about another thoroughly anti-sacerdotal revolution in France. Charles X., who had acceded to the throne in 1824, had to abdicate, and his ministry had to flee for their lives; while the Duke of Orleans was proclaimed king, under the title of Louis Philippe.

In 1848 a third revolution again constituted France a republic; tumults broke out in Paris in February, the Tuileries were ransacked, and frightful disorders committed. Louis Philippe was in his turn obliged to abdicate and take refuge in England; and the "Second Republic" was proclaimed.

A fortnight after the fall of Louis Philippe a constitution was proclaimed in Rome, and the city and country were thrown into a state of revolution. Before the end of the year Count Rossi, the pope's prime minister, was killed, and the pope had to flee from Rome. He was again deposed from his temporal authority, and an Italian Republic was proclaimed; it was only by the power of the French that the pope was afterwards for a time restored, when Louis Napoleon had become president of the French Republic. With occasional pauses, and with gleams of passing prosperity now and then, the course of the Papacy has ever since been one of downfall and decay.

The year 1860 was to the Papacy one of sore trouble and dismay. It lost a considerable part of its remaining territories, and had the mortification of seeing a free constitutional kingdom established in Italy. It was the central year of GARIBALDI'S romantic and remarkable exploits on behalf of his cherished ideal of Italian unity. The pope, inspired with distrust of the French garrison who were upholding him in Rome, organized a mongrel army of his own, consisting of French, Belgian, Austrian, and Irish volunteers.

Digitized by Google

After liberating Sicily and Naples, and uniting them to the Italian kingdom of Victor Emmanuel, Garibali retired from the scene, and the Italian army crossed the frontier of the States of the Church, overran Umbria and the Marches, routed and crushed the Papal forces, and obliged them and General Lamoricière to capitulate in the fortress of Ancona. The pope, as usual, cursed his foes, but could not conquer them, and his dominion in Italy was henceforth limited to Rome itself.

In 1866 the Romish empire of Austria was worsted by Protestant Prussia at the memorable battle of Sadowa, a battle the results of which were as decisive as those of Waterloo. Austria received a shock from which it has never recovered, and was obliged to cede Venetia, which was annexed to the kingdom of Italy, while Prussia became one of the greatest powers in Europe. In 1868 the Spanish revolution took place; Queen Isabella fled, and Spain was plunged into years of cruel strife, in the course of which the Jesuits were banished, their monasteries and churches confiscated, and sold or pulled down, and the bones of the martyrs brought to light at the Quamadero.

This same year Pius IX. sent out his famous encyclical letter, *summoning* the œcumenical council for 1870. Six archbishop princes, 49 cardinals, 11 patriarchs, 680 archbishops and bishops, 28 abbots, 29 generals of orders, 803 spiritual rulers, representing the Church of Rome throughout the world, obeyed the summons to attend this Vatican council, which solemnly decreed the dogma that the occupant of the Papal chair is, in all his decisions with regard to faith and morals, infallible. Arrangements had been made to reflect a glory around the person of the pope by means of mirrors at noon, when the decree was made (July 18th, 1870); but the sun shone not that day. A violent storm broke over over Rome, the sky was darkened by tempest, and the voices of the council were lost in the rolling of the thunder.[1]

On the very day following this culmination of Papal arrogance and self-exultation was declared that terrible

[1] See "The Pope, the Kings, and the People." By Rev. W. Arthur, M.A.

Digitized by Google

Franco-German war, in which the French empire of Louis Napoleon—by the soldiers of which the pope was maintained on his tottering throne—*fell. The temporal sovereignty of the Papacy fell with it.* No sooner had the French troops been withdrawn from Rome, and the French empire collapsed, than the Italian government announced its intention of entering the Roman States, and did so. On September 20th, 1870, Rome was declared the capital of the kingdom of Italy, and became the residence and the seat of the government of Victor Emmanuel. The *Times'* summary for that year says: "The most remarkable circumstance in the annexation of Rome and its territory to the kingdom of Italy, is the languid indifference with which the transfer has been regarded by Catholic Christendom. A change, which would once have *convulsed the world*, has failed to distract attention from the more absorbing spectacle of the Franco-German war. *Within the same year, the Papacy has assumed the highest spiritual exaltation to which it could aspire, and lost the temporal sovereignty which it had held for a thousand years.*"

The temporal dominion of Rome Papal has already been consumed. Not a nation in Europe remains under it, and men marvel that they ever did bow beneath it. The *spiritual* power of the Papacy, its idolatrous religion, remains, and will remain to the end; but the *secular power* is a thing of the past.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

THE TIME OF THE END.—EASTERN, OR MOHAMMEDAN ASPECT.

FROM the date of the fall of Constantinople before the advance of Mohammedan hordes, A.D. 1453, up to the great naval battle of Lepanto, A.D. 1571, the Turkish power had been continually *advancing* in Europe. The Euphratean flood rose higher and higher, till it reached its highest point under Solomon the Magnificent, in the middle of the sixteenth century. It remained stationary at high-water mark for half a century, and even as late as 1669 Candia was added to the dominions of the Porte. But the last quarter of the seventeenth century was a time of fierce struggle, and of alternate victory and defeat. Wars with Russia and Austria severely shook the Ottoman power, and the war which was closed by the Peace of *Carlowitz*, signed in 1699, broke for ever the aggressive power of the Turkish empire. It closed a twenty years' struggle, in which the Porte had been engaged with Russia and Austria. The conflict had been attended with varying fortunes; but, exhausted at last by the sanguinary defeats inflicted on her by Prince Eugène, the Porte was compelled, in 1699, to lay down her arms, and make peace on most disastrous terms. Louis XIV., urging the sultan not to accept the terms imposed by its foes, said, "The Turks in all their wars have *never yet* receded; should they do so now, their *prestige* is gone, and their very existence imperilled." And so it proved. For a time Turkey remained however a mighty and formidable empire, holding under its cruel and debasing sway numbers of Christian nations.

A long peace with Christendom followed; but when next the shock of war brought the Mussulman forces into the field against Russia and Austria, *victory was again and more*

Digitized by Google

decidedly with the Christians. Crushing defeats were inflicted on the Turkish armies in 1774; the Russians surrounded the vizier and his troops near Shumla, in Bulgaria, and were able to dictate the terms of the humiliating *Peace of Kainardje*, by which Russia obtained the free navigation of the Black Sea, besides large cessions of territory. Thus commenced that dismemberment of the Turkish empire which has been going on ever since, and a fresh stage of which we seem now to have reached. Never since that date has the Porte been able to take the aggressive against the nations of Europe, or even to stand successfully on the defensive. Its history, as is well known, has consisted of one monotonous series of disastrous wars, humiliating treaties, military and provincial revolutions, insurrections, massacres, cessions of territory, failures of revenue, diminution of population, plagues, bankruptcies, armies destroyed and fleets annihilated, ever-contracting dominions, and ever-increasing debts, and gradual loss of independence; till at the present moment, protracted decay verges on total extinction. Europe is driven to recognise that nothing can much longer avert the long predicted and richly deserved doom of Mohammedan rule in Europe—political death.

Ever since the year 1821 the progress of Turkish decay has been so rapid and alarming as to keep Europe in perpetual anxiety. In that year began the insurrection in Greece, the finest province of the Turkish empire, an insurrection which quickly spread to the Ægean Isles and to Wallachia and Moldavia.

In 1826 Turkey was obliged to surrender to Russia all its fortresses in Asia, and frightful civil commotions distracted Constantinople, ending in the slaughter of the Janissaries, when 4,000 veteran but mutinous and unmanageable soldiers were shot or burned to death by order of the sultan himself in their own barracks in the city, and many thousands more all over the country. The empire had for centuries groaned under their tyranny, and Mahmoud II. was resolved to organize a fresh army on the military system of western Europe, and saw no other way of delivering himself from the tyrannical Janissaries than this awful massacre, which, while it liberated Turkey from an intolerable incubus, at the

Digitized by Google

same time materially weakened her strength. Before a fresh army had been matured, Russia again attacked the Turkish empire, and, backed up by England and France, secured the independence of Greece, after the great naval battle of Navarino, in which the Ottoman fleet was totally destroyed. In 1828 and 1829 Russia again invaded Turkey; her armies crossed the Balkans, and penetrated as far as Adrianople, where a treaty, more disastrous to the Porte than any previous one, was concluded. The freedom of Servia was secured, and no Turk was permitted to reside in future north of the Danube, while Russia obtained one of the mouths of that river, and territory to the south of it. The large Turkish province of Algeria in North Africa was lost to the Sublime Porte, and became a French colony in the following year.

In 1832 Turkey was brought to the verge of dissolution in consequence of the successful rebellion of the powerful pasha of Egypt, Mehemet Ali. He attacked and conquered Syria, and defeated the Turkish armies in three great battles, and he would have taken Constantinople had not the western nations intervened. A second rebellion on the part of Egypt took place in 1840, when Ibrahim Pasha defeated the Turks at Nezib. The Turkish fleet was betrayed into the power of Mehemet Ali, and taken to Alexandria; and Europe was obliged again to interfere to protect the sultan from the rebellion of his vassal, who could at that time have easily overthrown the Turkish empire. In the following year the British admiral took Sidon, Beyrout, and St. Jean d'Acre; and, in order to restore the Turkish rule, which had been completely lost, drove Mehemet Ali out of Syria. Egypt has been however virtually independent ever since, and her present rulers bear the title of khedive, or king, in recognition of the fact. They are now far more under the power of England than under that of Turkey.

In 1844 the Porte was compelled by the Christian nations of Europe to issue an edict of religious toleration, abolishing for ever its characteristic and sanguinary practice of execution for apostasy, that is, for the adoption of the Christian faith. As this was entirely against its will, because against the precepts of the Koran, and contrary to the practice of all

Digitized by Google

the ages during which Mohammedanism had been in existence, it was a most patent proof that *Ottoman independence was gone*, as a matter of fact, though often mentioned still as a plausible fiction of diplomacy, and that henceforth it had to shape its conduct in accordance with the views of its neighbours, the Christian nations of Europe. It was *a compulsory sheathing of the sword of persecution*, which had been relentlessly wielded for over twelve centuries, *a most marked era in the overthrow of Mohammedan power*.

The next great stage in the fall of the Moslem power in Europe was the Crimean War, and the Treaty of Paris, which followed it in 1856. This date is one of paramount importance in the process of the decadence of the Ottoman empire. The Crimean War was ostensibly undertaken in defence of Turkey against Russian aggression; and as it was a successful war on the part of the allies, England, France, and Italy, it would seem at first sight that it should be reckoned as a postponement of the fall of Turkey, rather than as a stage of it.

Such however is not the case; it was in reality a very decided stage in its loss of independence. The Russian czar was not alone in seeing that the decay of the Ottoman power had, even at that date, already gone so far, that the question as to what should be done with its dominions on its final dissolution pressed for decision. As is well known, he was anxious to be recognised as heir apparent, at any rate to Constantinople; and he was anxious also to secure the position of protector to the Christian races in the Balkan Peninsula and Syria, in order that he might have the power to interfere with Turkish administration in its own dominions, and thus of hastening the long-desired catastrophe. Now the Crimean War was waged, not so much to protect Turkey, as to maintain the principle that the political destiny of these regions should be a matter of *European concert*, and not be settled according to Russian views alone. As the Duke of Argyle says: "The one great question which was really at issue was, not whether Turkey was or was not a sick man, or even a dying man; but whether the czar had the right to solve that problem by anticipation in his own favour, and to take steps constituting himself sole heir of

Digitized by Google

the sick man's possessions and effects. . . . It was because Turkey, as a power and as a government, was decaying, and because sooner or later its place would have to be supplied by some other government, and by the rule of some other people, that it was necessary to take steps in time, to prevent this great change from being made prematurely, in the exclusive and selfish interests of a single power."[1]

In result, the Turkish empire was placed under the common care of Europe, and the claim of any single power to settle the destinies of that empire without the concurrence of the rest has since been repeatedly negatived.

In a recently published "Collection of Treaties and other Public Acts, illustrating the European Concert in the Eastern Question," the editor says: "The assumption of the collective authority on the part of the European powers to supervise the solution of the eastern question, in other words, to regulate the disintegration of Turkey, has been gradual. Such an authority has been exercised tentatively since 1826, *systematically since* 1856. It has been applied successfully to Greece, to Syria, to Egypt, to the Danubian Principalities and the Balkan Peninsula generally, to certain other of the European provinces of Turkey, to the Asiatic boundaries of Turkey and Russia, and to the treatment of the Armenians. The present work will contain the text in full of the treaties and other diplomatic acts which are the title deeds of the states which have thus been wholly or partially *freed by the European concert from the sovereignty of the Porte*."

Hence 1856 is a critical date in the fall of the Mohammedan power, marking the point of its *entire* loss of independence; the point when it practically passed into the hands of Europe, with a view to its safe and gradual dismemberment. The tottering structure was condemned to come down, and the scaffolding was erected by which it was to be safely demolished.

In 1860 took place the horrible Druze massacre of the Christians in the Lebanon and at Damascus, a massacre con-

[1] "The Eastern Question," pp. 2, 3. By the Duke of Argyle. Strahan & Co., 34, Paternoster Row, London, E.C.

Digitized by Google

nived at, if not planned by the Turkish Government. The remonstrances of the European consuls in the country were treated with neglect and contempt. The Christians were disarmed by the authorities, and left, like defenceless sheep, to be butchered by their bloodthirsty enemies. Thousands of innocent lives and millions of property were sacrificed, and the total apathy and incompetence of the Turkish Government to maintain order was such that the great powers of Europe intervened. Syria was occupied by French troops, and an English fleet anchored at Beyrout. The result was the conclusion of the treaty by which northern Syria was placed under a Christian governor, and the welfare of its inhabitants secured by a restriction of the Turkish power, submitted to under European compulsion. The year, in short, witnessed a marked though partial *deliverance of the Holy Land from Mohammedan oppression;* it witnessed the turn of the tide. The condition of Palestine and Syria has ever since been improving, and the contrast of what they are to-day and what they were twenty-five years ago is remarkable.

The last great crisis in the decay of Turkey, the last phase previously to what we may term the present one, was the Russo-Turkish war of 1877, an event so recent that we need only allude to it. The horrible atrocities committed by the Turkish soldiery in suppressing an unimportant insurrection in Bulgaria were, as is well known, the immediate cause of this outbreak. Fifteen thousand men, women, and children had been slaughtered in cold blood, with every conceivable circumstance of cruelty and horror, people against whom no crime could be alleged. Their property was destroyed, their villages were burned, and large districts desolated. Christian Europe was horrified. The great powers would have interfered in concert, but that England, whose supposed interests required the maintenance of the Ottoman tyranny over the subject Christian races, would not join in any effective common action. The immoral and jesuitical maxim, that, when self-interest demanded it, the Christian races of the Balkan Peninsula might lawfully be sacrificed, was acted upon by the English Government of the day. Russia, whose policy was a far nobler and more unselfish one, went

Digitized by Google

to war alone consequently to deliver her co-religionists, and she secured her object by a succession of victories, which broke the Turkish power to pieces, and laid it helpless at her feet. England did interfere then to prevent her seizing Constantinople, and at the Berlin Conference obliged the victorious czar to modify the treaty of San Stephano, and to agree to that of Berlin, by which a large proportion of Armenia was ceded to Russia. The Dobrudcha was lost to Turkey, the complete independence of Roumania was recognised, the limits of Servia and Montenegro were extended, and Bulgaria was erected into an autonomous Christian principality. Cyprus was at that time ceded to England by the Anglo-Turkish Convention, while this country undertook to defend the Turkish possessions in Asia,[1] the Porte promising necessary reforms, subject to British approval.

In 1876 Turkey had become nationally bankrupt; her debt, having been mostly contracted abroad, had reached the amount of one hundred and ninety-five millions, on which sum she was unable even to pay interest. This is as serious a feature in the condition of the country, as any of its military reverses or territorial losses.

In 1882 a fresh and very singular stage in the downfall of Ottoman power and independence was reached. It arose, as will be remembered by all, in a military insurrection in Egypt, which was headed by Arabi Pasha; this man and the army obtained a monopoly of power, and the khedive was forced to accept a national ministry in defiance of the protests of the European controllers of the debt, thus subverting the authority of England and France in connexion with the finances of Egypt. The sultan encouraged Arabi to defy Christian intervention in the financial and other affairs of Egypt, and tried to seize the crisis as an occasion for enforcing his own authority as suzerain. It was understood throughout Europe that if the western powers were defeated in this

[1] This treaty cannot stand; it is in opposition to the revealed counsels of God. Lord Beaconsfield pledged England to uphold the Turkish power in Asia, including of course Syria and Palestine. God has decreed, on the other hand, that Palestine and Jerusalem shall be freed, and freed speedily, from Moslem domination. It is hard to kick against the pricks; the treaty is already broken, and no effort to maintain Turkish power in Europe or in Syria will be of any use.

Digitized by Google

struggle, it would mean a surrender of Egypt to absolute anarchy, and the total ruin of civilization and European interests in the country. British and French squadrons anchored in the harbour of Alexandria in May. Panic began to prevail among Europeans in Egypt; the military party soon became totally unmanageable, and the khedive was a mere tool in their hands. The Europeans in Cairo and Alexandria were obliged to flee the country, and all attempts at pacification, whether on the part of the western powers, or of the sultan himself, failed. A Mussulman rising having taken place in Alexandria, in which a large number of Europeans were killed, and their houses pillaged, Arabi also continuing extensive preparations for resistance in defiance of the English admiral's expostulations, Sir Beauchamp Seymour finally bombarded Alexandria in the summer of 1882. The rebels were defeated, and under cover of a flag of truce evacuated Alexandria, not however without first setting fire to the European quarters, and letting loose upon it gangs of reckless plunderers. A plan had been laid for the murder of the khedive, but it was unsuccessful. A brief but brilliant military campaign succeeded, in which the English troops defeated the rebels at Tel-el-Kebir, and victoriously entered Cairo. An army of occupation of 12,000 men was left to keep order in the country, which has been since practically, though not nominally, an English protectorate.

This campaign was remarkable as an illustration of the diminished fanaticism of Mussulman nations. The Mohammedans of India were in no way affected by the struggle between their rulers and the Egyptians. An Indian contingent was sent to Egypt, with the full approval of the co-religionists of Arabi.

As we send these pages to press, a fresh dismemberment of the Ottoman empire is in progress, and the union of the two Bulgarias is so serious an inroad on the provisions of the Treaty of Berlin, that, as might from its very nature have been foreseen, it is not likely long to hold good as regards other and more important points.

The following are the dates in this time of the end to which we have alluded, as those of the principal stages in the downfall of the Papal and Mohammedan powers:

Digitized by Google

A.D. WESTERN, OR PAPAL DATES.

1697. End of the English Revolution.
1750. Voltaire. Outbreak of infidelity.
1774. Accession of Louis XVI.
1793. Regicide and Reign of Terror.
1798. Napoleon First Consul of the Republic.
1808–12. Chief European campaigns of Napoleon.
1830. Anti-Papal revolution, and abdication of Charles X.
1848. Anti-Papal and democratic revolutions in all the Papal countries of Europe. Republic declared at Rome.
1870. FINAL FALL OF THE TEMPORAL POWER OF THE PAPACY, AND OVERTHROW OF SECOND FRENCH EMPIRE. UNIFICATION OF ITALY, WITH ROME AS CAPITAL.

A.D. EASTERN, OR MOHAMMEDAN DATES.

1699. Treaty of Carlowitz.
1774. Treaty of Kainardje.
1821. Greek Insurrection.
1840. Successful rebellion of Mehemet Ali against the Porte. British intervention in Syria.
1856. Treaty of Paris.
1860. Druze massacre in Syria. The Lebanon placed under a Christian governor.
1878. Conference of Berlin, and Anglo-Turkish Convention.
1882. English occupation of Egypt.
1885. Revolution in Eastern Roumelia.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

THE TIME OF THE END.—JEWISH ASPECT, OR THE MODERN RENAISSANCE OF THE JEWISH PEOPLE.

We have now seen that two of the features which, according to prophecy, ought to characterize the era of the "time of the end," the fall of the Papacy and Mohammedanism, have been singularly evident during the last two centuries, and especially during the last. It remains to inquire whether the other movement predicted to take place at the same time, the elevation and emancipation of the long oppressed Jewish people, has made equal progress. Has the last century and a half been in any peculiar sense *a time of Jewish renaissance?* Has it presented *a marked contrast to the whole course of Jewish history, during the previous twenty-three centuries of "the times of the Gentiles?"*

What has the history of the Jews been from the time of their restoration after the captivity era to the present day? It should be noted, in the first place, that the restoration of a small remnant to Palestine under the Persian monarch, left, of course, the large majority of the nation—not of the ten tribes only, but of *all* the tribes—scattered among the Gentiles. We can trace to some extent their migrations and movements. In very ancient times, before the Christian era, they had spread themselves in central Asia, in India, and in China; they had found their way into Africa and into Arabia, and were settled in considerable numbers in Spain, where they were enjoying social consideration, wealth, and influence. Paul desired to visit their numerous synagogues in that country. Jews and proselytes were found scattered throughout the Roman empire in the time of our Lord. This earlier "dispersion differed from the restored remnant of their race, in that they were innocent of the supreme crime

Digitized by Google

of rejecting the Messiah and crucifying the Lord of Glory. Their sufferings consequently have been neither as great nor as long continued as those of their more guilty brethren, whose history especially we are now considering, a history which may be divided into three sections.

1. From the restoration era to the destruction of Jerusalem by Titus, and the close of the Jewish war under Hadrian.

2. From the final dispersion of the nation to the middle of last century.

3. From the French Revolution to the present day.

We need not dwell on the first section, save to recall that its six centuries, though a period of revived national existence, did not restore Jewish independence. The Jews were, for the most part, under rulers of their own race, in fulfilment of the prophecy that the sceptre should not depart from Judah until Shiloh came. But the Persians, the Greeks, the Idumæans, the Egyptians, and the Romans, in turn all controlled their destinies, and their sufferings were often great, especially in the time of Antiochus. The severe calamities of this section of their history commenced however with the Roman war of A.D. 66, and continued till A.D. 135.

Even before the Christian era they suffered at intervals severely from the Romans, and in A.D. 21 they were banished from Rome, then the world's metropolis. In A.D. 42 they were massacred at Alexandria; in A.D. 50, 30,000 of them were killed in Jerusalem in a tumult with the Romans; and five years later they were again banished from Rome, having been previously restored by Claudius.

But it was in A.D. 66 that the worst sufferings of the Jews under the Romans commenced. Gessius Florus was at that time Roman governor of Judæa, and was a grasping, covetous, cruel ruler. His oppressions led to a widespread revolt, and such was the exasperation of the Jewish people, that they made a successful stand in an insurrection against their Roman masters. When the tidings of the defeat of his representative in Judæa reached Nero, in the midst of his fearful debaucheries in Rome, he was alarmed, and sent Vespasian, a general of tried valour and skill, accompanied by his son Titus and by Trajan, the father of the emperor

Digitized by Google

of that name, to reconquer the province of Syria. The command of Upper and Lower Galilee was entrusted by the Jews to Josephus, a famous general of the Asmonean race, more celebrated as the great historian of this war, and of the Jewish people. He sustained with marvellous skill and bravery a siege of forty-seven days at Jotapata, where the Jews made a most desperate resistance. They were at last overpowered by Vespasian, after 40,000 men had been killed and some 1,200 taken captive. In another action on the Lake of Gennesaret 30,000 prisoners were made and sold for slaves, while 12,000, unable to bear arms, were put to death. The towns of Galilee one after another yielded to the forces of Vespasian, and awful examples were made of those which resisted, as did Gamala and Gischala.

These were however only the beginning of troubles; the courage of the Jews was desperate, amounting almost to infatuation, and sustained by the false hope of supernatural help from the coming of Messiah. During their long four years' struggle with the Romans, comparatively few were taken prisoners, though millions fell in fight; but Jewish fanaticism and personal bravery could not cope with the overwhelming resources of Rome and with the high discipline of her armies. The only marvel was that Judæa could hold out as long as it did in the struggle. 20,000 were massacred at Cæsarea, while those who escaped the slaughter were seized and sent to the galleys by Florus.

In the spring of A.D. 70 Titus gave orders for the march on Jerusalem. According to Josephus, the city at the passover contained two and a half millions of people, of whom 1,100,000 perished during the conflicts, sieges, and assaults of the city, or by the hand of the executioner. An immense multitude of prisoners, men, women, and children, were either sold into slavery, crucified, or thrown to wild beasts. Zion was surrounded by a triple wall, defended by ninety towers, and seldom has more difficulty been experienced in taking a city. The siege lasted five months; the Roman cohorts got possession of the city only by sections, and the taking of each wall demanded a fresh siege. During the last two months, when the defence had already become hopeless, Titus tried to persuade the Jews to capitulate; and on

Digitized by Google

their refusal a fearful series of crucifixions of the Jewish prisoners took place by his command around the city. But nothing could shake off the confident fanaticism of the Jews, nor damp their expectation of supernatural help at this awful crisis. At last, in desperation, Titus compassed the whole city with a wall and a ditch, at a little distance from the third and last remaining Jewish wall. This work, which might well have occupied three months, was actually completed in three days, owing to the overwhelming numbers and desperate activity of the Romans. Then began the terrible woes of the doomed Jerusalem. The horrors of a famine, in which mothers devoured their own children, were heightened by frightful internal discord and dissension. At length however the sanctuary itself was captured; and though Titus had given the strictest orders that the temple should be spared, it was accidentally set on fire and consumed. August 5th, A.D. 70, arose on an awful scene of smoking ruins deluged with blood.[1] The end was come. Many days were devoted by the Roman soldiers to completing the sack of the city and crucifying the remaining inhabitants. Thus were fulfilled the words of Daniel, "The people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined."

About sixty years later, the Jews had sufficiently recovered from this crushing blow to rise afresh in revolt against the Roman power, and then Hadrian completed the work of their dispersion among all nations of the earth. He made the whole country of Palestine a desolation, expelled all its remaining Jewish inhabitants, forbade the Jews on pain of death even to *approach* Ælia Capitolina, the Roman city erected on the site of Jerusalem. He slaughtered 580,000 Jews in a murderous war which lasted three years and a half, and sold thousands of prisoners at the lowest prices into slavery. The rest took refuge in foreign lands, and Palestine has never since been inhabited by the children of Israel.

The first portion of the history of the Jews during "the

[1] The daily sacrifice had ceased in Israel on July 13th, A.D. 70, for lack of persons to offer it.

Digitized by Google

times of the Gentiles" was therefore for the most part a time of dreadful trouble, and at its close the wrath of God came upon them to the uttermost; their name was struck off the roll of nations, politically and territorially they ceased to be a people. But though without country, metropolis or temple, they have continued to this day to be as distinct a nation as any on the face of the earth. They had rejected their Messiah, but not their law or their prophets; nor, alas! even those "traditions of the elders," which our Lord so strongly condemned. These they collected with the greatest care, immediately after the triumph of Hadrian, and with much pains and patience embodied as the "oral law" in their Mishna. Behind this wall which they built up they have ever since continued to hide from the light of fulfilled prophecy, making void, not only the law of God, but the predictions of the prophets, that they may keep their own traditions. Their faithful observance of circumcision, of the Sabbath, and of the other ordinances of Moses, and of the Talmudic precepts and ceremonies, preserved them in all the lands of their exile as *one* people, a peculiar people, though dwelling among all nations.

What has been their history since their final dispersion? It is needful to have a clear conception of this in order to be in a position to judge fairly as to current fulfilments of prophecy.

As in the captivity era, so in this, the predicted judgments did not descend on the Jewish people in full severity at first. History shows that Divine judgments, as a rule, *advance slowly but steadily on guilty cities and communities*, so that those who are blind to the moral government of God may, if they will, attribute all that happens to second causes. The judgments on Israel waxed gradually stronger and stronger, only as the long dark night of the Gentile "seven times" wore on.

The interval from Hadrian to Constantine saw the Jewish people in measure prospering and flourishing in the lands of their exile throughout the Roman earth. They were not at first despised and oppressed by their conquerors, but rather the reverse. They obtained influence over the people, and honour at court in Rome. And, alas! they too often

Digitized by Google

used both for the persecution of Christians. They looked with a malignant triumph on the disciples of Christ, compelled to assemble in the catacombs to worship the crucified One, while their own synagogues were recognised as under Roman favour, and their schools and colleges increasing in general esteem. They gladly took part in the pagan persecutions of the early Church, as in the case of the venerable Polycarp in the time of the Emperor Marcus Aurelius, showing that the overthrow of their nation and their own exile had in no wise diminished their hatred to Christ and His disciples. As paganism and superstition lost their hold in the third century, the writings of Moses and the prophets rose in the appreciation of the intelligent, and from a combination of causes the state of the Jews in the three first centuries gave little indication of the advent of the terrible experiences which were to succeed, and to be prolonged more or less over a thousand years. Their rabbis applied to their condition in these early days the words of Daniel, "Now when they shall fall, they shall be holpen with a little help."

But the conversion of Constantine changed all this. When the ruler of the Roman world bowed the knee in adoration before the crucified Galilæan, a complete reverse took place in the condition of the Christ-rejecting nation. The Jews then became a condemned and persecuted sect, and sank ever deeper into oppression and misery. They lost the imperial favour, and the privileges they had enjoyed, and were excluded from one sphere after another. Military and civic careers were gradually closed to them, though they were still free to observe their own religion, and retain their rights as men and citizens; and their persons and property were as yet secure.

With the fifth century the gloom deepened; and both in the eastern and in the western empire of Rome the treatment of the Jews became worse and worse. The legislation of Justinian put the axe to the root of the tree, by declaring that "civil rights could only belong to those who professed the orthodox faith." The Jews were entirely excluded from his code and his edicts. Restrictions were imposed on them in favour of Christians, and proselytism was punished with

Digitized by Google

death. From this time forward they had no political position of importance in the eastern empire, though in the farther East, beyond its bounds, they continued to flourish till the Saracenic wars. After that time popular hatred and contempt, with bitter persecution, were their portion under the crescent in the East, as well as under the cross in the West. Charlemagne and the entire Carlovingian dynasty sought as far as possible to protect the Jews, but with the downfall of that line of monarchs began the worst troubles of the exiles of Palestine. With the rise of the Norman power, and the feudal system in Europe, commenced a period of *seven centuries of the most cruel oppression and profound degradation* to the Jews in all the nations of Christendom.

The era of the crusades was the darkest part of this dark night of Israel's tribulation. It brought to them a long continuance of two centuries of the most atrocious massacres and tortures, which aimed at their utter extermination, and were not far from securing it. In vain even the popes exerted their influence to mitigate Jewish miseries and woes; men calling themselves Christians, and setting forth to rescue the holy places from the Turk, commenced their task by the massacre, on their way to Syria, of all the Jews in Europe! That age of chivalry esteemed only two classes of men—military heroes and agricultural serfs. The Jews were neither—they were traders, pariahs of society. Too often their financial transactions were usurious, and excited popular fury, as they still do occasionally on the continent. The men of those days understood little of finance, and considered all interest usury. The Jews, "doubly detested as the murderers of Christ and as the bloodsuckers of Christian wealth, were in the middle ages a special object of severity to the *laws*, both ecclesiastical and civil, of hatred to the *burghers*, and of violence to the *populace*. Even the sovereigns who gave them protection made use of them merely as a sponge, which they allowed to fill with the money of their subjects, that they might squeeze its contents into the royal treasury." [1]

A Jewish calendar, with a chronological table, forming "a

[1] Dr. Isaac da Costa: "Israel and the Gentiles." London: J. Nisbet & Co., 21, Berners Street, W.

Digitized by Google

summary of Jewish history from the flood to the year 1860," lies before us. We run the eye questioningly over its pages, and what do we find as we review the incidents of this second section of Jewish history there recorded? An unconscious acknowledgment from Jewish pens that every threat of judgment denounced against Israel in case of continued rebellion and idolatry, by Moses and the prophets, has been fulfilled. An acknowledgment that ever since their fall before the power of Babylon, in the sixth century B.C., they have been in subjection to Gentile rulers; and that since A.D. 135 they have been dispersed among all nations; that their history has consisted of one long chain of great and sore calamities, interrupted only with brief gleams of passing prosperity. That they have been exposed to innumerable evils of every kind: to famines and plagues, captivities and banishments without number, to social distress and degradation, to outlawry and the hatred of their Gentile neighbours, to false accusations and frequent massacres, to exactions and imposts almost exceeding belief, to pillage and torture, to the most painful forms of social ostracism and injustice; in a word, that they have been so relentlessly crushed down by their Gentile masters, that existence itself would have been crushed out of them long since but for the strange indestructibility with which, in the providence of God, their race is endowed, that wonderful, vigorous vitality, which caused them, even in their profound misery in Egypt, to multiply till their numbers alarmed their oppressors; and which, after the return of only 50,000 of them from Babylon, caused them again to increase to many millions during the five centuries prior to the first advent, has never forsaken them. From first to last their only appropriate emblem is the bush that "burned with fire, yet was not consumed." But general statements fail to impress the mind; let us take some special incidents, and try to realize the misery the facts imply.

In A.D. 1020 Canute *banished* all the Jews from England. What is it to be uprooted and banished from your native land? It is to be deprived at a stroke of home and friends, of business and prospects in life, and cast with a helpless family a stranger among strangers.

Digitized by Google

In A.D. 1068 the only burial place in all England allowed to the Jews was in Cripplegate (where Jewin Street now stands), and Jews from all other parts of the country were forced, at enormous expense and inconvenience, to bring thither their dead. How should we feel if we lived under such a law as that?

In 1096 the crusaders began what they called the "Holy War," by attempting to murder all the Jews in Europe who would not submit to baptism! The most horrible carnage took place all over Germany, where numbers of Jews destroyed each other, mothers even slaying their own children to avoid the barbarities of the infuriated Christian fanatics. Two hundred Jews who had thrown themselves into the Rhine at Cologne were dragged from the water and inhumanly butchered. Similar atrocities marked the commencement of the second crusade in A.D. 1146, though St. Bernard exerted himself to the utmost to prevent them. About this time commenced the gross *financial* injustice which continued for many centuries to be one principal instrument of persecution. Louis VII., of France, released the crusaders from all their debts to Jews. Henry II. ordered the Jews to quit England, by way of extorting a large sum of money for permission to remain. In A.D. 1181 Philip Augustus seized the Jews in their synagogues, imprisoned them, cancelled all debts due to them, confiscated their property, and ordered them to quit France immediately. When starting on the crusades, Henry II. ordered £60,000 (an enormous sum in those days) to be levied on the Jews to defray his expenses. Murderous riots were raised against these unfortunate people at the coronation of Richard I., when the populace slaughtered every Jew they could find, and after plundering them set fire to their houses. The following year occurred a terrible and similar tragedy in the provinces. The governor of York Castle offered the Jews protection, which they accepted; but they were besieged in the castle, and their resources being cut off, they, at the instigation of their venerable rabbi, in one night slew their wives and children, burnt the property they had with them, drew lots for killing each other, and then set fire to the castle to avoid the more barbarous tortures their persecutors intended.

Digitized by Google

In England the condition of the Jews was for centuries peculiarly miserable; few things in our history reflect such disgrace on both kings and people. Up to the reign of Edward I., when they were banished the country, they were incessantly victimized in the most cruel and unjust manner. The Jews and their families were in the eyes of the law mere slaves and bondsmen to the king, having no rights whatever.

The laws of Edward the Confessor had established this. "The Jews, and all they possess, belong to the king." The Crown had therefore absolute power to appropriate at any time their persons, their wives and children, and the wealth which with peculiar facility and skill they accumulated. The laws provided that the Jews were not to be taxed like the rest of the nation, "as they are talliable to the king alone as his own bondsmen, and not besides." Apart from any purely *arbitrary* and capricious exertion of power by the Crown over the persons and property of the Jews, there were certain points in which cruel tyranny was *systematically* enforced. Thus upon the death of a Jew the king asserted his right to the *whole* of the property and effects of which the deceased had been possessed. If he left a wife or children they were permitted to succeed to the estate only on the payment of heavy and arbitrary fines, amounting to at least one-half of the whole. Upon the conversion of a Jew to Christianity the king, up to the reign of Edward I., *seized all his estate* and applied it to his own use. Edward I. granted that from henceforth only one-half of the estate should in such cases be taken. This custom seems to have prevailed in various countries of Europe, as well as in England, and the reason given for it is, that *the sincerity of the conversion might thereby be shown.* A curious mode for Christians to adopt in order to manifest their desire for the conversion of the Jews! They oppressed and ill-treated them for *being Jews*, and took away from them all their property on their becoming Christians!

Certain towns were appointed for the residence of the Jews, and certain parts of these towns; and they were not permitted to dwell in any other places. A special Court of Exchequer was appointed to manage all their financial

Digitized by Google

affairs, so that the king could at any moment become acquainted with any transaction whatever, undertaken by a Jew, as these courts kept copies of all documents.

King John ordered all the Jews of England to be imprisoned until they made a full discovery of all they possessed, after which, by the most cruel tortures, he extorted from them an enormous sum of money. One man at Bristol was ordered to have a tooth extracted daily until he paid 10,000 marks. Henry III. demanded 20,000 marks from the Jews in A.D. 1241, and a second time, in 1245, he extorted 4,000 more. Louis IX. confiscated one-third of the debts due to them throughout his country. Henry III. obliged them to give him 18,000 marks. Philip V. imprisoned the Jews at Paris to compel them to prove all their debts; these he seized, and after obtaining 150,000 francs condemned many to the flames. But it would be impossible to enumerate all the instances of this kind of financial oppression which befell the Jews in Europe in the middle ages.

A very common pretext for robbing and murdering the Jews has been to accuse them of some unnatural crime, such as poisoning the rivers to produce cholera or plague, and then to rouse the populace against them. In A.D. 1220, for instance, the body of a girl was found in the Rhine; the Jews of Cologne were accused of having drowned her, and the bishop fined them 4,200 pieces of silver. His Jewish physician was accused of poisoning John I., of Portugal, and the Jews were obliged to pay 50,000 crowns. They were often accused of crucifying children for their passover lambs, and of similar enormities; and when the passions of the people were sufficiently roused, massacre and plunder invariably resulted.

The Lateran Council in 1215 ordered the Jews to wear a distinguishing mark, and the death penalty was affixed to a Jew marrying a Christian, or having a Christian servant.

Perhaps the worst calamity which befell these people in the middle ages was their banishment from Spain under Ferdinand and Isabella, in A.D. 1492. The edict ran thus: "Seeing that the Jews of our cities induce many Christians to embrace their religion, particularly the nobles of Andalusia, *for this* they are banished under the severest penalties." The

Digitized by Google

penalty was death if found in the kingdom after four months, unless they embraced Christianity. The inquisitor, Torquemada, prohibited Christians supplying them on their journey to the coast with bread, water, meat, or wine. A Jew offered 600,000 crowns in the name of his nation to procure the revocation of this cruel edict; the king and queen were inclined to consent, but the inquisitor Torquemada prevented their doing so. 800,000 souls on this account had to expatriate themselves from a country where they and their ancestors had resided in safety for centuries; a country whose darkness had been enlightened by their learning, and whose wealth had been increased by their industry. They had to quit the soil they had cultivated, the scenes of their youth, and the graves of their fathers, on a few months' notice, and at the sacrifice of most of their property; and to go forth, not knowing whither they went; and to their honour be it said *they did so* rather than adjure their religion, or forsake the law given on Sinai. Many of them suffered indescribable hardships, and a large number perished.

Thomas de Torquemada advanced into the royal presence bearing a crucifix. "Behold," he said, "Him whom Judas sold for thirty pieces of silver. Sell ye Him now for a higher price, and render an account of your bargain before God."

The sovereigns trembled before the stern Dominican, and the Jews had no alternative but baptism or exile. For many centuries their fathers had dwelt in this delightful country, which they had fertilized with their industry, enriched with their commerce, adorned with their learning; yet there were few examples of weakness or apostasy. The whole race, in a lofty spirit of self-devotion—we envy not that mind which cannot appreciate its real greatness—determined to abandon all, rather than desert the religion of their fathers. They left the homes of their youth, the scenes of their early associations, the sacred graves of their ancestors, the more recent tombs of their own friends and relatives. They left the synagogues in which they had so long worshipped their God; the schools where those wise men had taught who had thrown a lustre which shone, even through the darkness of the age, upon the Hebrew name. They were allowed four

Digitized by Google

months to prepare for this everlasting exile. The unbaptized Jew found in the kingdom after that period was condemned to death. The persecutor could not even trust the hostile feelings of his bigoted subjects to execute his purpose; a statute was thought necessary prohibiting any Christian from harbouring a Jew after that period. Many were sold for slaves; Christendom swarmed with them. The wealthier were permitted to carry away their movables, excepting gold and silver, for which they were to accept letters of change, or any merchandise not prohibited. Their property they might sell; but the market was soon glutted, and the cold-hearted purchasers waited till the last instant to wring from their distress the hardest terms. A contemporary author states that he saw Jews give a house for an ass, and a vineyard for a small quantity of cloth or linen. Yet many of them concealed their gold and jewels in their clothes and saddles; some swallowed them, in hopes thus at least to elude the scrutiny of the officers. The Jews consider this calamity almost as dreadful as the taking and ruin of Jerusalem; for whither to fly, and where to find a more hospitable shore? Incidents which make the blood run cold are related of the miseries which they suffered. Some of those from Arragon found their way into Navarre; others to the seashore, where they set sail for Italy, or the coast of Morocco; others crossed the frontier into Portugal. "Many of the former were cast away, or sunk," says a Jewish writer, "like lead into the ocean." On board the ship which was conveying a great number to Africa the plague broke out. The captain ascribed the infection to his circumcised passengers, and set them all on shore on a desert coast, without provisions. They dispersed; one, a father, saw his beautiful wife perish before his eyes, fainted himself with exhaustion, and waking, beheld his two children dead by his side. A few made their way to a settlement of Jews. Some reached the coast of Genoa, but they bore famine with them; they lay perishing on the shore. The clergy approached with the crucifix in one hand and provisions in the other. Nature was too strong for faith; they yielded, and were baptized. A Genoese, an eyewitness, described their landing and their sufferings. He commences with these expressive words: "At first sight their treatment

Digitized by Google

might seem praiseworthy, as doing honour to our God; perhaps there was some little cruelty in it, since we considered them not as beasts, but as men created by God. It was wretched to witness their sufferings; they were wasted away with hunger, especially sucklings and infants; mothers half alive carried their children famishing with hunger in their arms, and died holding them. Many expired from cold, others with squalor and thirst. The tossing about on the sea, and the unaccustomed miseries of the voyage, had destroyed an incredible multitude. I speak not of the cruelty and rapacity with which they were treated by the captains of the ships. Some were thrown into the sea by the cupidity of the sailors; some lived to sell their children to pay for their passage. Many came into the city, but were not permitted to stay long—by the ancient laws of Genoa not above three days. They were allowed however to refit their vessels, and to recruit themselves some days from their fatigues; except that they could move, and that with difficulty, you would have thought them dead, they were crowded on the mole, with the sea on all sides. So many died that the air was infected; ulcers broke out, and the plague which visited Genoa next year was ascribed to that infection." The acts of the clergy, and the compulsory baptism, rest on Jewish tradition. Into Rome the fugitives were admitted, but they were received with the utmost inhospitality by their own brethren, fearful that the increased numbers would bring evil upon the community. Even the profligate heart of Alexander VI. was moved with indignation. "This is something new," he exclaimed; "I had always heard that a Jew had ever compassion on a Jew." The pope commanded the resident Jews to evacuate the country; they bought the revocation of the edict at a considerable price. Those who reached Fez were not permitted to enter the town: the king, though by no means unfriendly, dreaded the famine they might cause among his own subjects. They were encamped on the sand, suffering all the miseries of hunger, living on the roots they dug up, or the grass of the field, "happy," says one Jewish authority, "if the grass had been plentiful." Yet even in this state they religiously avoided the violation of the Sabbath by plucking the grass with their hands; they

Digitized by Google

grovelled on their knees, and cropped it with their teeth. Worse than all, they were exposed to the most wanton barbarities of the savage people, A woman, unable to bear the sight of her pining child in his agony, struck him dead to the earth with a large stone. Many sold their children for bread. The king of the country afterwards declared all such children free. A pirate of Sallee allured a number of youths —one hundred and fifty—on board his ship, with the promise of provisions; and amid the shrieks of the parents on the shore set sail, and sold his booty in some distant port. The captain had intended to murder them all; a merchant on board the ship remonstrated. "How can I otherwise avenge the blood of Christ, whom the Jews slew?" argued the pirate. "Christ Himself," was the reply, "allowed His blood to be shed to redeem mankind." It was not thought wrong to cast them out on a wild shore. Another party were landed by a barbarous captain of a ship, entirely naked and utterly desolate, on the African coast. The first who ascended a hill to survey the country were devoured by wild beasts, which came howling down upon the rest of the miserable crew. They plunged into the sea, and stood shivering in the water till the wild beasts retreated; they then crept back to the beach. For five days they remained in this miserable plight, and were rescued by the humane activity of the captain of another vessel, who sent his boat to their relief.

Many of the Spanish Jews naturally sought refuge in the neighbouring kingdom of Portugal, and the king consented to allow them to enter the country on payment of a poll tax; but they were only to pass through to the coast. His successor Emanuel, who was at first inclined to protect the Jews, married the daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella, and was soon influenced to follow her parents' example. He even surpassed them in barbarity. He named a day for all Jews to quit the kingdom, and appointed certain ports for their embarkation. Before that time he issued another secret order to seize all children under fourteen years of age, to tear them from the arms and bosoms of their parents, and disperse them through the kingdom, to be baptized and brought up as Christians. The secret transpired, and lest they should con-

Digitized by Google

ceal their children, it was instantly put in execution. Great God of mercy, this was in the name of Christianity! Frantic mothers threw their children into the wells and rivers—they destroyed them with their own hands. One mother threw herself at the feet of the king as he was riding to church. She had already lost six children; she implored that her youngest might be spared to her. The courtiers repelled her with scorn and ill-usage. The king told them to let her go, "the poor bitch deprived of her whelps." But though stifled in the heart of a monarch, the voice of nature still spoke in that of the people, however bigoted. They assisted the Jews to conceal their children. By a new act of perfidy, Emanuel suddenly revoked the order for their embarkation at two of the ports which he had named, and the delay made them liable to the law. The more steadfast in their faith were shipped off as slaves; but the spirits of many were broken, and on condition that they might receive back their children, and that Government would not scrutinize their conduct too closely for twenty years, they submitted to baptism. Yet Pope Alexander VI. conferred the title "Catholic" on the Crown of Spain for this cruel act! Some of the exiles took refuge in Turkey and Africa, some in Portugal, Arragon, Navarre, and Italy.

So the story goes on; banishment after banishment, extortion after exortion, massacre after massacre! In A.D. 1545, 5,000 Jews were burned, with their houses, synagogues, and valuable libraries at Salonica. Fifteen years later, numbers were burned in Germany and banished from Prague, on a false accusation that they had caused the fires which took place in various parts of the empire; the true incendiaries were however afterwards discovered, and they were permitted to return. Pope Pius V. ordered the Jews, under penalty of confiscation of property and becoming slaves, to quit the Papal dominions. The Janissaries at Constantinople set fire to the Jews' quarter, burnt down 3,000 houses, and obtained property to the value 50,000,000 of crowns. In 1613 the Jews' quarter in Frankfort was burned, and they were obliged to quit the city, though afterwards permitted to return.

After this date, however, we observe a *diminution* of oppressions and cruelties; such incidents as those we have

Digitized by Google

enumerated did not cease, but they steadily decreased in number and in atrocity. In 1655 a petition was presented by the Jewish people to Cromwell, that they should be allowed to return with certain privileges and rights, to reside in England. After long consideration in Council, Government were inclined to consent. The judges declared that there was no law which forbade their return, and the divines were much divided in opinion, some asserting that the Scriptures promised their conversion. Cromwell declared that since there was a promise for their conversion, means ought to be used to that end; and that the only means was the preaching of the gospel. How could this means be employed *unless* they were admitted where the gospel is preached? In conclusion, however, any general admission was laid aside "as a thing decried by the clergy;" but after hearing the debates, Cromwell and his councillors gave permission, "toleration and dispensation," to a considerable number of Jews individually to come and live in London, and he granted them permission to build a synagogue.[1]

In the following year, 1656, the burial ground at Mile End, which is still used as a cemetery by the Jews of London, was leased to these people for 999 years, and the same year the first English and Hebrew grammar was published in London.

In 1670, toleration and liberty of conscience were granted to the Jews in Persia, where they had suffered much in former times, and where, even as late as the end of the sixteenth century, the Jews had been persecuted with much severity. They were banished from Vienna, and also from Oran in Algeria, in 1669, indicted for meeting for public worship in London in 1673, and ordered to quit all French colonies in 1683, those who did not do so were to be seized and their property confiscated. They were excluded from Russia by Peter the Great in 1687; and even so late as 1685 Jewish merchants were arrested on the Royal Exchange, and "for non-attendance at church!"

Not until the second quarter of the eighteenth century did the tide begin slightly to turn. In 1723 Louis XV. gave the Jews permission to hold real estate in France; and in

[1] Bishop Burnet: "History of his own Time," vol. i., p. 17.

Digitized by Google

the same year our own Parliament for the first time acknowledged them as British subjects. In 1740 this privilege of being regarded as British subjects was extended to Jewish sailors who had served two years in our ships of war. Christian VI. of Denmark, in 1738 opened all trades to the Jews; and in 1750 Frederick II. of Prussia granted toleration, though on the most intolerant conditions, to those in his dominions.

One of the earliest steps towards *real Jewish emancipation* was the passing of the "Naturalization Bill" in England in the middle of last century (A.D. 1753). This act simply provided that Jews might be naturalized "without receiving the sacrament." It met with the most violent resistance in the House of Commons, but finally passed.

But such was still the inveterate and unreasonable prejudice against the outcast nation, that a loud and fierce opposition against the act immediately arose throughout the country. Furious pamphlets and sermons assailed it, the streets resounded with popular songs attacking it, and such was the agitation, that it had actually to be repealed next year!

In order to give an idea of the extent to which inveterate prejudice, even at this late date, filled the minds of even the educated classes, we give an extract from two sermons of the day. One preacher, who took for his motto, Acts xvi. 20, said:

"The Jews have exceedingly troubled our city of late, and they are like 'to trouble it much longer.' The city of London, in Common Council, with great unanimity addressed the House of Commons against the bill, which passed by a great majority. The bill is entirely of a religious nature, it must have a malignant influence on our religion. It strikes at the root of our present establishment, and affects the very being of Christianity. The Jews ought to be more concerned to become Christians than Englishmen. God cast them out; we take them in. God expelled them; they come to us expelled, and we naturalize them. What He made their punishment we turn into a reward. . . . The Lord sent them punishments, and therefore it would be prudent to put off naturalizing the Jews until He take them away. They who now pretend to be Jews are blasphemers, and shall we naturalize blasphemy? They are the synagogue of Satan, and shall we license Satan's meeting-house? God forbid! The thought fills us with horror. God Almighty keep us from the infatuation, and give us not over to this dreadful guilt!"

Digitized by Google

There was a curious blending of the temporal and spiritual in some of the alarms.

"With God there is mercy, with the Jews there is no mercy. If this bill becomes law, *we are Jewish slaves*, and, what is more dreadful, without any hopes of relief from God. For this bill is in its whole nature a voluntary renunciation of the Providence and protection of God, leaving no room for the continuation of His mercy. . . . Awake, therefore, my fellow Britons, Christians and Protestants! It is not Hannibal at your gates, but the Jews that are coming for the keys of your church doors. Let us, if we have love and zeal for our religion, our king, and our country, pray that we may not be delivered up to *the merciless will of the Jews*, who know no goodness but that which blasphemed and murdered the Lord from heaven; nor desire any glory but that of putting an end to all Christian Churches, kings, and kingdoms."

But "the time of the end" had at last arrived; the long persecutions and miseries of nearly twenty-three centuries were to draw to a close. Neither people nor kings could arrest the change that was coming.

The Emperor Joseph II. of Austria was the first really to emancipate his Jewish subjects. In 1780 he opened the schools and universities of the empire to them; granted them the privilege of taking degrees in philosophy, medicine, and civil law; allowed them to follow any trade or establish manufactories, subjecting them to the same laws as Christians, and permitted them to attend fairs in towns where they did not reside, which they had previously been forbidden to do. He delivered them from an odious tax called the body tax, which had imposed upon them the most painful restrictions, forbidding a Jew to wear a beard or to frequent places of amusement, or even to go out of his house on the festival days of the Church; and from other laws which reduced them as far as possible to the level of beasts. In the year 1788, Louis XVI. of France passed a similar edict, appointed a royal commission "to remodel on principles of justice all laws concerning the Jews." Indeed, we may say that the period since *the middle of the last century* has been one of uninterrupted and rapid emancipation, uplifting, and renaissance to the Jewish people. The following statements of an American professor, Dr. Kellogg, present some of the evidence bearing on this subject.[1]

[1] See his admirable little volume, which all ministers and teachers

Digitized by Google

"It is an indisputable fact that, for now more than a hundred years, the Jews have been steadily rising out of that depth of subjection and debasement in which they had lain for centuries, and that concomitant with this there have appeared among both Jews and Gentiles many other exceptional phenomena predicted by the prophets as to accompany or usher in Israel's final restoration. . . .

"Of these facts the first to be mentioned is the *civil emancipation of the Jews*, which has been one of the most remarkable events of the history of our age. The prophetic word, 'oppressed and spoiled evermore,' graphically represents their general history until quite recent times; but a wonderful change has passed, and is still passing, on the condition of the scattered nation. The Lord had said concerning Israel that in the latter days He would break the yoke of the Gentiles from off his neck and burst his bonds (Jer. xxx. 8): and it is a fact which cannot be denied, that for the past hundred and thirty years the world has been witnessin a most literal fulfilment of these words. . . .

"The first act in the modern emancipation of the Jews was their *enfranchisement in England in* 1753. Simultaneously two men appeared on the continent of Europe, the one a Jew of Germany and the other a Gentile, a Frenchman, who were destined, in the providence of God, to do more than any other two individuals in preparing the way both of Jewish deliverance, and of judgment on the oppressing Gentiles. These men were MOSES MENDELSSOHN and VOLTAIRE. It was in 1755 that Mendelssohn published the first of those writings which soon made him the foremost of the literary men of his time. About the same time Voltaire, followed by Rousseau and the encyclopædists, began to publish those writings which had so much to do in the bringing about a generation later, the great French Revolution, *in which awful convulsion the chains fell from the limbs of Israel, wherever the victorious armies of France appeared, and the Jews began once more to be accounted men.* . . .

"Voltaire fiercely hated the Jews, and yet no one did more to prepare the way for their emancipation. The doctrine of the absolute equality of men, without regard to race or creed, and the consequent doctrine of the equal rights of all men, so sedulously propagated by Voltaire, Rousseau, and others, involved as its inevitable practical issue the emancipation of the Jews from all exclusive burdens and odious discriminations.

"Professor Grätz, the eminent Jewish historian, in his great work on the history of his people, dates the beginning of the fourth and last of the periods into which he divides Jewish history from A.D. 1750.

"The United States of America were the first nation to embody in their laws the principle that Gentile and Jew were equal in right and privileges before the law, A.D. 1776.

---

especially should read, "The Jews; or, Prediction and Fulfilment." J. Nisbet & Co., 21, Berners Street, London, W.

Digitized by Google

"In 1788 Louis XVI. appointed a royal commission, with Malesherbes at the head, 'to remodel on principles of justice all laws concerning the Jews.'

"So things were going on, when the French Revolution, with all its unprecedented terrors, burst upon bewildered Europe. The Lord had said by the prophets that when the hour of Israel's deliverance should come, He would make them that had oppressed her drunk with their own blood (Isa. xlix. 24, 26), and that He would then take the cup of trembling out of the hand of Israel and put it into the hand of them that had afflicted her (Isa. li. 22); and so, as every one knows, it came to pass at that time. The great timepiece of the dispensation struck the predestined hour, the great Revolution began, and Europe was straightway filled with fire and blood. Throne after throne went down in flame and judgment, and as the thrones of the Gentiles fell everywhere, there fell with them the chains of ages from the limbs of Israel. In the almost universal massacres in France the Jews alone, it is said, commonly escaped harm, and even in the Reign of Terror passed unhurt, like Israel of old in the days of Egypt's plagues."

The emancipation of the Jews in France was completed in the Revolution, and as the movement spread over Europe, one country after another followed the French example. In 1805 Alexander I. of Russia revoked the edict of banishment, and the Jews flocked back into his empire in such numbers, that it is supposed that a third of all the Jews in the world are now found in Russia. In 1806 the Jews were made citizens in Italy and Westphalia, as they had previously been in Holland and Belgium. In 1809 Baden, and in 1813 Prussia and also Denmark, followed the example of the other countries of Europe, and completely emancipated the Jews; and at the Congress of Vienna all the contracting powers formally pledged themselves to turn their attention to the improvement of the condition of the Jews throughout Europe. Several Acts of Parliament ameliorating their condition, stage by stage, were passed in England in the years 1830, 1833, 1836; but not until the tenth attempt, in 1858, was *full equality* conceded, and the Jews made eligible for election to Parliament. In 1844 was secured from the Turkish Government the firman which pledges to the Jews *protection from persecution throughout the Ottoman dominions, including, of course, the Holy Land.* In 1848, when revolution again shook nearly every throne of Europe to its foundation, the emancipated Jews appeared in the forefront of the movement,

Digitized by Google

leading and ruling where for ages they had been ruled over and oppressed. "In France appeared in the Government the Jews Fould, Crémieux, and Goudchaux; in the provisional government of Venice the Jew Pincherle was a leading member; in Berlin Jacobi was leading the opposition; in the parliament of Frankfort the Jew Riesser was the vice-president; in Austria Fischhof appeared at the head of the Government after the flight of the court; while Adjutant Freund, afterwards more widely known as Mahmoud Pasha, was leading the troops in the Hungarian insurrection."

In 1867 Turkey gave the Jews for the first time in centuries the right to own *real estate* in the land of their fathers. In In 1870, in the treaty between Bavaria and the Confederation of North Germany, which fully consummated the unification of North Germany, Bismarck secured for the Jews of Bavaria the same privileges as they enjoyed in other German States, the full rights of citizenship; and in this same year, with the overthrow of the temporal power of the pope, Jewish humiliation in Italy was also at an end. In 1878 the Congress of Berlin made the *full emancipation of the Jews in Roumania* one condition of the promised autonomy. It cannot be denied that for the past hundred years or more the world has been witnessing a literal fulfilment of the prediction that "the yoke of the Gentiles shall be taken from off the neck of Israel, and their bonds burst." The change in the civil position of the Jews throughout the largest part of Christendom has indeed been *one of the most characteristic features of this century.*

In 1860 was formed the UNIVERSAL ISRAELITE ALLIANCE, "an organization which has for its object the promotion and completion of the emancipation of the Jews in all lands, and their intellectual and moral elevation, as also the development of Jewish colonization in the Holy Land. . . . In the prophecy of Ezekiel we have, in the vision of the valley of dry bones, and its interpretation, a very full account of the final restoration and conversion of Israel (Ezek. xxxvii. 7–14). According to the representation of that vision the restoration is to take place in *successive and perfectly distinct stages.* Thus the prophet saw that, before the giving of life to the dry bones, which symbolized the house of Israel, before the

Digitized by Google

clothing of them with flesh, sinews, and skin, there was first of all 'a noise and a shaking, and bone came to bone, each bone to his fellow;' that is, he saw in the first place a preliminary organization, the necessary antecedent of all that followed. If this feature of the vision mean anything, it would seem that it *can* mean nothing else than this, that *a tendency to external organization* in the scattered nation was to be looked for, *antecedent and preparatory to* their actual reinstatement in their land, and conversion to God, by the power of the Spirit of life." This prediction as to *the beginning of the final restoration* is being very literally fulfilled.

Another point very fully mentioned in prophecy, as characterizing the restoration era of Israel is that of WEALTH (Isa. lx. 9). The restored Jews are to bring their silver and their gold with them, and this wealth is to be derived *from the Gentiles that oppressed them;* for it is written, "They shall eat the riches of the Gentiles," and again, that when their spoilers shall cease to spoil them, then they in turn shall spoil their spoilers (Isa. lxi. 6). Now it is notorious that everywhere in Europe an extraordinary tendency of capital to concentrate in Jewish hands is observable of late. During the ten years 1854–1864 the Rothschilds alone furnished about 112 millions in loans to England, Austria, Prussia, France, Russia, and Brazil, besides many millions to smaller States. All over Germany the relation of the Jews to the finances of the country is causing great anxiety. The anti-Semite petition circulated in 1880 says, "The fruits of Christian labour are harvested by the Jews; capital is concentrated in Jewish hands." The Jews are becoming also the actual or virtual owners of *the soil* through a large part of central and eastern Europe. A Berlin paper says: "More than a sixth part of the Jews in Russia live by means of the liquor trade, and the same is true of Roumania and of the Slavic lands. With the liquor trade usury goes hand in hand, and as a result, it is a fact which can no longer be denied, that the population of the remote districts of Russia, Austria, Hungary, and Roumania are only the nominal possessors of the soil, and cultivate the land for the Jews, to whom they have mortgaged their estates for their liquor debts. About *a quarter of the railway system of Russia* is

Digitized by Google

owned by a Jew called the Russian railway king, Mr. Samuel Solomonowitz de Poliakoff. In all the continental countries the proportion of Jews found in the wage-earning class is exceedingly small, compared to the number of Gentiles; while in the capitalist class it is, on the other hand, very large, quite out of all proportion. A large number of parallel facts might be cited, and they become more conspicuous continually. In Berlin, where the Jews are only five per cent of the population, out of every hundred Protestants thirty-nine were returned as employers, and out of every hundred Jews, seventy-one; and it is the same in Austria. The bourse of Vienna lies mainly in Jewish hands. In Hungary the Jews have obtained possession of so many of the old estates as to make a change in the constitution a necessity. In Roumania and Servia it has been pleaded that if the Jews are given an equal chance they will gradually oust the peasantry till they possess the whole land." "Constantina, Algiers, and Oran," says the *Télégraphe*, "belong almost entirely to Jews. The whole trade of Algiers is in their hands, and a large proportion of the people are fallen into the power of the Jews. Here," adds the writer, "appears a dark point full of danger for the future."

THE POWER AND INFLUENCE of the Jewish people have risen, of course, with their political standing and their increase in wealth. They form a very large proportion of the educated classes in Germany, Hungary, Austria, and other countries. They have furnished of late very eminent men, who have taken the foremost rank as scholars and as teachers. Such names, for instance, may be cited as those of Professor Neander and Professor Delitzsch, of the University of Leipzig, and large numbers of others not so well known to Christian readers, because their works consist of anti-Christian Biblical criticism. As linguists, as critics, as philologists, archæologists, political economists, mathematicians, and historians, Jewish names are highly distinguished; while among musicians we have Mendelssohn, Halévy, Meyerbeer, Rossini, Julius Benedict, Grisi, and all the Strauss family. No less than seventy professors' chairs in German universities are held by Jews, and the tide of Jewish influence in education and literature is still rising everywhere. *The control of the press* also on

Digitized by Google

the continent has largely fallen into their hands. They occupy seats in the continental chambers of deputies as well as in our own Parliament. Our own prime minister, Disraeli, was a Jew by race, if not by faith; and one who stood in the first rank of English judges as Master of the Rolls, Sir George Jessel, was also a Jew. On a recent occasion no less than twenty-one Jews were decorated with the order of the Legion of Honour in France, though the Jews in that country number only 60,000 in a population of 37,000,000.

Another remarkable fact in connexion with the signs of renaissance of the Jewish nation is *their rapid increase in number*. This also had been predicted (Isa. lx. 22; Ezek xxxvi. 37). Basnage, in his "History of the Jews," 175 years ago, estimated their number to be at that time only about three millions. It already amounts to between six and seven millions, and some place it as high as eight, and the Jews are everywhere increasing in a more rapid *ratio* than the Gentile populations in the midst of which they live. They have a very high birth-rate, and an exceptionally low average mortality. "*Twenty* per cent. of the Jews reach the age of seventy years, as against only *twelve* per cent. of the Christians."

The climax of the Jewish renaissance is, as we know, to consist in their restoration as a nation to the land of Palestine,—a climax which has not yet come, but which is perceptibly nearer than it was even a quarter of a century ago. No sooner was the law passed which enabled them to hold landed property in Palestine, than many Jews began to avail themselves of the right. Up to the year 1841 only 300 Jews were permitted to live in Jerusalem. The number has now risen to over 10,000, and some say to over 15,000; that is, about half of the population; M. de Haas, lately United States consul at Jerusalem, numbers them as high as 20,000 —an estimate which, without including the Jews in other parts of Palestine, is yet nearly half the number restored from Babylon.

The Palestine Exploration Society have done a most important work in preparing the way for Jewish restoration, and many thoughtful and judicious writers have already suggested that the only way to settle the eastern question, so

Digitized by Google

far as Palestine is concerned, is for the Jews themselves to have it back. "Thus, as the Ottoman power moves on to its predestined dissolution, these two questions, What shall be done with the Jews as they are found in various Christian lands? and What shall be done with the land which once belonged to them? force themselves simultaneously, and more and more imperatively on the attention of the statesmen of Europe." The Russian persecutions have given a new impulse to the movement of the Russian Jews towards the Holy Land, and the *Jewish Chronicle* wrote in 1880, "We are inundated with books on Palestine, and the air is thick with schemes for colonizing the Holy Land once more."

At the last general election there were no less than *eighteen* Jewish candidates before the English constituencies.

The significance of these facts, when considered as a group, and as a contrast to the condition of the Jews in Christendom in all preceding centuries, can hardly be missed by any observer, though it will be most striking to those who know most of the past history and present state of the Jewish people.

Another stage in the renaissance of the Jewish nation, and one which seems likely to be the commencement of a very important movement, has taken place within the last few years in South Russia. In August, 1884, there appeared in the *Times* the following letter, written by Bishop Titcomb from Hamburg:

"The publication of the following facts will, I think, be of general interest, if you can find space for them, since they reveal a state of things which is perhaps without a parallel in the history of the Jewish people. They were communicated to me two days ago by the Rev. Mr. Hefter, of Frankfort, and are taken from certain 'Writings of the Institutum Judaicum in Leipzig' (No. 4), being 'documents' of what is called the NATIONAL JEWISH CHRIST-BELIEVING MOVEMENT IN SOUTH RUSSIA, edited in the original Hebrew language and German translation by Professor Franz Delitzsch.

"The author of this South Russian Bessarabian movement is a lawyer, named Joseph Rabinowitch, a man who is respected far and near by his compatriots, and who has for a long time been endeavouring to ameliorate the condition and to raise the culture of his people. During the time of that persecution in South Russia in 1882, which the *Times* newspaper so forcibly brought before the British public, he was zealously advocating the repopulation of the Holy Land. In order to discover ways and means

Digitized by Google

for this he set out himself for Palestine, and from the time of his return there commenced a complete revolution of his religious convictions.

"These convictions are based on a belief that the historical Jesus of Bethlehem was, after all, the true Messiah spoken of by Abraham, Moses, and David, for the crucifixion of whom the Jews have ever since been wanderers, and their land made desolate. This deep impression on the mind of Rabinowitch was not produced by any influence of Christian missionaries, but entirely by the force of circumstances; and it carried along with it a very strong feeling, that the only hope for his people's return to their land would be by their acknowledgment of such facts. In this way, without for a moment thinking of joining the Christian Church by baptism, a plan of forming congregations of Jewish nationality, founded upon the historical and doctrinal works of the New Testament, slowly and gradually ripened in his soul. He returned from Palestine with this watchword, 'The key to the Holy Land lies in the hands of our brother Jesus,' It may be said, indeed, that the centre of gravity in his creed lies hidden in the cry, 'Jesus our brother.' These thrilling words have proved, as a matter of fact, to possess such powers of attraction among his persecuted brethren, that they have not only awakened the hearts of all in Kischeneff—his own place of residence—but of many also in other parts of Bessarabia. More than 200 families have now joined in one communion, under the title of 'The National Jewish New Testament Congregation;' and by some of them the last Passover was celebrated according to a liturgy expressly drawn up by Rabinowitch."

This reformer clearly perceives the great mistake of the Jews. To find the Messiah, he shows them they must go backward into the past, and not forward into the future, illustrating the statement by a parable. "A number of Jews travelling by a four-wheeled conveyance in a little town in Poland lost one wheel, and still pursued their journey; they overtook another carriage driving in front, and one ran and asked if this one had seen a lost wheel on the road. The driver replied, 'You foolish man! you must go back, and not forward, to find your lost wheel.' The four wheels were Abraham, Moses, David, and the Messiah. The fourth wheel, the Messiah, had been lost; the Jews must go *back* to find it. Finding this, Israel's four-wheeled chariot would run with safety."

When Rabinowitch began to think that he ought to avow his faith in Christ, he was sorely puzzled about the number of sects among Christians, and hesitated to join any one of them. Not feeling led to identify himself with any of those

Digitized by Google

Christian denominations, he banded his followers together under the title of "Israelites of the New Covenant," for whom he has prepared a liturgy, articles of faith, and a creed. These are thoroughly evangelical, and profoundly interesting, differing somewhat from ordinary Christian worship and from existing creeds, as under the circumstances was natural, yet containing all the vital elements of Christianity, and recalling forcibly to the mind the condition of the early Christian Church in Judæa.

Mr. Wilkinson, of the Mildmay Mission to the Jews, who has made personal acquaintance with Rabinowitch, and takes the deepest interest in the movement, says that this Jewish reformer is sound on the doctrines of the inspiration of the entire Scriptures, the hopeless ruin of man, redemption by the blood of Christ, salvation by faith, necessity of a new birth and regeneration by the Holy Ghost, good works as the fruit of faith and evidence of its genuineness, and eternal life as God's free gift. His adherents still cling to such Jewish observances as the Passover, the sabbath, and circumcision; but when we look at these practices from a Jewish standpoint, and remember the teachings of the New Testament with regard to them, it is evident that there is in them nothing fundamentally at variance with the truth or contrary to the will of God. Myriads of Jews in apostolic days were true believers, and yet zealous of the law, and the apostles dealt tenderly with them, as long as they attributed no saving virtue to these observances, and acknowledged that salvation is in Christ alone.

Mr. Wilkinson adds: "Of one thing I feel sure; such has been the influence of the Mildmay Mission to the Jews, especially in its medical department, during the last eight years, that if God should raise up in London some Jew to work on similar lines to those of Rabinowitch, hundreds of Jews would answer to the call of the trumpet, and rally round the standard of the Lord Jesus Christ."

A conference on the subject was held at Leipzig, under the presidency of the venerable professor F. Delitzsch, at which the first resolution was expressed as follows: "As this movement *may develop into the promised restoration of Israel*, it is necessary that it remain independent, and be not

Digitized by Google

absorbed into any of the existing sects of the Christian Church."

Mr. Rabinowitch has his mind much set on the formation of an agricultural colony in Palestine, and takes also the deepest interest in the school which he has established for young Israelites, in which they will be instructed in the faith of Christ as the Messiah. The Russian Government seems to look favourably on the movement, and has granted the permission to open a place of worship and a school. A spirit of inquiry is stirred up among the Jews in Russia and Roumania, and there is every reason to hope that the movement will yet develop into a glorious and important one.

Hence, while on no one point are the restoration promises to the Jews fulfilled in any plenary or complete sense, yet it is perfectly evident that a marked and marvellous change in the experiences of the scattered nation has already taken place, and that its commencement dates from the last century; signs of the movement having appeared as early as 1723, and early initial stages of it having taken place in 1753, while it assumed its full proportions at the time of the French Revolution, and has continued with ever-increasing energy to the present day. The events which were predicted by Moses and the prophets, and especially by Daniel, at intervals of from twenty-five to thirty-five centuries ago, as ushering in and accompanying the final restoration of Israel prior to the second coming of Christ, have been now for the last hundred and fifty years taking place.

The restoration itself has not yet come. This is evident; but is it not equally evident that its occurrence is only a question of time, and probably of a short time? Every stage in the dismemberment of the Ottoman empire is a stage in the direction of the liberation of Palestine, and the restoration of the Jews. How many such stages have already taken place? Already the question of what power shall succeed the Porte in Constantinople has long been before Europe; already Egypt—always in the past so closely allied with Palestine in her history—has passed under British protection; already, with the extension of European influence in Syria, Jewish and other colonization schemes

Digitized by Google

are in vigorous operation; already the Jewish population in Jerusalem has risen from 300, fifty years ago, to over 10,000 souls, or, as M. de Haas, United States consul at Jerusalem, numbers them, 20,000, besides the Jews in the provinces, who are many thousands in number; already the long forsaken and desolated land is looking up; already it is becoming a subject of deep and practical consideration to both Christian and Jewish philanthropists; already every square mile of Palestine has been surveyed and mapped out; flourishing schools and colleges, and medical and other missions are established in its towns and villages; already a bishop presides and a Christian Church exists on Mount Zion, while a Jewish mission labours in Jerusalem for the conversion of the seed of Abraham; already a number of Christ-believing Jews are longing to leave the homes of their exile among the Gentiles, and to return to the land of their fathers, there to await the coming of "Jesus our brother." May we not add, that already the nations of Europe are agreed that their only wise policy in connexion with the eastern question is to foster the growth of restored nationalities, to permit the Ottoman empire gradually to dissolve into its constituent elements? Palestine is one of these elements; but, unlike Greece and Bulgaria, Servia and Montenegro, Moldavia and Wallachia, it is not occupied by its own sons. *They* are scattered over the earth, and *it* is inhabited by sparse, incoherent, and mutually antagonistic populations.

Confronting the incredulity of our day there are these two great long foretold facts: the people of Judah without a land, and the land of Judah without a people! Yet that land once flowed with milk and honey, and is capable of speedily doing so again; and that people, numbering about eight millions, and having command of enormous capital, are already reorganized, enlightened, free, and influential, sitting in the senates of the first kingdoms of Europe, wielding the power of the press in many lands,—a people capable of accomplishing any task they undertake, and a people willing enough to colonize their own country, as soon as they can obtain in their fatherland security for life and property.

There is in Palestine no strong man armed, keeping his

LIBRARY OF T
UNION
THEOLOGICAL SEMI
Google

house to oppose any plan for Jewish restoration; the land is feebly held in the fast relaxing grasp of a sick and dying power. What should hinder that at any day the daughter of Judah should arise, shake herself from the dust of her feet, loose herself from the bands of her neck, forget the shame of her youth and the reproach of her widowhood, and return with singing to Zion?

Apart altogether from the fact that prophecy says this shall be, and be soon, does not the state of eastern Europe indicate it, as a probable and not distant consummation of movements already far advanced?

The mutual jealousy which exists between Russia, England, and France as to the possession of power in the Holy Land, and which would prevent any one of them aspiring to the succession of the Porte there, tends to make the plan of a restored Jewish nation politically feasible. It has been discussed by the press of Europe for some time past, and is likely to be increasingly so. Professor Goldwin Smith, in the *Nineteenth Century* of November, 1882, says: "I speak without prejudice to a remedy of another kind, which may help to lighten the pressure of the existing crisis—*the restoration of Palestine to Israel.* I ventured to advocate this before, and I see that it is advocated by a far more powerful voice than mine, that of Canon Farrar." The London *Spectator* says: "While the question has not yet come within the range of practical politics, yet it has ceased to be what it would have been thought fifty years ago, *by all but a few students of prophecy*, ridiculous."

But further. Russia and Germany are finding their Jewish population "a burdensome stone," as predicted, and they would be glad to get rid of the Jews on almost any terms. Why not meet the difficulty by their restoration to Palestine? It is sometimes asserted that the Jews themselves do not wish to return to the land of their fathers. This may be perfectly true as regards the wealthy Israelites of London and New York; but it is totally untrue as regards the multitudes of still oppressed and persecuted Jews in southern Russia and in oriental lands. It must be remembered that the great bulk of the Jewish people have always clung to the vicinity of their own land; more than a third

Digitized by Google

of the nation is supposed to be at present in Russia, and nowhere is their condition less satisfactory.

There is a widespread, intense, and unanimous desire amongst these Russian Jews to return to Palestine. A writer in the *Jewish Chronicle* says: "Israel must once again take up the staff of the wanderer, and abandon the graves of his ancestors. Where are the poor people to go? This question the Jews of Russia have themselves answered. The greater portion have determined to proceed to Palestine, the scene of our former glory and independence."[1]

It is the same with the half-million of Jews who live in Roumania. Their poverty is one obstacle, and there are many others; but in spite of them all they say, "We cannot be worse off than in Russia;" and the movement for emigration to Palestine is irresistible.

Some of their writers look forward to this step as to a second exodus.

"Once more are we on the eve of exodus! . . . It wants no prophetic eye to see that the Russian empire is on the eve of one of the greatest revolutions that the world has ever seen. The time has arrived for Israel to depart thence, and for an exodus greater even than the original one to commence. . . . But whitherward shall the steps of the millions of Israel be bound? Shall he again, as in the exodus from Spain, betake himself to other and more friendly lands, to be again perchance in the course of time driven from them? No! a thousand times no! For the sake of our unborn posterity, let this be, by God's help, *the final exodus of our race*. The land of promise is now subject to a power who can barely struggle against financial difficulties. That power is not unfriendly to Israel; its sovereign rights should be purchased with no niggard hand, and *the independence of Israel established under international guarantee*.

"What Israelite worthy of the name would hesitate in giving his quota towards the redemption of the land? Once under a stable and just government, our land would again flow with milk and honey, and Jewish enterprise, capital, and industry, combined with the geographical position and situation of the country, would cause prosperity once more to shine upon it. Italy, Greece, and Egypt are once more numbered among the nations, and the *shophar* which announces the resurrection of Israel, the eldest born of the nations, should soon wake the echoes in the mountains of Judah. To Israel, this restoration should prove an unmixed blessing; for, possessing a political centre, the dread of persecution would no longer haunt her sons. Composed, as the nation

[1] *Jewish Chronicle*, Feb. 17th, 1882.

Digitized by Google

would be, of men of one race and one faith, yet of various nationalities, it would be the most cosmopolitan state that the world had ever witnessed. And when the day arrives that the nations will be contented to submit their disputes to arbitration instead of to the issue of the sword, from whence will the law be so fitted to go forth as from Jerusalem?"

No less than forty-nine different societies existed in Roumania, four years ago, for the purpose of promoting emigration to Palestine. Notice has been taken of the movement in the Roumanian parliament, and the anti-Jewish party urge the Government to promote it as far as possible. Some two millions of money had been raised to help forward this emigration from eastern Europe to Palestine. Never has so much sympathy and interest been felt by the Gentile nations in the present and future fortunes of the Jews. Moreover, some *few* wealthy Jews—though, alas! not many as yet—are taking a practical interest in the fortunes of their poorer and less prosperous brethren. The wealthy English banker, Mr. Cazalet, obtained in connexion with the concession of the Euphrates railway, tracts of land, especially in Mesopotamia, "extensive enough to admit of Jewish immigration on almost any scale." The land is granted for twelve years, free of taxes, to Jewish immigrants, on condition of their becoming Turkish subjects.[1]

"As by common instinct, the thoughts of all nations turn to Palestine as the ultimate refuge of the persecuted Jews. In a Russian town last year they were driven from their homes to the refrain, 'Go to Palestine! Go to Palestine!' The heart of the faithful Jew responds to this, even when the red cock crows, and he sees the terrified faces of his beloved ones by the lurid glare of his burning possessions. The dominant idea of the *eastern* Jew, whatever may be that of his co-religionist in western countries, is to return to Palestine. Not only the poor, . . . but also the wealthy Jews think of inhabiting once more the land of their forefathers. This is no longer a dream of visionary Bible students, but *an actual reality*. . . . The question of the return of the Jews to Palestine now seems to be one that interests all nations."[2]

It is true that the sultan has put a veto for the present on Jewish colonization in the Holy Land; but in spite of this decree, which he is not likely to be able long to enforce,

[1] *Jewish Chronicle*, Sept. 1st, 1882.
[2] *New York Evening Post*, April 7th, 1882.

Digitized by Google

large numbers of Jews have settled there without any obstacle being placed in their way by the Turkish Government. If once the veto was removed, either voluntarily or under compulsion, not the poor Jews only, but the rich ones, are likely to return in large numbers, and with a view to permanent settlement. The one present obstacle, which might disappear any day, is the insecurity of life and property under Turkish rule.

Thus two great questions have arisen, unexpectedly to many, though not so to prophetic students, in our days, present and practical: First, what shall be done with the Jews of central Europe and Russia? and secondly, what shall be done with Palestine? Do not both point to one and the same conclusion? and has not God announced that that conclusion shall be reached in this "time of the end"?

To conclude. The rapid glance which we have taken of the twenty-five centuries of Jewish history which have elapsed since the days of Nebuchadnezzar and the beginning of "the times of the Gentiles" shows that—

1. Never since the days when that monarch subdued the Jews have they been independent of Gentile authority, though for five centuries a remnant of them were restored to a tributary condition in their land.

2. That since their rejection of "Messiah the Prince" total dispersion among the Gentiles has been the lot of their whole nation, and desolation the portion of their land.

3. That the 1,000 years of the middle ages, and especially the seven centuries from the tenth to the seventeenth centuries, were to them a time of unspeakable degradation and suffering in all lands of their exile.

4. That since the middle of the last century a complete change has passed over their condition, and they have been everywhere uplifted, emancipated, recognised as equals by all nations, given rights and privileges as citizens, a share in popular representation, seats in councils and senates, a position among the aristocracy, and in the national administration of the countries where they reside; that they have risen to eminence in finance, in literature, in music, in war, in government, in politics, and in education; that their wealth has become enormous, their position secure, their

Digitized by Google

influence great, and their scattered families reunited in one great national organization.

5. That since the year 1808 efforts have been made to evangelise them, and that in recent years very considerable numbers of them have been converted; also, that within the last decade a movement *for accepting Christ as the Messiah of Israel* has begun among themselves, and though still only incipient, is promising to spread.

6. That during the present nineteenth century the Moslem power, which for 1,200 years has occupied and oppressed the land of Israel and the city of Jerusalem, has been decaying with ever-increasing rapidity, the process having now gone so far that it cannot last much longer. On its fall the perplexing question, Who is to replace the Turks in Palestine? will have to be settled, and the restoration of the Jews is consequently becoming an alternative in practical politics, attracting the attention of some of the great powers of Europe.

The chronology of this present movement of incipient recovery and restoration we will consider in its place in the next chapter; but we cannot close this section without directing attention to the bearing of these facts on our faith and hope and duty as Christians.

Before such a fulfilment of prophecy as Jewish history exhibits what can all the fiery darts of infidelity do? Their story, extending back as it does through 4,000 years of history, forms an impregnable fortress for believers in the inspiration of Scripture. What else but Divine foreknowledge and Divine inspiration *can* account for the facts of this strange case?

There exists this day in all nations a scattered people, a people without land or government, without metropolis or temple, speaking all the principal languages of the world, yet regarding the ancient Hebrew as their sacred tongue; one in race, one in faith, one in religious observances; a people who for antiquity of descent are the very aristocracy of the earth, able to trace back their genealogy through 4,000 years to one great and good father, as no other people on earth can do; a people who have exerted more influence over subsequent ages than even Greece and Rome, who have

Digitized by Google

been the source of all the monotheism of the world, and but for whom we might this day be polytheistic idolaters like the ancients; a people who have handed down through the ages the sacred books which denounce their own sins, and foretell their own punishment, as well as predicting their ultimate national restoration and salvation. Let unbelievers account for these facts as they may, candour must surely confess that they evidence the hand of God in history, and the mind of God in Scripture.

Every principal phase of Jewish history was foretold before it came to pass, and has come to pass exactly as it was foretold,—every one except the last; and in this wide analogy of the past we find ground for confident expectation as to the future of Israel.

Every event, whether great or small, from the birth of an infant to the fall of a nation, from the events of a day to those of ages,—*everything* in Jewish history was predicted in advance, and our chronological position enables us to compare the predictions with the events.

The three greatest of the original predictions about Israel were given in the form of promises to their first father, Abraham. The first was that his posterity should be marvellously multiplied; the second, that they should inherit Canaan; and the third, that the world should be blessed through his seed. The first has been conspicuously fulfilled all through Israel's history. Their rapid multiplication in Egypt was only a first instance of what has continued ever since, and continues to this day. Their exceptionally strong vitality enables them everywhere to outlive and outnumber their Gentile neighbours, and to survive persecutions and massacres that might well have annihilated them long since. The second prediction was fulfilled in their possession of Canaan for eight or nine centuries; and the entire sweep of the civilized world bears witness this day to the accomplishment of the third; all the nations which have not as yet received the Divine revelation contained in Judaism and its outcome, Christianity, being still idolaters or savages, or both, while the nations that have been and are most influenced by that revelation stand in the forefront of civilization and progress.

Digitized by Google

As regards more specific predictions. The birth of Isaac and of Ishmael, with their respective characters and future histories; the descent into Egypt, the servitude there, the exodus and the wanderings in the wilderness, the casting out of the nations of Canaan, the characters and destinies of the different tribes, their growth into a kingdom, the division of the nation into two, the fall of the kingdom of Israel and its date, and that of Judah and its date, the Babylonian captivity and its duration, the restoration, and the events to Messiah the Prince, the Roman war and the subsequent dispersion, and the present incipient restoration of the people and uplifting of the land,—all these main features of their history, and a thousand minor particulars, were *distinctly announced before they happened.* Can we trace in the history of any other nation on earth *a similar peculiarity*, or even a pretension to it? Let critics carp as they will about specific dates and verbal difficulties, can such objections ever touch this grand, massive, unparalleled demonstration that "holy men of old"—in announcing these things—"spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost?" And if Jewish history has thus been ordered by the will and power and according to the purpose of God, may we not argue the same as to all human history? And secondly, since we can not only trace the fulfilment of all the earlier predictions about Israel, but the incipient stages of the later ones, how confidently and joyfully may we anticipate the near fulfilment of the latest and the last! And if Daniel, when he knew the first restoration was near at hand, set himself to plead that it might come and not tarry, how should we likewise set ourselves to plead that this greater and better restoration may be hastened in its time! Let us ponder his earnest, touching, and importunate petitions, and ask ourselves whether our hearts are similarly exercised in intercession for the ancient people of God.[1]

We know what their restoration will be to us and to the world; we know that "if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness?" We know that if the casting away of Israel has been the reconciling of the

[1] Dan. ix. 4–19.

Digitized by Google

world, the receiving of them again shall be life from the dead.

Prayer for Israel and work on Israel's behalf seem emphatically the present duty of those who remember that they are beloved for the fathers' sake, and believe that ere long there shall come unto Zion the Deliverer, who shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.

The *dates* of the events connected with the renaissance of the Jewish people which we have mentioned in this sketch of their history will claim our attention farther on.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

CHRONOLOGICAL MEASURES OF THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES.

"JERUSALEM SHALL BE TRODDEN DOWN OF THE GENTILES, *UNTIL* THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES BE FULFILLED."—*Luke* xxi. 24.

"WHEN THE TIMES OF REFRESHING SHALL COME FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD; AND HE SHALL SEND JESUS CHRIST, . . . WHOM THE HEAVEN MUST RECEIVE *UNTIL* THE TIMES OF RESTITUTION OF ALL THINGS."—*Acts* iii. 19–21.

WE must turn now from history to chronology, and we may say of this branch of our subject what Mr. Birks says of his exposition of the two later visions of Daniel: "From the nature of the details of which it is composed, it may perhaps fail to interest general readers; but those who *study it* will find themselves repaid by a more deep and lively sense than ever of the actual providence of the Almighty in this fallen world. Why have we in the word of God itself so many genealogies and lists of names, of offerings of princes, of journeys in the wilderness, and other passages that seem dry and barren, but to teach us that we must *stoop to details and individual names*, if we would rightly understand the condescension of our God, and the reality of His special oversight of the children of men? Those who are soon weary of these details must pay the cost of their own impatient spirit by a more loose, unreal, and slippery faith. *The tree of faith must throw out ten thousand little roots into the lowly soil of prophetic history if it is to grow and expand into that noble confidence of hope, which no storms of temptation can uproot or destroy.*"

Here we have to deal with dates and with periods, instead of with names, and these are perhaps even more unattractive to most people, as involving the mental effort of *calculation*; but we venture to assert, that those who take the trouble to

Digitized by Google

follow the investigations of this chapter Bible in hand, will not fail to be at the close more profoundly convinced than ever before of the inspiration of the sacred volume, of the all-embracing providence and foreknowledge of God, and of the near approach of the end of this age. We would earnestly request that our readers verify the chronological calculations of this chapter for themselves. They must indeed do this in order to have any firm, well-grounded conviction on the subject. Merely to read a number of statements as to events, dates, and intervals produces but an evanescent impression on the mind. Our desire is that every student of the subject should be able to say with the men of Samaria, "Now we believe, not because of thy saying;" for we have studied for ourselves, and know that this is indeed the truth.

The *events* should be considered, whether they are indeed as critical and important, in connexion with the historical movements to which they respectively belong, as we represent them to be. The *dates* should be verified where needful, and above all, the *calculations* on which our conclusions rest.[1] It is one thing to receive a dogmatic statement, and quite another to investigate the facts for oneself. We should wish our readers to share the feelings of surprise, of awe, and of adoration, which we ourselves have experienced, when earnest prayer, patient, reverent searching of the Scriptures, and study of "books," have from time to time been rewarded by an opening of the eyes to see, one after another, the facts which form links in a chain of evidence, which demonstrates the system of prophetic chronology.

Only gradually and one by one did they come to our knowledge; many a calculation made revealed nothing, but we *believed* that a Divine order pervaded the times of history and prophecy, as it pervades all the other works and ways of God. We knew that appearances were not to be trusted, that the seemingly lawless and erratic movements of planets and comets are in reality regulated by the most exact laws, that the countless apparent anomalies of nature are all capable of classification, and exhibit perfect and wonderful

[1] The simple operations of addition and subtraction are alone required for this.

Digitized by Google

order. We had no doubt that it was the same with these sacred "times," and hence we continued our search, till all became, step by step, clear. And now we invite other Christian students critically to examine the results here presented; for if they are true, every Christian ought to know it, every preacher ought to proclaim it, the world ought to be warned of its fast approaching doom, and the Church ought to be cheered by the assurance of the nearness of her "blessed hope."

Sacred chronology is no barren field to cultivate. The Scriptures contain no unedifying statements, and they contain thousands of chronological ones? Has the Church ever yet received from them any great comfort or consolation? Is not the time come that she should do so? Is she likely to do so without study? Has nature yielded to scientists her potent secrets without long and patient investigation and meditation? Are the material works of God more profound and more worthy of research, than that WORD which is magnified above all His name, which is "for ever settled in heaven"—that word which is "truth," and which *liveth* and abideth for ever? A living thing has always something *new* in it; the Bible is no more exhausted than the rich storehouse of nature! The very truths needed for our days of doubt and dark infidelity—new and glorious evidences of the inspiration of Scripture—are *there*. Let us be hopeful and diligent, and seek to develop them to the glory of God.

Before we begin to consider the exact chronological *intervals* lying between the events of the three eras of history we have now treated, it will be well briefly to summarise the general conclusions we have already reached.

1. That the fourfold image of Daniel ii., symbolising the succession of Gentile monarchies, extends from the rise of Babylon, and the fall of the throne of Israel and of Judah, to the yet future establishment of the kingdom of God on earth.

2. That the appointed duration of this succession of four Gentile monarchies is "seven times," or 2,520 years (seven times 360 years), *a great week*, harmonious with all the various weeks of the Levitical economy and of Jewish history.

Digitized by Google

3. That these 2,520 years of "the times of the Gentiles," like other periods of chronologic prophecy—and notably the great prophecy of the "seventy weeks" to Messiah—may be measured by either the solar, calendar, or lunar scale, warrant for the employment of each and all existing both in nature and in Scripture; and that sometimes the same period runs out on two, or even all three, of these natural scales.

4. That the difference between these three scales is such that "seven times" runs out on the lunar scale seventy-five years earlier than on the solar. This difference between the two measures, or the inequality between the solar and lunar year, is called EPACT. There is also an intermediate calendar scale; so that "seven times" may be either 2,520, 2,484, or 2,445 ordinary years, according to the scale employed; and similarly its half, "time, times, and a half" may be 1260, 1,242, or 1,222½ ordinary solar years. All these three scales are and have been in use among different nations in different ages.

5. That these prophetic periods should be regarded as extending, not merely between certain events, but between certain groups of events; not so much between certain YEARS, as between certain critical ERAS OF HISTORY; the first of these is the *captivity era* of Israel and Judah, the second is marked by the fall of the western empire of Rome, and by the rise of the *Papal and Mohammedan powers;* and the last is called in Scripture "the time of the end."

6. That in the course of these eras there occur certain salient *years of crisis*, which are frequently answered by chronologically correspondent years of crisis in a later era, though the *principal* measures are between the eras themselves.

7. That the events foretold by chronological prophecy are exclusively those bearing directly or indirectly on *the history of the redemption of the human race.* Even when apparently mere political changes—such as the rise and fall of the pagan empires, wars, battles, sieges, victories, defeats, treaties, accessions of kings, changes of dynasty, publication of edicts and decrees, etc.—they will yet be found on reflection to be important incidents in the history, either of the typical or of the anti-typical Israel—the people of God,

Digitized by Google

natural or spiritual, the Jewish nation or the Christian Church,—who have been and still are the channel of the world's redemption. Every change in the environment of an organism has a bearing on the organism itself, and the story of its development cannot be told without reference to the history of its environment.

We must also remind our readers here that the events with which we are now dealing lie in the region of *certain* and not of uncertain chronology. Prior to the era of Nabonassar, there is a measure of uncertainty as to very ancient dates, and as to the intervals between any two given events of antiquity, so that it would be impossible to measure many such intervals accurately.

Bible chronology, calculated as it largely is by the lives of the patriarchs, the administration of judges, and the reigns of the kings, leaves two narrow gaps which can never be bridged over with absolute exactness; one between the death of Moses and the servitude under the Midianites, and the other between the election of Saul and the death of Samuel. The limits of doubt in these two intervals are *very narrow*, but they prevent absolute certainty as to the *exact* length of any interval which includes both or either of these gaps. A near approximation may be made, but accuracy cannot be claimed for any such calculation. After these two gaps, however, Bible chronology is consecutive and certain, and from the era of Nabonassar it is confirmed by astronomy. At that point all becomes perfectly clear and unquestionable; the dates of the Babylonian, Medo-Persian, Grecian, and Roman kings are just as certain as those of the Plantagenets or the Tudors. The exact chronological position of the era of Nabonassar has been accurately determined by the verification of a series of astronomical observations, including eclipses recorded by Ptolemy, the time of whose occurrence was measured by ancient astronomers from this point. In dealing with the dates of the events of the "times of the Gentiles," we are throughout consequently in *the clear sunlight of authentic chronology*, and we can calculate the chronological distance between any two events of which we possess the exact dates to a day, and in certain cases even to an hour. A fixed astronomical starting-point makes every-

Digitized by Google

thing clear, and all the intervals which we mention in the following pages are just as easily ascertained as the period which elapsed between the battle of Trafalgar and the battle of Waterloo, or between the accession of William the Conqueror and the present day. It should be noted also, as regards the number of events which we have mentioned in the chapter on history, and with whose dates we have now to deal, that though considerable in itself, it is small in comparison with the number that actually took place in the course of these twenty-five centuries of the history of all the important countries of Europe, Asia, and Africa. Moreover, the events which we have selected arrange themselves into *three distinct groups*, and they all happened in three distinct and widely separated eras.

1. The era of the rise of the literal (typical) Babylon.

2. The era of the rise of the mystical Babylon, or anti-typical Babylon—called in Scripture "Babylon the Great," Rome Papal.

3. The era of the fall of this latter power, cotemporaneously with the fall of the Moslem power, in these days.

Or to look at these eras from the other side; the events with which we are dealing are connected with—

1. The era of the fall of the natural Israel under Babylon.

2. The era of the fall of the western Church under Rome Papal (Babylon the Great), and of the fall of the eastern Churches and of Jerusalem and Palestine under the Moslem woe.

3. The present era of the rising again of the Jewish nation and land, cotemporaneous with the fall of the Papacy and the Porte.

Now these historic movements are far removed from each other, and none but Bible students can see any relation between them. Certainly nothing but prophecy indicates any *chronological* relation between them; the predictions of Daniel asserted, twenty-five centuries ago, that there would be such a chronological relation, and that "seven times," or 2,520 years, would separate the first from the last, and especially that the Papal apostasy would last for half that time, or 1,260 years; indicating thus that the whole week would be divided into two halves (Dan. vii. 25). The ques-

Digitized by Google

tion we now have to study is, *whether the chronological relation predicted in prophecy can be traced in history.*

This is the kernel of our argument—*the chronological relation* between the three eras of which we have treated, and between the years of crisis in the first, and those in the second or third. In considering this question we must needs pass into the regions of clear arithmetical calculation. If we would know whether the "time is fulfilled" and the kingdom of God in glorious manifestation at hand, we must consider, like Daniel, "the *number* of the years whereof the word of the Lord has spoken."

Let it not be for a moment imagined that accurate chronological statements are unworthy of a spiritual revelation, or of Him who gave it. Not only are order and symmetry apparent in every branch of natural science, but harmonious relations of number meet us everywhere among the works of God. Is not chemistry to a large extent a science of number? In the laws of heat, light, sound, and electricity, in music, in botany, in anatomy, and in a host of other sciences numerical relations are paramount. Now, if God governs *matter* thus, if His material work betrays at every turn that calculation and orderly arrangement have presided over its genesis, how likely is it that His providence should have similar features!

And if history, with its successive eras, and its chronological epochs, be, as it undeniably is, the record of Divine providence, the story of God's moral government of men, may we not expect to find *order* underlying its apparent chaos? If a wonderful and world-wide septiform periodicity has been impressed on nature, organic and inorganic, by its Maker, as it assuredly has,[1] may we not expect to trace something similar in His providential arrangements?

The Bible is full, not only of history, but of chronology. It positively bristles with dates and periods, and this is one of the features which most plainly distinguish it from all spurious revelations. "Its doctrines, precepts, promises, and its prophetic imagery and hymns of holy worship, are all inwoven into a narrative of God's moral government, which

[1] See "Approaching End of the Age," chapter on "The Divine System of Times and Seasons," p. 230.

Digitized by Google

reaches from Adam to Nero and Vespasian, from the garden of Eden to the city of Rome. This comprehensive history is taken up and completed by a prophecy, no less comprehensive, which stretches onward from Patmos to the new Jerusalem, from the age of the Apostles to an eternity still to come. The Bible may thus be called God's own history of our world, from the first entrance of evil to its final overthrow, and from the dominion of Adam in paradise to the reign of the second Adam, the Lord from heaven. With such help it is easy to trace the main outlines of Providence in the six thousand years which have already passed away."

In the Bible alone we can see at once the past and the future of mankind. Other books give parts of the story of which Scripture gives the whole; in it therefore alone shall we find the whole moral and the whole *chronological* plan of God's dealings with the human race. In *its* light alone need we expect to discern the glorious truth, that the apparent chaos of history, with its wars and fightings, conquests and overthrows, rise and fall of kingdoms, is "a mighty maze, *but not without a plan*," even as regards its chronological features.

Moreover, if the Maker of the universe, and Architect of the solar system, be the Author of the chronological prophecy, as well as of the plan underlying history, we may expect to find that all the three years, which the great orbs He has appointed to be time-measurers for man mark off *as* such, *will be employed as units of measurement.*

These two thoughts ought to abate any foolish prejudice *against calculation* in connexion with chronologic prophecy. Of it as a whole we may say, what inspiration says of a special point, "Here is wisdom; let him that hath understanding *count*" (Rev. xiii. 18).

Proceeding then to count or measure from the extreme limits of the captivity era—that is, from its earliest and latest dates—first three and a half, and then "seven times," let us observe, first, the dates to which we are led, and, secondly, the events which took place in the years indicated.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

LUNAR MEASURES OF THE SEVEN TIMES, RECKONED FROM THE CAPTIVITY ERA.

THE era of Nabonassar, B.C. 747, is the date of the accession of the *first* king of the Babylonian empire: and B.C. 587 is the date of the *last* stage of the fall of Judah under Zedekiah. The two dates mark therefore the beginning and end of the captivity era. Taking them for our starting-points, we measure 1,260 years by the shorter lunar scale, and are led to the years A.D. 476 and A.D. 637.[1]

B.C. 747	1,260 lunar years.	A.D. 476
B.C. 587	1,260 lunar years.	A.D. 637

Now what were *the events* of these two years? Were they critical and important in character in connexion with the history of "the times of the Gentiles"? or were they nothing remarkable? Let us note well the reply.

The year A.D. 476 *was the date of the fall of Romulus Augustulus, the last of the long line of the Cæsars, the last of the western Roman emperors. His fall marks the end of the four great pagan empires of antiquity.*

Think of the long, complex, wonderful story that terminated in this year; think of the magnitude, variety, and multiplicity of the events constituting the rise, course, decline, and fall of these four universal empires; think of the careers of Nebuchadnezzar and Belshazzar, of Cyrus and Darius, of Xerxes and Alexander the Great, of the Maccabees and the Seleucidæ and the Ptolemies, of Pompey and Julius and Augustus,—above all, of the sublime and ever-memorable

[1] In this and similar calculations it should be remembered that 1,260 lunar years are only 1,222½ solar.

Digitized by Google

events of the career of "Messiah the Prince;" think of the Herods and of Pilate, of Titus and of Hadrian, and of the fall of Jerusalem and destruction of the Jewish nation; think of the long line of the Cæsars, their conquests and their crimes, their glories and their shames, their world-wide dominion and unparalleled power; think of the pagan persecutions of the early Church, and of the first division of the noble army of martyrs; think of the conversion of Constantine, and the establishment of Christianity in the Roman world; think of the division of the empire, and of the removal of the seat of government to Constantinople; think of the dreadful inroads of northern barbarism, and of the long continued decline of the old Roman civilization; let the mind run slowly over the events of these twelve or thirteen centuries of human history; let the magnificence and the might of Nineveh, Babylon, Jerusalem, Antioch, Alexandria, Rome, Constantinople, and a hundred other great cities, pass like a panorama before the mental eye, and melt away like dissolving views into the contrasted spectacle of their wreck and ruin, their struggles and sufferings, in siege and sack and overthrow; let the myriad episodes of their history recorded by the Jewish prophets and Josephus, by Herodotus and Thucydides, by Eusebius and Gibbon in his "Decline and Fall" be recalled: and let us then measure, if we can, the marvel of omniscience and foreknowledge that is involved in the fact, that, not only the occurrence, the order, and the sequence of this almost interminable series of events was foreseen in detail and foretold in outline from the beginning, but that *the time required for their conjoint occurrence was appointed and arranged, and that even to a day!* The entire history of the four great empires up to the point of the fall of the fourth in its first or empire form (as distinguished from its last or ten kingdom phase) occupied precisely "time, times, and a half" on the lunar scale, not only to a year, but *to a day*, for the exact accuracy of the period is perfectly wonderful. From the accession of Nabonassar, Feb. 26th, B.C. 747, to the fall of Augustulus, Aug. 22nd, A.D. 476, there are 1,222½ solar years, or 446,503 days; while 1,260 *lunar* years (or 15,120 lunations) contain 446,502½ days; so that the difference, if any, is merely one of hours.

Digitized by Google

Can any candid mind regard this *fact* (which no one can deny or even question) as a mere *chance coincidence?* From the initial date of the rise of Babylon, the beginning of the Jewish captivity era, to the deposition of Romulus Augustulus, and the end of the western empire of Rome, exactly three and a half "times," or 1,260 years, elapsed; not in the open solar form, that might have challenged premature attention, but in that same veiled lunar form in which the "seventy weeks" to Messiah the Prince were measured, announced and fulfilled.

Nor should we let the mind go *back* merely from this great dividing date; it should be allowed also to glance forward. If A.D. 476 was the terminus of the old world—of the old Roman empire—it was, as we have seen, equally the starting-point of the new.

This year was that of the removal of the hindrance to the rise of the *Papal apostasy*.[1] It marks the "deadly wound" under which it seemed for a time as if the rule of Rome must expire. The old imperial head was wounded to death; and in its place there rose after a time, another head—the final, and most evil and anti-Christian form of Roman rule, the Papacy; that line of tiara-crowned monarchs, who, for more than twelve centuries, governed Papal Europe from the seven-hilled city, and ranked, not only as high priests, but as *temporal sovereigns*, uniting under their sway the kingdoms of western Christendom.

Think of the great apostasy of the Christian Church, brought about in due time by the self-exaltation of the bishops of Rome, when they became Papal pontiffs! Recall the deluge of false doctrines and wicked practices which flooded Europe for twelve centuries, from the river of Papal power which rose as a little bubbling rivulet among the ruins of ancient Rome! Consider the myriads of martyrs who suffered under Papal tyranny in later years, when the bishops of Rome had become just as much of "wild beasts" as the old pagan emperors! Consider the more than imperial authority which these Papal pontiffs wielded for long ages over Europe! Consider too the appalling fact that this influence was always used to repress the truth and to per-

[1] 2 Thess. ii. 6.

Digitized by Google

secute the saints, to oppose God, to exalt self, to increase sin, to bury in Latin the Bible, to oppress mankind, to ruin souls! Surely if A.D. 476 is a great year because of what it brought to an end, it is an even more momentous crisis on account of what it inaugurated—the long and evil reign of the "man of sin" and "son of perdition"—the "dark ages" of the Papal antichrist.

Whatever importance attaches to the history of the Papacy attaches to its initial date; just as the birth of a great man derives its prominence from his subsequent career, he reflecting back on it his own importance, so this year A.D. 476 derives its character from its relation to one of the most momentous movements in history, regarded from the standpoint of the well-being of the Christian Church.

"Time, times, and a half" from the *first* date of the captivity era lead us then to the date of the fall of the *western* empire of Rome, which is also the initial date of the rise of the Papacy. The same period measured from the *last date* of the captivity era, on the contrary, leads us to the *eastern* empire, and to a date connected with the rise of that Mohammedan power before which Constantinople (or new Rome) ultimately fell.

It leads us to A.D. 637. This was, as we have seen, the year of the capture of Jerusalem by the Saracens, under the Caliph Omar. Between the fall of Jerusalem before the hosts of Babylon, in the days of Zedekiah, and its capture by this great conqueror, 1,260 lunar years, the fated "time, times, and a half," also elapsed.

Now it is quite true that the *great* destruction of Jerusalem, the one predicted in Daniel ix., was not this one under the Saracen Omar, but that under the Roman Titus, which took place over five centuries previously, in A.D. 70. Nevertheless this fall had also its importance, and is well worthy of the chronological position which it occupies in the bisection era.

It is the initial date of the long oppression and desolation of the Holy City under the Mohammedan power, Saracenic and Ottoman, which still exists, and which will probably exist until Jerusalem ceases to be trodden down of the Gen-

Digitized by Google

tiles, "the times of the Gentiles" having been fulfilled. It is the initial date of *the final desolater of the land of Israel*, and of the last oppressor in the city of the great king, the Mohammedan power. During by far the longer part of the eighteen centuries of the utter desolation of Palestine, Jerusalem has been trodden down by *this* power. Hence the date of its first establishment in the Holy City cannot be an unimportant one. The chronological measures of its occupation of Jerusalem are given in Scripture, and they have nearly run out, as we shall see presently.

The date occurs in that central bisection era, in which, as Luther used to say, "the pope and the Turk came up together." The seventh century was the one in which the Papal power was fully developed, in which the *spiritual* "abomination that maketh desolate" was established in the *spiritual* temple, or the Christian Church, while a literal "abomination of desolation" was established in the literal sanctuary, by the erection of the Mosque of Omar on the site of the temple in Jerusalem, where it continues to this day. Thus:

1. From the rise of the *Babylonian* to the fall of the *Roman* empire was three and a half lunar "times."

2. From Nebuchadnezzar's destruction of Jerusalem and burning of the temple, in the reign of Zedekiah, to the Saracenic conquest of Palestine and capture of Jerusalem was also three and a half lunar "times."

As there are 160 years between the two first events, so are there between the two last; and the double occurrence of the remarkable 1,260 years prophetic measure in this lunar form is a seal of its importance.

The bisection era to which we are led by these measures, A.D. 476–637, is well marked in its limits by events of unquestionably terminal character, and it includes all the principal stages of the rise of the Papal and Mohammedan powers. We will consider next the

Lunar Measures of the whole "Seven Times."

The full period of "the times of the Gentiles" is not three and a half times, but seven times we must thus extend the

Digitized by Google

measuring line as far again, if we would reach the commencement of "the time of the end." And what ought we to expect at the close of this period? We must remember that we are measuring from the *earliest* dates on the *shortest* scale, and are therefore likely to arrive at *initial termini* only. We must also remember that the era of the "time of the end" is in the nature of the case *longer* than either the captivity era or the bisection era. As the period runs out on two astronomical scales, differing to the extent of seventy-five years, this margin must be added to the 160 years, and the "time of the end," up to its farthest and *final* close, would thus appear to be 235 years in duration instead of 160. Hence its initial dates will be *farther removed* from its closing dates, and the initial events are likely to be *proportionately incipient in character*. We must expect then, in measuring by the lunar scale from the *earliest* date of the Nabonassar era to reach events about 235 years prior to the full and final end of the age, and consequently indicating only the beginning of its closing movements. In other words, we are likely to reach very early stages only in the decline and fall of the Papal and Mohammedan powers: nothing complete, nothing final, but events which, regarded in the light of all that had gone before, of all that has since happened, are clearly the *first links* of a chain, which ends in the predicted overthrow of these last forms of Gentile power.

This is exactly what we *do* reach! The year 1699, or the close of the seventeenth century, was unquestionably a most remarkable period in the history of two great and long continued struggles: first that between Popery and Protestantism in the West; and secondly, that between Mohammedanism and the Christian nations of Europe in the East. Two great treaties of pacification were signed at this period; the PEACE OF RYSWICK in the West, and that of CARLOWITZ in the East. We have before pointed out the nature and effect of these, and historians will at once recognise each as marking the turn of the tide, the incipient beginning of downfall and decay, the first in connexion with the Papacy, and the second in connexion with Mohammedanism.

It was not so much that either began actually to retro-

Digitized by Google

grade very perceptibly so early as this; but just as the Nabonassar era—the starting-point which leads us to this date —marked the rise only of that Babylonian empire which was *later on* to overthrow Israel and Judah, so this corresponding *terminus* marks the accession to superior power of the Protestant nations in the West, and of non-Moslem nations in the East. The results of the events which took place at this crisis were then dim in the future, but have since changed the condition of the world. The movements *inaugurated* at that period have never ceased but are still progressing, and now visibly nearing their close.

"The Peace of Carlowitz forms a memorable era in the history of Europe. Austria secured Hungary and Sclavonia, which for two hundred years had been occupied by the Turks, and made the important acquisition of Transylvania. At the same time the sultans lost nearly half their possessions in Europe; and from this diminution of territorial sovereignty, the Ottoman power, which once threatened universal subjugation, *ceased to be formidable to Europe.*" [1]

In the West, as we have seen, this period was equally critical. It saw confirmed the "glorious Revolution" and the Protestant succession in England, which put the power of Britain into the hands of the great champion of the reformed faith, William of Orange. This Christian hero overthrew the reactionary schemes of Louis XIV., whose despotism and persecuting cruelty had roused all Europe against him. The Treaty of Ryswick, marking *the full political establishment of the Protestant religion*, was signed in 1697. Innocent XII., the pope regnant at this date, had lost much of the old supremacy, and was indeed a mere servant to Louis XIV.; his life abounds with proofs of the fast-increasing degradation of the Papacy. France and other Papal states at this period claimed the absolute control over their own ecclesiastical affairs, and emancipated themselves from all interference by Rome. No historian will for a moment question the critical importance of the end of the seventeenth century, in connexion with Protestant ascendency, on the one hand, and Ottoman decline, on the other. [2]

[1] Coxe: "House of Austria," vol. ii., p. 459.

[2] Several fulfilments of apocalyptic prophecy, which we must not in-

Digitized by Google

We must next inquire, Where does the same period, "seven times" lunar, run out as measured from the *latest* date of the captivity era, the fall of Zedekiah, B.C. 587? The reply is even more striking.

In A.D. 1860,—the year which, as we have seen, witnessed the formation of the UNIVERSAL ISRAELITE ALLIANCE, as well as the first inroad on and limitation of Mohammedan power in SYRIA—the placing of the Lebanon under a Christian governor and British protectorate: events which must be regarded as marked stages of that Jewish renaissance which is as characteristic of "the time of the end" as is the fall of "Babylon the Great."

The character of this crisis was very remarkable; it was an evident *beginning* of that unification of the long scattered Jewish people predicted in Ezekiel's vision of the restoration, under the figure of bone coming to his bone. In 1860 an incipient commencement of *national re-organization* of the Jewish *people* took place, on the one hand, and an incipient "cleansing of the sanctuary," or Holy Land, from Moslem domination, on the other.

Prophecy does not lead to the expectation that Moslem power in Turkey would cease at the end of 1,260 years, for Daniel xii. 11 distinctly assigns to it a duration *thirty years longer:* "From the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, *and the abomination that maketh desolate set up*, there shall be *a thousand two hundred and ninety days.*" When this period runs out, *which on the lunar scale it will do in* 1889, we may expect to see the Mohammedan treading down of Jerusalem come to an end; but as this is a still future date, we do not dwell on it here, but in a later chapter.

The above events were, not only significant, as stages in

troduce into *this* argument, but may indicate in a subsequent treatise, strongly confirm the importance of this date, 1699. It is the close of the resurrection of the witnesses, their ascent to power among the nations, and it is the end of the sixth trumpet, the Ottoman woe. Henceforth the conquering advance of the Turks ceased. It is "an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year," in prophetic measure, from the commencement of the *Ottoman* career of conquest. It is the date of the fall of "the tenth part of the city."

Digitized by Google

Jewish renaissance, but they were also a distinct stage in the *fall of the Ottoman power*, which was forced by Christian influence to act utterly against its Moslem principles, against the Koran, and against all precedent, in agreeing to appoint a *Christian* governor of the Lebanon province; and still more in permitting England and France to have a veto on the appointment—an admission of its own loss of *independence*. It was one of the many stages of the fall of Islam which we shall have to pass in review, but it was a marked one, and one especially connected with the land of Israel.

This year was also a decidedly critical one, as we have seen, in Italy—the great year of Garibaldi THE LIBERATOR, in which Italy was reconstituted as a kingdom under Victor Emmanuel.

This year 1860 was, not only, be it remembered, "seven times" lunar from the complete overthrow of Judah,—from the burning of the temple in Nebuchadnezzar's capture of Jerusalem,—but it was also three and a half "times" from the Omar capture of the city. In other words, the "seven times" is bisected by the *Moslem capture of Jerusalem*, and the establishment of the Mosque of Omar, which is, in a certain sense, the setting up of the "abomination that maketh desolate" in the holy place.

B.C. 747	A.D. 476	A.D. 1699
B.C. 587	A.D. 637	A.D. 1860

We see then that the "seven times," measured to the inner lunar limits, bring us unquestionably to incipient stages in the decay of the Papacy and the Porte; and that in each case the period is *bisected* by remarkable and closely related events. The bisections are even more strikingly *critical* than the termini, which are too early to bear any character of finality.

The year A.D. 476 is, beyond all question, the end of one great stage of human history; the end of the four great pagan empires of antiquity, and the beginning of another—the Papal empire of Rome, with its dark story of corruption and bloodshed; and the year A.D. 637 is equally critical as

Digitized by Google

that of the fall of Jerusalem and of all Syria under Mohammedan rule, which still dominates and desolates the Holy Land and city. It is evident also that the corresponding terminal years bring to both these "little horns" the beginning, though only the beginning, of the end!

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

SOLAR MEASURES OF THE SEVEN TIMES.

If now, from the same two limits of the captivity era, we measure "seven times" on the full solar scale,

B.C. 747	"seven times" solar	A.D. 1774
B.C. 587	"seven times" solar	A.D. 1934

we are led to the year A.D. 1774, and to the yet future year, A.D. 1934. That future date is the year in which the seven times will terminate on the *longest* scale, from the *latest* starting-point, and it is therefore likely to bear to the other critical years of the "time of the end" about the same proportionate importance as the last stage of the fall of Judah, under Zedekiah, bore to the earlier stages. That last stage was *not* the *crisis*, but an after-wave of the Babylonian overthrow, the great crisis of which had come eleven years previously. But of this we will speak more particularly in a subsequent section, as, avoiding final stages and future dates, we are here dealing only with preliminary stages and past dates; that is, with matter of absolute historic certainty, not with anything in the slightest degree speculative or uncertain. We are planting our feet at every step on the *terra firma* of unquestionable *fact*.

For the present then we consider only the first of these two terminal dates, A.D. 1774, a date removed by 2,520 *full solar years* from the era of Nabonassar, B.C. 747.

To what crisis did this first full termination of the "seven times" lead?

To the great crisis which is, by the common consent of all

Digitized by Google

historians, regarded as the beginning of a new era in the history of European Christendom,—to the commencement of the era of retribution on the great Roman apostasy and its head, the Papacy—to the era of THE FRENCH REVOLUTION—to the year 1774, which was that of the accession of Louis XVI. and Marie Antoinette. The French Revolution had three stages: the *preparatory* stage, in which deistical and infidel doctrines were made the basis of widespread attacks on religious faith and existing political institutions; the *actual Revolution*, which overthrew Church and State, society and religion, royalty, nobility, clergy, laws, customs, institutions,—everything that had previously existed in France; and lastly *the Napoleonic stage*, which, after a series of *aggressive wars*, which upset every kingdom in Europe, dethroned the pope and five other monarchs, created eight new ones, carried captive two Roman pontiffs, incorporated Rome in the French empire, and ended by subjecting France to a tyranny more complete than that from which it had liberated the country in the beginning. The *whole* movement may be said to have extended from Voltaire to Waterloo; but the accession of Louis XVI. (A.D. 1774), the accession of the monarch who lost his crown and life in the crisis of the Revolution, may be regarded as the initial date of the central part of the movement. Just as in the captivity era, the accession of Nabonassar, the first king of Babylon, and not that of Nebuchadnezzar, the king under whom Babylon reached the climax of its glory and the height of its power, is the starting-point, so here; not the climax of the Revolution which was to overthrow the Papal Babylon, but the accession of the monarch in whose reign it took place, is the *first* point to which we are led. Alison begins his history of the French Revolution with this year 1774.

IN THE EAST this same year brought another well marked stage in the fall of Turkey: a disastrous Russian war, closed by the fatal and humiliating TREATY OF KAINARDJE, of which we have spoken elsewhere.

Thus in the West "seven times" *solar* lead to the *French*, as "seven times" *lunar* led to the *English* Revolution,—both stages of Papal overthrow, though of widely different character; while in the East "seven times" solar lead to Kainardje,

Digitized by Google

as "seven times" lunar led to Carlowitz—names which sound like death-knells in the ears of Turkish statesmen.

We may add that the previous year, 1773, witnessed the abolition of the order of the Jesuits by Pope Clement XIV., who was forced to issue a bull for the purpose, though well aware it would cost him his life, and endanger the stability of the Papal throne, of which the order had long been a mainstay. The French Revolution and the Treaty of Kainardje mark the full solar commencement of "the time of the end."

To the "seven times" prophecy adds *its own epact*, seventy-five years, or the difference between 2,520 lunar years and the same number of solar years. This it adds *in two portions*, thirty years, and forty-five years.[1] It does not distinctly intimate the nature of the terminal event of these added seventy-five years, further than that they will bring the time of full blessedness. This supplementary period seems to have a special connexion with Palestine and the Jews, Daniel's people, and is chiefly to be dated from a later point. But just as the oft repeated 1,260 years, or three and a half "times," measure, as a matter of fact, other series of events than those to which they are in Scripture especially *applied*, so these seventy-five years can be traced from this 1774 terminus as leading to further stages of Papal decline and fall. Thus "seven times" from the earliest Nabonassar date, *plus* its own epact, which is seventy-five years—divided as the prophecy divides it, into two sections, the first of thirty, and the second of forty-five years, reach down to the critical years A.D. 1804 and 1848–9. Thus:

1774	30 years.	1804	45 years.	1849

What were these years? A.D. 1804 was that of the coronation of Napoleon as emperor; and this acme of the glory of the military hero of the Revolution was also a stage of *the deepest degradation to the Pope of Rome*. The emperor commanded Pius VII. to attend the ceremony, obliging the old man to cross the Alps in mid winter, not to confer a crown, but merely to adorn a ceremony. Napoleon himself placed

[1] Dan. xii. 11, 12.

Digitized by Google

the crown on his own head, and *the pope*, who used to claim that by him kings ruled and princes decreed judgment, *stood by, a purposely slighted and insulted witness.* Later on Napoleon forced this same pope at Fontainebleau, where he had kept him for some time captive, to sign a *concordat*, by which he renounced his temporal authority and *all claim to Rome for ever*, and agreed to reside in France in future, as a salaried servant of the emperor! This agreement did not of course stand after the fall of Napoleon, but it was a fatal precedent for the Papacy.

In 1849 again the pope had to flee from Rome; driven away this time, not by foreign enemies, but by his own subjects, who could endure no longer the terrible maladministration of the priestly government, which had so long eaten like a cancer into the vitals of Rome and the States of the Church. Pius IX. was deposed, his prime minister was killed, and an Italian republic proclaimed, under Mazzini. The violent revolutions which shook nearly *every throne in Europe* during this year 1848 seemed like the result of some *tremendous anti-Papal earthquake.* A mere catalogue of its events sufficiently attests the curiously critical character of the year, which is often called the year of European revolutions.[1]

[1] The year of 1848 witnessed the French Revolution, which culminated in the abdication of Louis Philippe on February 24th. A republic was proclaimed from the steps of the Hôtel de Ville, on February 26th, and on May 26th the perpetual banishment of Louis Philippe was decreed. In June, Louis Napoleon was elected to the National Assembly, and in the same month occurred the rise of the red republicans, the war with the troops, the 300 barricades; Paris also was in a state of siege. The national losses were 30,000,000 francs, 16,000 persons killed and wounded, and 8,000 prisoners taken. Louis Napoleon was proclaimed president of the French Republic in December of the same year. The revolution broke out in Paris on February 23rd, and "before March 5th every country lying between the Atlantic and the Vistula had, in a greater or less degree, been revolutionised." A little more than a fortnight after the fall of Louis Philippe a revolution took place in Rome, leading to the expulsion of the Jesuits, the assassination of the prime minister and Cardinal Palma; a constitution was proclaimed, and in November the pope fled to Gaeta, where an asylum had been provided for him by the king of Naples; in February of the following year the pope was formally deposed from his temporal authority, and a republic was proclaimed.

This year 1848 also witnessed a revolt in Palermo and in the eastern

Digitized by Google

But, it will be objected, none of these events, even though reaching to the close of the added seventy-five years, are terminal; the Papacy was restored again even after 1848. True; and this is precisely what should be expected; we are measuring still only from the very *earliest* date of the captivity era. If we want to reach the *terminus* of "the time of the end," the full and final fall of Babylon, we must calculate from the *latest* date, or at any rate from the date of the culmination of Babylonian power in the days of Nebuchadnezzar.

This we will do farther on; but in the meantime we must measure the "seven times" from the *intermediate* dates of the captivity era, the conquests of Shalmaneser, Sennacherib, and Esarhaddon.

The SECOND commencing date is that of the first overthrow of the ten tribes, B.C. 723, the year which witnessed the siege of Samaria by Shalmaneser.

B.C. 723	"seven times" solar	A.D. 1798

This terminus, if our system is well founded, ought to

provinces of Lombardy, a revolution in the two Sicilies leading to the proclamation of a constitution; a similar change in Sardinia and in Tuscany; the overthrow of the Duchy of Parma; a revolution in Venice; another at Milan; the annexation of Lombardy to Piedmont; the revolt of the peasantry in Cephalonia; tumults in Vienna, involving the flight of Metternich, and the granting of a constitution by the Emperor Ferdinand, and subsequently his resignation of the crown to his nephew Francis Joseph; the king of Bavaria abdicated in favour of his son Maximilian; an insurrection at Prague on June 12th, and at Berlin on the 14th; riots and revolution in Hungary, leading to the investment of Kossuth with dictatorial powers. Schleswig Holstein threw off the yoke and declared its own independence; the king of Holland had to revise the constitution; Cabrera was in arms in Spain; and in our country chartist riots were an unsuccessful attempt at insurrection; while the state of things in Ireland was such that the Habeas Corpus Act had to be suspended, and numbers of men tried for high treason. Thus during the course of this one year the whole of Europe was, in a way which is unique in history, shaken by the repeated throes of a great political earthquake, which crumbled into dust the old despotic monarchies, introducing in their stead constitutional governments.

Digitized by Google

lead to a more marked *stage* of the overthrow of the Papacy, in connexion with the French Revolution. It is only needful to turn to Alison, or any other historian of the period, to see that it did so.

"The object of the French directory (in 1798) was the destruction of the pontifical government, as the irreconcilable enemy of the Republic. They urged their general to drive the pope and cardinals out of Rome. Buonaparte proposed to give the Eternal City to the king of Spain, on condition of his recognising the French Republic. Failing in this he resorted to a system of pillage, which exhausted its resources, and finally a democratic demonstration was got up at Rome in the accustomed manner, in which one of the French envoys was killed by the fire of the pontifical troops. This misfortune afforded the desired pretext. The French army, pouring in under Berthier, planted the tricolour on the Capitol, while their Roman confederates, displaying the famous insignia, S.P.Q.R., shouted for liberty. The aged pope was summoned to surrender the temporal government; on his refusal he was *dragged from the altar, and the soldiers plundered the Vatican in the presence of its owner.* They stripped his own chamber; when he asked to be left to die in peace, he was brutally answered that any place would serve to die in. His rings were torn from off his fingers, and finally, *after declaring the temporal power abolished*, the victors carried the pope prisoner into Tuscany, whence he never returned.

"The Papal States, converted into the *Roman Republic*, were declared to be in perpetual alliance with France; but the French general was the real master at Rome. The citizens groaned under his terrible exactions. Churches, convents, palaces, were stripped to the bare walls. The works of art were nearly all carried off. The territorial possessions of the clergy and monks were declared national property, and the former owners cast into prison. *The Papacy was extinct;* not a vestige of its existence remained; and among all the Roman Catholic powers, not a finger was stirred in its defence. The Eternal City had no longer prince or pontiff; its bishop was a dying captive in foreign lands; and the decree was already announced, that no successor would be allowed in his place."

From the year when these scenes of judgment were enacted in Rome "seven times" carry us back to the year of the invasion and ravages of Shalmaneser, the proud monarch of Assyria. Is this accident or design?

The THIRD critical date of the captivity era was, as we have seen, that of the invasion of Sennacherib. This was a question of four or five years, as his ravages of the land

Digitized by Google

of Israel, and subsequently of that of Judah, were extended over several campaigns, from B.C. 713 to B.C. 708.

If now from these four or five years of the military ravages of Sennacherib we measure "seven times," to what corresponding events in the time of the end are we led?

B.C. 713-8	"seven times" solar	A.D. 1808-12

To the campaigns of the European prototype of Sennacherib, the modern scourge and destroyer of nations, Napoleon Buonaparte, employed by the hand of Providence as leader of the infidel host of revolutionary France against the Papal nations,—to the years in which he carried rapine and slaughter into all the kingdoms of Europe.

This is surely a most remarkable coincidence! The awful devastating and destructive wars of Napoleon, between 1808 and 1812, terminated in a catastrophe not unlike the one which befell the host of Sennacherib, by the loss of an army twice as numerous among the snows of Russia. Out of nearly half a million of men whom he took over the Niemen, only about three thousand returned to recross that stream! In the course of the years from 1804–1814 no less than ten millions of men—a number absolutely inconceivable by the mind—fell on both sides in these wars, the money cost of which was besides incalculable, and the effects of which have never been recovered by France.

Both Sennacherib and Napoleon were in the zenith of their power and glory when they started on these campaigns which ended so fatally. Sennacherib's ravages formed a marked stage in the *fall* of Judah, which, though spared at the time, never recovered the shock, and Napoleon's campaigns were a *most* marked stage in that course of events which is bringing about the *restoration* of Judah and Israel in these days. It was under the strain produced by these wars that the naval power and vast colonial empire of Protestant England, and the enormous military power and Asiatic empire of Russia, were developed to their present marvellous expansion, while the Latin nations lost ground in proportion. The effect on the Jews we have already noted. The interval between the principal campaigns of

Digitized by Google

these two great conquerors is precisely the great week, or "seven times"—2,520 years on the full solar scale.

The FOURTH critical date of the captivity era is the completion of the deportation of the ten tribes under Esarhaddon, B.C. 676. "Seven times" solar from this date lead to A.D. 1844, while "seven times" lunar from B.C. 602 (Nebuchadnezzar) terminate in the same date, A.D. 1844, and are bisected by the date of the Hegira, A.D. 622.

B.C. 676	"seven times" solar			A.D. 1844
B.C. 602	3½ times lunar	A.D. 622	3½ times lunar	1844

In this case both the central and terminal dates are critical in connexion with that Mohammedan power which has for more than twelve centuries trodden down Jerusalem. The central one is that of the HEGIRA ERA itself, the date from which the entire Moslem world reckons to this day, as we do from *Anno Domini;* and the terminal date is that of the Hatti Hamayoun, or decree of religious toleration wrung by the Christian powers of Europe from the Ottoman Government. In 1844 the Porte was compelled, under threat of European interference, to issue this edict, abolishing for ever its characteristic and sanguinary practice of execution for the adoption of Christianity. This compulsory sheathing of its persecuting sword was a patent proof that its independence was gone, and a marked era in its overthrow. As the Mohammedans employ a strictly *lunar* year, A.D. 1844 is the 1260th in their calendar.

THE FIRST AND THE EIGHTH YEARS OF NEBUCHADNEZZAR are the remaining intermediate starting-points in the captivity era. In both these years he besieged and took Jerusalem, and in both he led large numbers of Jews captive to Babylon. The Jehoiakim stage took place in B.C. 606–5, and the more serious Jehoiachin stage in B.C. 598. This latter is probably the *principal* crisis in the whole captivity era, as we have before shown. Both years witnessed complete overthrows of Jewish power by Nebuchadnezzar, that singu-

Digitized by Google

larly typical, self-exalting monarch, who stands as the express image of the Papal dynasty of these latter days. There were other monarchs of Babylon, but HE was the great and typical one. There were other destroyers of Jerusalem, but HE was the fated and final one. Sennacherib and Shalmaneser exalted themselves against God, and persecuted His people; but Nebuchadnezzar exceeded. He is represented as the *great* incarnation of human power and pride. It was he who made a great image of himself, and commanded the world to worship it, and heated the burning fiery furnace of persecution "seven times hotter than it was wont to be heated," for the torture and destruction of those who would not bow down to the idol he had made, or worship the image which he had set up. It was he who boasted in his pride, "Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty?" It is he who was predicted as the destroyer of the city and temple of God, and against whose city of Babylon such tremendous judgments were denounced. In a word, it is he who is the great *type* of the terrible Papal antichrist of prophecy and history.

His campaigns consequently against Judah and Jerusalem are the specially important ones; and after the lapse of "seven times" from *them*, we are likely to reach the centre and crisis of Jewish restoration. From the date of his overthrow of the nation and desolation of the land, we may expect "seven times" to lead to the restoration of the people of Judah to their land; and from the date of his overthrow of the *throne* of Judah, we may expect "seven times" to lead to the restoration of that throne, in the person of the Son and Lord of David, the true King of the Jews; while, from his burning of the temple and breaking down of the wall of Jerusalem, we may expect "seven times" to lead to the rededication of the temple and city.

Nebuchadnezzar's three campaigns against Judah took place in the first, the eighth, and the nineteenth years of his reign, extending over a period of nineteen years. The dates of these campaigns were:

Digitized by Google

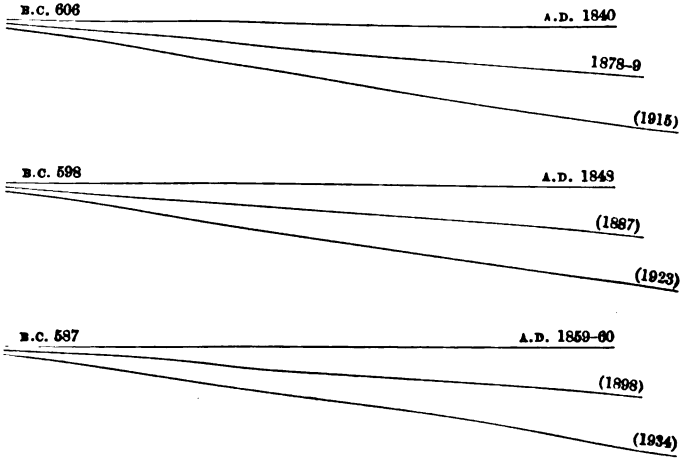
B.C.

606–5. Conquest of Jehoiakim. Loss of Jewish independence.

598. Overthrow of Jehoiachin. Fall of the throne of Judah.

587. Burning of the temple and complete destruction of Jerusalem in the days of Zedekiah.

From these three dates "seven times" run out on the solar, calendar, and lunar scales as follows:



Now it will be observed that the full solar termini from all these three dates are yet *future*, and do not run out until the early part of next century. Two of the three calendar are also future, though very near at hand; they will run out this century, and one of them in twelve years. Only the three lunar and one of the calendar termini are as yet past.

We postpone any remark on the still future dates, which we have included in brackets, to a closing section of this work.

As to those already past, "seven times" calendar from the *first* starting point brought the year 1878, the year of the Berlin Conference, which, with the war that preceded it, was

Digitized by Google

beyond all question *a very marked stage* in the downfall of the Ottoman power,—a stage in that dismemberment of Turkey which is to end in the liberation of Palestine from its present oppressor.

By the Treaty of San Stefano a large portion of Armenia (Turkey in Asia) was ceded to Russia, the Drobudcha was lost to Turkey, the complete independence of Roumania was recognised, the limits of Servia and Montenegro were extended, and Bulgaria was erected into an autonomous Christian principality. The provisions of this treaty were subsequently modified at the Berlin Conference, which divided the province of Bulgaria, refusing independence to that portion of it south of the Balkans; an arrangement which was overthrown in 1885. The signature of the Treaty of Berlin was preceded by the Anglo-Turkish Convention, under which, in return for *the cession of Cyprus to England* —a further step in the dismemberment of Turkey—this country most unwisely undertook to defend the Turkish possessions in Asia, including the Holy Land, against Russian agression, the Porte promising necessary reforms, subject to British approval. These reforms have, of course, never been effected.

The year 1878 was also that of the death of Pius IX., the last pope wielding temporal power.

It is also noteworthy that "seven times" calendar measured from B.C. 606, the first of Nebuchadnezzar, is like the "seven times" lunar from B.C. 578, his last overthrow of Judah, bisected by the Omar capture of Jerusalem.

"Seven times" calendar

B.C. 606	A.D. 637	A.D. 1878-9

"Seven times" lunar

B.C. 587	A.D. 637	A.D. 1859-60

Thus these two periods, though starting from different dates—the beginning and end of the nineteen years of Nebuchadnezzar's overthrow of Jerusalem,—and reaching different termini by different scales, meet in this *central* date of the Omar capture of Jerusalem.

As to the briefer and earlier lunar *termini* of the "seven

Digitized by Google

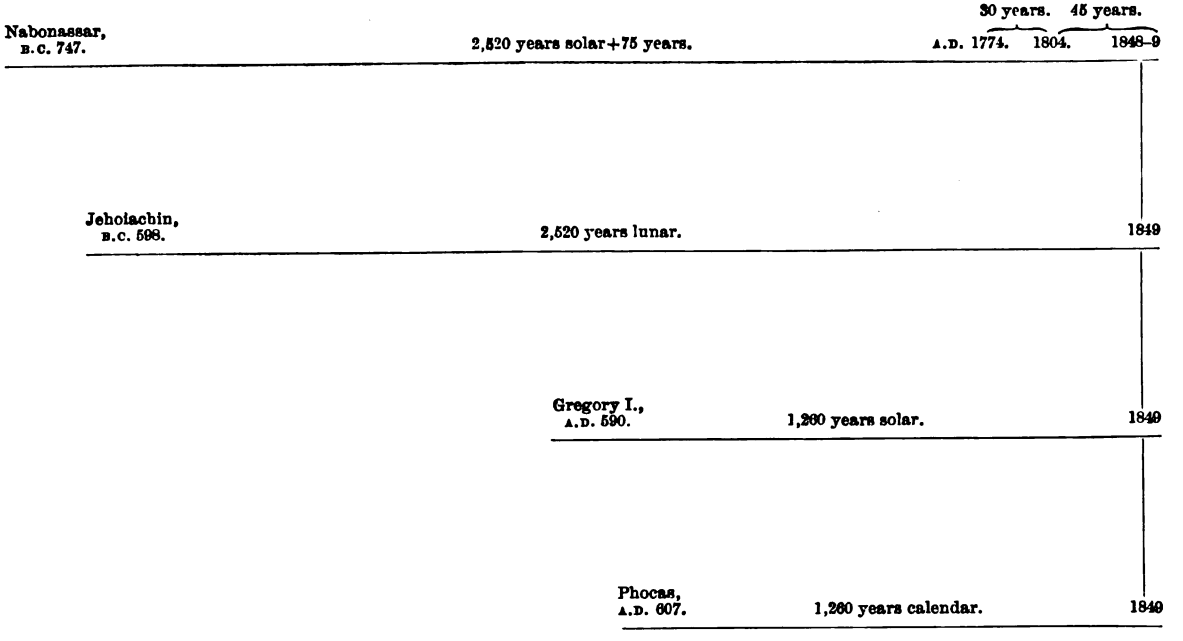
times" from the Nebuchadnezzar starting-points, they are all past, 1840, 1848, and 1859–60; and *each* of these years unquestionably witnessed stages of decay and fall either of the Papal or Mohammedan power or of both.

In A.D. 1840 *Egypt* was virtually lost to the Porte. Mehemet Ali, the wise, despotic, powerful, and warlike viceroy of the country, had been in rebellion against the sultan since 1831, when his forces invaded Syria, and he defeated the Turks in the decisive battle of Konieh (1832). He had been remarkably successful in his career, and with the help of his son Ibrahim had conquered Syria, Arabia, Candia, and a considerable part of Asia Minor. The Turkish fleet, which had been sent against him, was by treachery surrendered to him at Alexandria in 1839, and the empire of the Osmanlis seemed menaced with dismemberment, if not ruin. Under these circumstances, the powers of Europe intervened, and the British fleet took Sidon, Beyrout, and St. Jean d'Acre. Mehemet Ali had to submit to their dictation, and surrender some of his conquests; but he obtained from the sultan *the hereditary possession of Egypt* and the life governorship of Syria as far as the north of the Lake of Tiberias. The treaty was signed in the month of *July*, 1840, and was a great stage in the dismemberment of Turkey, Egypt and Syria being two of her finest and most important provinces. Egypt has ever since been virtually independent, though nominally a vassal kingdom.

The second lunar terminus is the year 1848, of which we have already spoken in another connection; its importance in the movement we are considering, the fall of Papal and despotic power, is conspicuous. Such a year of revolution was probably never known in Europe before or since. So strange and unaccountable was the revolutionary fever which broke out in Christendom, that it attracted everywhere a marvelling attention. One nation caught it from another; the infection spread very rapidly, and produced a kind of political delirium; constitutional freedom was everywhere demanded, and everywhere granted. In many of these revolutionary movements emancipated Jews took a leading part: as, for instance, Fould, Crémieux, and Goudchaux in France, Pincherle in Vienna, Jacobi in Berlin, Riesser in Frankfort, Fischhof in Austria, and Freund in Hungary.

Digitized by Google

DIAGRAM OF THE PERIODS OF "SEVEN TIMES" AND "THREE AND A HALF TIMES," TERMINATING IN A.D. 1848-9.



Digitized by Google

That this year was a great prophetic crisis may be gathered from the fact that four distinct periods terminate in it:

1. "Seven times" solar from the era of Nabonassar, with the added seventy-five years (Dan. xii. 11).

2. "Seven times" lunar from the Jehoiachin date.

3. "Time, times, and a half," or 1,260 solar years, from the bisection date of Gregory the Great.

4. The same period *calendar* from the bisection date of the pope-exalting decree of the Emperor Phocas.

We may add also that, dated from this critical year, seventy-five years more bring us to 1923, the full solar close from the principal date of the captivity era, that of Jehoiachin —the great Ezekiel starting-point.

Of the year 1860 we have already spoken fully, so need not here repeat its events.

The three final Nebuchadnezzar dates of the captivity era give rise in the terminal era of the "time of the end" to nine years of crisis: three at the *lunar*, three at the *calendar*, and three at the *full solar* close of "seven times" from the three starting-points. Of these nine we have now considered the four that are past, and have found, as we might have expected, that, being only imperfect lunar and calendar closes of the great period, the crises in the fall of Babylon the Great and Islam, to which they conduct us, have *no character of finality about them*. That is natural, and must be so, if the system we seek to unfold be the true one. The end is not yet; we must for it await the full solar close of "seven times" from these dates.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

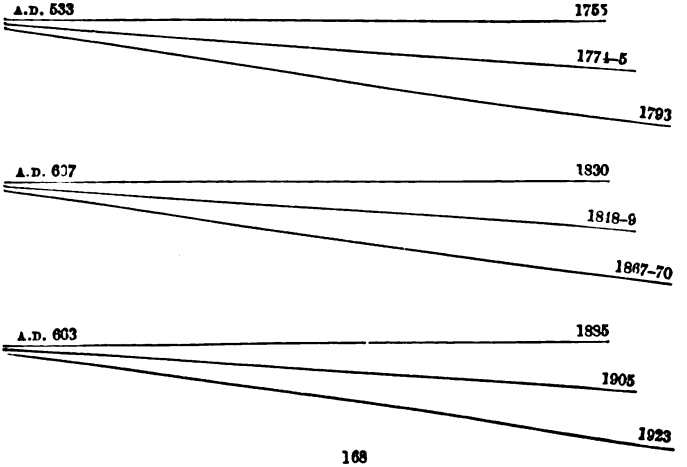
MEASURES OF THE SECOND HALF OF THE SEVEN TIMES.

We must next note a number of deeply interesting facts connected with the measures of the SECOND HALF of this great dispensational week of "seven times"—facts which seem to indicate that the oft-repeated "time, times, and a half" is adjusted, like the whole period, to run out on the three astronomical scales, and to lead in a similar way, to successive stages of the predicted historical movements.

The bisection dates of the rise of the Papacy are, as we have shown, especially the following:

A.D. 533. Justinian's pope-exalting decree.
„ 590. Accession of Gregory the Great.
„ 607. Decree of Phocas (see p. 65).
„ 663. Vitalian's Latinizing decree.

Now from these dates, *as starting-points*, measure on the three astronomic scales the "time, times, and a half" of the predicted duration of the Papacy.



Digitized by Google

The result is three groups of dates, the two first of which are all connected with Papal overthrow in the most definite and unquestionable manner.

The first group consists of, first, Voltaire's literary incendiarism; secondly, the accession of Louis XVI. and Marie Antoinette, and thirdly, the Reign of Terror.

The second group gives the dates of the anti-Papal revolutions, which caused:

1. The abdication of Charles X., after the three days' war of the barricades in Paris and the victory of the people. Belgium became independent this same year; Saxony, Hesse Cassel, Mannheim, Weimar, Hanau, and Jena, all obtained from their rulers constitutional government; and the Papal chair was for two months vacant.

2. The remarkable set of anti-Papal revolutions eighteen years later, 1848, the year of the great revolutionary earthquake before alluded to.

3. The year 1870—the final fall of the temporal power. The four years 1866–70, years fresh in the memory of this generation, witnessed the *final* stage in the overthrow of the long-falling temporal power of the Papacy. The first Napoleon had dealt it heavy blows, blows of such stunning force that it seemed almost dead. But it still possessed some vitality, and revived for a time. The injuries received had nevertheless been fatal, and the recovery was more in appearance than reality.

The powerful reactionary policy of the allies, and the fears of the generation which had witnessed the French Revolution, and of the succeeding one, threw back the cause of liberty and the progress of nations for a time. The former tyrannies were reinstated, and maintained with a vigilance born of fear; and just as France had to submit to the old Bourbon despotism, so Rome had for a time to submit again to the popes. The submission, however, was an unwilling and restless one, during the whole period from the peace of 1815 to the overthrow of 1870. Italian aspirations for national unity and for political liberty—kindled by the French Revolution, and quickened by subsequent ones and by the examples of other nations—formed a powerful factor in the question. The popes adopted a line of conduct which

Digitized by Google

could not have been better chosen had they desired to secure their own overthrow. They had learned no lesson from the adversity they had suffered.

Pius IX., who became pope in 1846, attempted at first some liberal reforms, and had he continued this policy he might have staved off the evil day. But it was not to be; the long impending downfall was to reach its close during his pontificate, and, all unwittingly to himself, he consistently acted as if he wished to hasten it. The adversities of his predecessor, and his own, had taught him no wisdom. Even after the revolution of 1848, which made him for two years an exile, he pursued the same tyrannical course. When in 1850 he returned to Rome, under the protection of French soldiery, his policy became only more suicidal than ever. He re-established the Jesuits, re-opened the dungeons of the inquisition, and deliberately set himself to reorganize the European commonwealth on the model of the darkest days of the dark ages. On his own sole authority, without the concurrence even of a council—a thing that no pope had ever done before—he added a new dogma to the faith of the universal Church, the foolish and idolatrous doctrine of the "immaculate conception," which all men were required, on pain of damnation, to receive. He reorganized a Roman Catholic hierarchy for Protestant England, and busied himself in canonizing saints and gathering around him in Rome numerous and imposing bodies of bishops and dignitaries from every part of the world. He enforced in Rome a law prohibiting Protestant worship, save at the embassies; persecuted those who dared to read the Scriptures in the social circle; and at last compiled and published his famous "Syllabus"; gathered his great Œcumenical Council of the Vatican; so managed it that the assembled archbishops, princes, cardinals, patriarchs, bishops, abbots, generals of orders, etc., had no liberty even to discuss the great question brought before them, but were fraudulently forced to pronounce in favour of the superlatively absurd and monstrously wicked dogma of Papal infallibility. This new canon of the Roman Catholic Church was decreed July, 1870.

The blindness of the Roman pontiff and his hierarchy to the truth, to the temper of the times, to the state of Europe,

Digitized by Google

and to the doom immediately impending over them, was complete. A strange, judicial insanity seemed to have befallen them. Men marvelled at their madness, and Bible students recalled the solemn statement of the apostle about this Romish apostasy—that because they would not receive the truth of the gospel in the love of it, therefore God would send them, in judgment, strong delusion, so that they would believe a lie, to their own condemnation and ruin.

Very speedily was the blasphemy of this infallibility decree rebuked by the Most High! The same day that it was published, there was despatched from Paris to Berlin the declaration of war which sealed the fate of the second French empire, and *with it that of the temporal power of the Papacy*. July 18th, on which the pope read, amid the thunder and lightning of an awful storm, the decree which marked the climax of Papal pretension, the announcement of his own infallibility, Napoleon III. despatched his challenge to Germany. We know what followed: how Protestant Prussia humbled herself before God by a day of special prayer on the 27th, and besought His blessing on her quickly gathering armies; how the wicked and withered and blood-stained emperor of Catholic France, accompanied by his poor, unfortunate boy, assumed the next day the command of the wretchedly organized French troops at Metz; how the Germans defeated the French, both at Weissembourg and at Geisburg, on August 4th, and on the 6th at Wörth and Forbach; how they bombarded Strasburg and defeated Bazaine, and drove him back into Metz, gained another great victory at Gravelotte, and forced the emperor and the entire army into SEDAN, where, on September 2nd, they had to surrender, and were all taken prisoners; how 300,000 men marched on Paris, and establishing their headquarters at Versailles, besieged it in September; how other German armies overran all France; how Bazaine had to surrender Metz and 173,000 men in October; and how, before the end of the year, France lay bleeding and prostrate at the feet of her Protestant foes, without an army in the field or an ally in Europe. And we know also how, long before this crisis arrived in France—Rome having been evacuated by the French troops, which were sorely needed at home—the pontifical government fell,

Digitized by Google

to rise no more. The king of Italy forewarned the pope of his intention to occupy Rome on September 8th, and did so in the following month. Rome decided, by an overwhelming vote, for union with Italy, and was, with its surrounding territories, incorporated by Royal decree with the Italian kingdom in October, 1870.

This was the full and final fall of the temporal power of the Papacy. It was on the day of the last meeting of the council, which had deified a man by declaring him possessed of the Divine attribute of infallibility, that Victor Emmanuel's announcement reached Rome; it was on the day that the German armies closed round Paris that the Italian general Cadorna invested Rome. The struggle lasted but a few hours; the pope understood that further resistance would be mere wanton waste of life, for his Zouaves numbered but 8,000, and 50,000 Italians were arrayed against him. As soon as a breach had been made in the walls of Rome, the word to surrender was given.

"There, yea, there, on the proud dome of St. Peter's, being raised, and beginning to flutter, was the white flag; and there, unwinding itself, did it float out upon the September breeze, and waved in the forenoon sun—waved over pontiff and cardinal, over the circus of Nero and the inquisition of the popes. Was it real? Eyes would be wiped to see if they did not deceive. Eyes—ay, the eyes of soldiers—would be wiped from thick, hot tears. Could it be—could it ever be? Come at last! The hour for which ages had impatiently waited, for which myriads of Italians had died. Italy one! Her arms, outstretched from Etna and Monte Rosa, clasping at last every one of her children; and even availing, by their returning strength, to lift up her poor old Rome from under the load of the priest and the stranger.

"He who two brief months before had, amid deep darkness at noonday, read out by artificial light the decree of his own unlimited power and irreformable law, lay down that night amid a rude and intrusive glare streaming from across the Tiber into the multitudinous windows of the Vatican. It came from the lights of Rome, all ablaze with illuminations for the fall of the temporal power." [1]

Even so Romanist an authority as Cardinal Manning admits that *this* fall is unlike any of the previous preliminary temporary falls. He says: "There is one point in which the present crisis of the Holy See and of the Christian Church

[1] Rev. W. Arthur, M.A.: "The Pope, the Kings, and the People."

Digitized by Google

differs from all that has gone before it. Always in the ages past, when one or more of the European powers were in conflict with the Holy See, one or more of the other powers were friendly and gave it protection. Now not one stands in its defence; they have all with one accord hid their faces from the vicar of our Lord; they are all consenting to the deed. The princes and rulers of Christendom have forsaken their Master, and their silence in the hour of danger is flight. Never till now have all the nations of Europe consented in the deed of the nations who have usurped Rome. Never till now has the public law of Europe been changed to sanction the usurpation. For the first time the HEAD OF CHRISTENDOM is excluded from the senate of Christian sovereigns, though the temporal sovereignty of the supreme pontiff is of Divine institution." [1]

Chronologically the four last years of the temporal power of the Papacy were removed from the four last years of the Emperor Phocas, whose decree appointed the pope to the headship of all the Christian Churches, by

"TIME, TIMES, AND A HALF,"

or 1,260 full solar years. The decree of Phocas, memorialized by a pillar still standing in Rome, was given in A.D. 607, and the emperor died in A.D. 610.

A.D. 606–10	1,260 years, solar	1866–70

The whole course of these four years was filled with events singularly fatal to the Papacy, including overthrows of Catholic Austria, Spain, France, and the Papal States of Italy. The decisive battle of Sadowa, in 1866, between Protestant Prussia and Papal Austria, settled the question of ascendency in central Europe in favour of Prussia and Protestantism, and that for the first time in history. The conspicuous loss of power in all Papal countries was crowned at last, when the prophetic period had fully run out, by the final overthrow of the secular power of the popes in Rome itself. The year 1866 was the 1260th solar year from the *decree*, and 1870 the 1260th from the *death* of Phocas.

[1] MANNING: "Temporal Power," Preface, p. xiii., Third Edition.

Digitized by Google

Can any one suppose that these things happen by accident? Consider what a combination is here! Far back, at the beginning of the dark ages, a wicked usurper and murderer, thinking perhaps to atone for his crimes, presumes to bestow a prerogative which pertains to Christ alone—the headship of all the Christian Churches East and West—on the bishop of the ancient seat of the empire, ROME; and the ambitious and worldly-minded bishop dares to accept the gift, and seat himself in the temple of God, as if he *were* God. Divine prophecy had foretold, more than a thousand years before, the uprising of this power at this period, and had foretold also that it should endure in the Roman world for 1,260 years. We pass on through the centuries, and note how this same power grows greater and greater, till it wields an authority mightier than that of the Cæsars at the pinnacle of their glory, for it rules over two hundred millions of mankind, and, according to its own account, rules not in earth only, but in heaven and in hell. We note how the saints are given into its hand, and perish by millions at its instigation. We note how all the monarchs of the Roman world give it their voluntary submission for centuries, and how at last they rebel against it, and seek to overthrow it; how they succeed in doing this time after time, though not fully or finally, till, when eleven centuries have been left behind us, we see this power declining and failing. Twelve pass away; it is weaker still! Will it last out to a thirteenth? No; its duration is fixed at 1,260 years. We scan its condition more closely. Fall succeeds fall; yet it rises again, or rather, is helped up again. The last four years are come; it still stands trembling. The fateful year is ushered in. Its first six months pass, and there is no sign of a crash; midsummer comes, and, lo! the storm breaks, and before winter appears all is over—as a reigning dynasty in Europe it has fallen, to rise no more! Is not this the finger of God?

Another fact should also be noted here. From this notable date of the fall of the most idolatrous, corrupt, and persecuting power which the world has ever seen, the power which, in the ancient prediction of Daniel vii. is represented as the cause of the destruction of the Roman world,—from the fall of the temporal power of the Papacy, we go back

Digitized by Google

"seven times"; and where do we land in the remote captivity era of Israel and Judah? In the reign of *Manasseh*, whose sins are especially assigned as the provoking cause of the Babylonian overthrow. Of him it is said, in 2 Kings xxi.,—

1. That he went to the greatest lengths in idolatry, introducing carved images into the very temple of God, restoring the altars and groves which his father Hezekiah had destroyed, making his son pass through the fire, and worshipping and serving all the host of heaven.

2. That he imitated and even exceeded the wickedness of the heathen round about him in their ways, and seduced his subjects to follow his example, until they were more corrupt and abominable than the Canaanites whom the Lord had cast out before Israel.

3. That he filled Jerusalem from one end to the other with innocent blood.

It is scarcely needful to point out that in all these points, idolatry, corruption, and bloodshed, as well as in his being the cause of the ruin of Judah, this Manasseh was a most striking type of the Papal antichrist, who filled the Church with image and saint worship and mariolatry, with indulgences and corruptions, and with persecution and bloodshed.

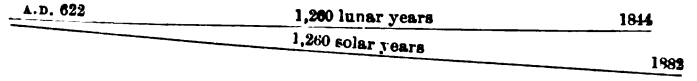
B.C. 650. A.D. 610. A.D. 1870.

Eastern Bisection Dates.

If we take now the two bisection dates which have to do with the rise of the Mohammedan power and the eastern question, instead of with the rise of the Roman Papacy in the West, we shall find that three and a half "times," both from the Hegira era and the Omar capture of Jerusalem, lead down to years which witnessed stages of overthrow of the Ottoman power. The Mohammedan calendar is, as we have said, strictly lunar, and dates from the Hegira era, as our calendar, which is solar, dates from *Anno Domini*.[1] Measuring 1,260 years from the Hegira, we reach on the lunar scale 1844, and on the solar 1882.

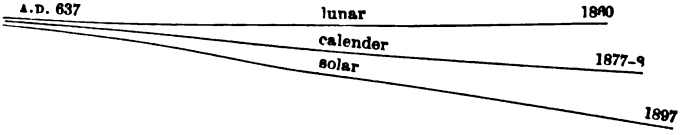
[1] Our present year, 1887, is the Mohammedan year 1304-1306.

Digitized by Google



It will be remembered that the first of these years, 1844, was that of the Turkish Hatti Hamayoun, or enforced decree of religious toleration—a decree, the granting of which was a proof of the complete loss of independence of the Porte; and 1882 was the recent year which witnessed the bombardment of Alexandria, the notable victory of Tel-el-Kebir, and the occupation of Cairo, the total defeat of the Mohammedan rebellion, and the virtual establishment of an English protectorate in Egypt—a movement, the whole of which was a heavy blow to the Porte, as her authority was through it, virtually though not nominally, brought to an end in Egypt.

From the second bisection date, the Omar capture of Jerusalem, A.D. 637, three and a half "times" have already run out on the lunar and calendar scales, but not yet on the full solar.



The first of these years was, as we have already shown, a most critical one in the history of the Porte and in the history of the Jews. It was the first stage in the liberation of the Holy Land from direct Turkish rule,—an early stage in the cleansing of the sanctuary from the power of the desolater; and it was also the year of the formation of the "Universal Israelite Alliance," an initial step towards Jewish national reorganization. The action of England and France in Syria on this occasion must be considered a marked stage in the decline of the Ottoman power, as each such interference with its governmental action is an additional demonstration to the world of its loss of independence.

Though having mainly to do with the East, this year was, as we have seen, a critical one in the West also. It was the year of Garibaldi's victories in Italy, and of the proclamation of the first Italian king who reigned over that long-divided

Digitized by Google

and priest-ridden land since the days of the old Roman empire. The calendar termination from this Omar date is the year 1878, the year of the Berlin Conference, with its wholesale dismemberment of Turkey. The remaining solar termination is still ten years distant, 1897. What is it likely to witness? Some more final and fatal fall of Ottoman power? or some more distinct stage of Jewish restoration? or both? Time will declare.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

THE SANCTUARY CYCLE.

A SECOND long period of time, "2,300 days," or years, is, in the third vision of Daniel (chap. viii.), announced by the "wonderful numberer" who makes the revelation. It was given in reply to a question with regard to the duration of that taking away of the restored daily sacrifice, and that casting down of the restored sanctuary which had just been foretold as destined to take place, and to continue until "the time of the end," or "the last end of the indignation"; that is, until the period of Divine wrath against the Jewish people should terminate, until the close of the present Gentile age. The question and answer are recorded as follows:

"How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot?

"And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed. . . . Understand, O son of man: for at *the time of the end* shall be the vision. . . . And he said, Behold, I will make thee know what shall be in *the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end shall be*" (Dan. viii. 13–19).

In order to the clearer comprehension of the nature of this predicted period, its position in the book of Daniel must be borne in mind. It is one of the *later* and not one of the earlier group of visions; one belonging to the days of the Persians, not to those of the Babylonians; to the restoration era, not to the captivity era.

It is a remarkable fact that the book of Daniel is written in two different languages. It opens in Hebrew; but from chapter ii. 4 to the end of chapter vii. is Aramaic in the original, the remainder of the book reverting to the Hebrew. Thus the prophecies of the "times of the Gentiles" are given

Digitized by Google

in Gentile Chaldee, and the employment of Hebrew in the remaining predictions seems to indicate that the events foretold in them are viewed from a more Jewish standpoint, and that the revelation has a more direct reference to the Jewish people and the Holy Land. On examination such is found to be the case. The "times of the Gentiles" have of course a certain relation to the Jews, as they measure the twenty-five centuries of their subjection to Gentile power; but their details are given from a distinctly Gentile point of view. They start with the literal, and end with the spiritual Babylon, and have to do mainly with the four great Gentile monarchies, and in the fourth, with the western and not the eastern empire of Rome. The kingdom of God in which they terminate embraces of course both Jews and Gentiles, each in their separate sphere, as we learn from other Scriptures.

But with the three last prophecies of Daniel the case is somewhat different. The first—the celebrated prophecy of the seventy weeks in chapter ix.—foretells the events of history from a decidedly Jewish point of view. The Redeemer of mankind at large was recognised and anticipated by the Jews principally as their Messiah. He was to be the Consolation of Israel, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Prince of the house of David; and in this prophecy He is mentioned harmoniously as "Messiah the Prince." The destruction of Jerusalem by Titus, and the long desolation of Judæa, are predicted at the close of the prophecy; the establishment of the new covenant, or new testament, with many is also foretold; but there is no intimation of the fact that it was to be established with Gentiles as well as with Jews, for the calling of the Gentiles was to be a mystery until the days of Paul (Eph. iii.).

The two later visions of Daniel, in the first of which occurs the period we are now considering, are similarly sketched from Jewish, and not Gentile, standpoints. The western empire of Rome is scarcely alluded to. Eastern history and the eastern apostasy are the subject matter of the predictions. Gentile action is of course abundantly described: the conquests of Medo-Persia, the wars of Xerxes and Alexander the Great, the cruelties of Antiochus, the struggles of the

Digitized by Google

Seleucidæ and the Ptolemies. *Eastern* rather than western events are foretold in detail, but all in their relation to the Jewish people and their sanctuary, the Holy Land and city and temple of Jerusalem. The people of God contemplated are mainly the Jews, in their dispersion and in their restoration; and the eastern empire of Rome and the Moslem power replace in these visions the Papal power, which figures so largely in the "times of the Gentiles."

We may not pause here to justify these statements, though it were an easy task to do so, as we are not writing an exposition of the book of Daniel, but have limited ourselves in these pages to an elucidation of the *chronological* rather than of the historical portion of the prophecy, the portion which it is especially stated "the wise shall understand" in these last days. But it is needful to premise thus much, as regards the scope of these later visions, in order to introduce in its place this most important period, connected with the still future restoration of Israel, when the sanctuary shall be cleansed.

Careful students of Scripture, who have reflected at all on these topics, must have observed that in the book of Revelation there is comparatively little about the Jews and their restoration, that subject having been fully treated in the Old Testament. The Saracenic invasion and the Turkish overthrow are indeed predicted in Revelation, for the fifth and sixth trumpets are universally recognised as prefiguring the sore "woes" which were inflicted on the apostate Christian Church of the East by these desolating powers. But the Mohammedan conquests are there viewed in connexion with the Christian Churches of the East, and not in connexion with Syria and the Jews. Yet they stand in a most important relation to Israel also, and in *this* connexion they are presented in Daniel viii. It is as the desolater of *Jerusalem*, and the ruler of *Judæa* for twelve centuries, that this Moslem power principally affects Israel; it occupies the Holy Land and treads down Jerusalem, and has done so ever since A.D. 637, when the Caliph Omar first brought the country under subjection to Mohammedan despotism.

Now just as the Papacy could not be developed while the emperors were ruling at Rome, so the Jews cannot be re-

Digitized by Google

stored while the Turks are masters in Jerusalem; the one power must needs fall before the other can rise. The promised land must be freed from Moslem occupation before it can revert to its lawful heirs, the seed of Abraham. Hence the Mohammedan power has a double relation: it has been, and is, the cruel foe of Christians; it has been, and is, the obstacle in the way of Israel's restoration. Its removal, under Divine judgment, must therefore figure prominently in prophecies of Jewish restoration in the last times; just as largely as the removal of the Papal apostasy, under similar judgments, in the predictions of the deliverance of the Gentile Church, prior to the establishment of the kingdom of God on earth.

The Moslem power has merited judgment as much as the Roman apostasy. Its cruelties, its corruptions, its massacres and its oppressions, its opposition to the truth, its persecutions, its wide dominion and long duration make it a marvellously suitable companion to the Papacy. But its sphere is the East, and not the West; its city is Constantinople, and not Rome; and its destruction bears a closer relation to Jewish questions than to Christian ones.

It should be noted further that both in Daniel and in Revelation this foe is represented as destroyed, not by the brightness of Christ's coming, not suddenly in an hour like "Babylon the Great," but as perishing by inherent decay—"he shall be broken without hand"; "he shall come to his end, and none shall help him"; and under the symbol of the Euphrates, "the waters thereof were dried up." This, as is well known, is, and has been, the characteristic fate of the Ottoman empire. Europe would fain arrest its decay if she could; she will not suffer any enemy wantonly to attack Turkey; she will not permit it to be roughly overthrown in selfish aggression. From motives of policy she would fain uphold it in its present position, but finds it impossible. Corruption and death are working in the body politic; vitality is failing at the centre; and Ottoman dominion must, in spite of every effort, soon cease to exist. It is like a patient already drawing his last breath; it has still a name to live politically, but it is virtually dead. One by one its own provinces are dropping off, and it is becoming evident to all

Digitized by Google

politicians that nothing can arrest its ultimate extinction. The historian Lamartine long since perceived this, and wrote:

"I wish that Turkey may not perish, that an extensive empire may not be trampled down to nothing, or driven into the deserts of Asia. But what is the state of the case? Plains without ploughs, seas without vessels, rivers without bridges, lands without possessors, villages built with mud and clay, a capital of wood, ruins of desolation on all sides, are what constitute the Ottoman empire. In the midst of this ruin and desolation which they have made, and make daily, some thousands of the Turks in each province—all concentrated in the towns, drowsy, discouraged, never working, living miserably upon the spoils of Christian and laborious races—constitute the inhabitants and masters of the empire; and that empire is alone worth the whole of Europe. Its sky is finer, its earth more fertile, its ports more extensive and more safe, its productions more precious and more varied, than those of any other country; it contains 60,000 square leagues. You see by this rapid sketch that the Ottoman empire is no empire at all; that it is a misshapen agglomeration of different races, without cohesion between them, without mutual interests, without a language, without laws, without religion, and without unity or stability of power. You see that the breath of life which animated it—religious fanaticism—is extinct; you see that its fatal and blind administration has devoured the very race of conquerors, and that TURKEY IS PERISHING FOR WANT OF TURKS!"

There is a difference in the chronological, as well as in the linguistic and historic features of the two portions of Daniel. The characteristic measure of the "times of the Gentiles," "seven times," does not appear in this prediction of the cleansing of the sanctuary in the eighth chapter; we find instead this other period of 2,300 years,—a period 220 years *shorter* than the duration of the "times of the Gentiles," but one which nevertheless expires at or very near the same point as the earlier, the establishment of the kingdom of God on earth. How is this? These twenty-three centuries begin later. They measure the history of events in the three last empires only. They start, *not* from the beginning of the kingdom of Babylon, but from the earlier years of Medo-Persia; they commence, not with the era of Nabonassar, nor with the captivity era, but with the

RESTORATION ERA OF EZRA AND NEHEMIAH.

In this vision of the ram and the he-goat (Dan. viii. 3), the first action described—the starting-point of the prophecy—

Digitized by Google

is the pushing of the ram against the goat; in other words, the celebrated invasion of Greece by Xerxes. Not the lion-like Babylon, but the massive, heavy, ram-like Medo-Persia, is the first empire here; and it was at the point where this latter empire succeeded the Babylonian that Jewish restoration commenced.

The predicted 2,300 years must consequently date from *some point in the restored national existence and ritual worship of the Jews*, and they include, not only the whole of *that* period—the whole of the "seventy weeks," or 490 years to Messiah—but also the whole duration of the present second dispersion, accompanied by a second desolation and defilement of the sanctuary. This second dispersion commenced with the fall of Jerusalem under Titus, and was completed by Hadrian, at the close of the Jewish war, A.D. 135. The whole period has lasted therefore, not only through nearly five centuries before Christ, but through all the eighteen centuries since; and as eighteen and five are twenty-three, must be very near its close.

The intended *terminus a quo* is not very distinctly assigned, but as both the 2,300 years of chapter viii. and the "seventy weeks" of chapter ix. start from the Persian period of Jewish history, in other words, as they both date from the RESTORATION ERA which followed the Babylonian captivity, their starting-points must be either identical or closely related, chronologically. Now there is, and can be, no question that the two years, B.C. 457 and B.C. 444, the dates of the two restoration decrees of Artaxerxes, are the starting-points of the 490 years to Messiah the Prince, because *the fulfilment of that prophecy has demonstrated the fact.* We may therefore safely take them as two of the starting-points of the longer period also. But one earlier and two later dates are also indicated by the vision. Its *opening* events are, not the restoration decrees of Artaxerxes, but the wars and victories of Xerxes, the pushing westward and northward and southward of the Persian ram. What point in this monarch's career of conquest is the most marked and critical? Unquestionably his celebrated invasion of Greece, with an army, according to Herodotus, of five millions of men—the greatest of his military exploits, and at first a

Digitized by Google

victorious one. It is true that in its results it brought about the ultimate ruin of his empire, but its beginning must nevertheless be regarded as the climax of his career; when he captured Athens he reached the farthest point of his advance into Europe, and the height of his glory. Napoleon's Russian campaign similarly brought about his ruin; but historians agree that the climax of his greatness was just before he started on that ill-fated expedition. "Earthly state had never reached a prouder pinnacle," says Dr. Arnold, "than when Napoleon, in 1812, gathered his army at Dresden, that mighty host unequalled in all time, and there received the homage of subject kings." [1] Xerxes' invasion of Greece took place in the year B.C. 480, and this date may be taken, consequently, as the *first* commencement of the sanctuary cycle, or period of 2,300 years, to intervene before the full and final cleansing of the sanctuary. The first stage of Jewish restoration under Cyrus had already taken place at this time.

On the other hand, the edict given in the twentieth year of Artaxerxes did not *conclude* the restoration era, for it was not until the thirty-second year of that king's reign that Nehemiah accomplished the work of reformation described in chapter xiii. 6 of his book; while the first "seven weeks," which are distinguished by the angel from the rest of the "seventy," [2] as the restoration era—as the time of the reconstruction of the Jewish city and polity—did not terminate in their earliest form till the reign of Darius Nothus, called "Darius the Persian" (Neh. xii. 20). Forty-nine years, or "seven weeks," from B.C. 457, the decree of the seventh of Artaxerxes, expired B.C. 408; and the same period, reckoned from B.C. 444—the Nehemiah edict of the twentieth of Artaxerxes—expired thirteen years later, in the time of Artaxerxes Mnemon, in B.C. 395. These two dates may consequently be taken as marking the two latest termini of the Persian restoration era of Ezra and Nehemiah.

The restoration era, from which these twenty-three centuries date, is consequently that lying between Xerxes' invasion of Greece, B.C. 480, and the completion of Nehemiah's

[1] "Lectures on Modern History," p. 177.

[2] In chap. ix. 25.

Digitized by Google

cleansing of the sanctuary, B.C. 395. It includes the following dates:

B.C.
480. Grecian expedition of Xerxes. Starting-point of vision (Dan. viii.).
457. The Ezra decree in the 7th of Artaxerxes.
444. The Nehemiah commission in the 20th of Artaxerxes.
432. Nehemiah's second commission, in the 32nd of Artaxerxes.
408. End of the "seven weeks" from the Ezra decree.
395. End of "seven weeks" from Nehemiah's commission.

This last date may be considered to mark the end of Old Testament history, and the closing incidents recorded are all, it will be observed, of the nature of a cleansing of the sanctuary (Neh. xiii.).

At a distance of twenty-three centuries from the *earlier* of these six dates of the restoration era we may expect to meet incipient and then fuller stages of the final and everlasting "cleansing of the sanctuary," and at the same distance from the *latest* of these dates we may look to see the full accomplishment of the process.

The restoration of Israel, and the cleansing of the sanctuary, accomplished during this era under the patronage of the Persian monarchs, were *imperfect and temporary*. Antiochus Epiphanes, the Seleucidæ, and the Romans, one after another defiled the sanctuary again, even during the course of the "seventy weeks" to Messiah the Prince; and forty-one years after His cutting off, the Roman armies under Titus overthrew Jerusalem, burned the temple, and took away both the place and nation of the Jews, inaugurating thus the present long dispersion of the people and desolation of their sanctuary. The subsequent Jewish war, under Hadrian, completed the exile of the remnant of the Jews in A.D. 135, after which it was made illegal for any Jew even to set foot on the soil of Palestine.

That imperfect and temporary cleansing of the sanctuary in the days of Darius was however *typical* of the true and everlasting restoration yet to come, and now close at hand; and this chronological prophecy of twenty-three centuries

Digitized by Google

was given to measure the interval to this latter—the great *antitypical* reality.

Now, first, let it be noticed that this period of 2,300 years is *a most exact and beautiful cycle*, as was discovered by a Swiss astronomer, M. de Cheseaux, last century; a very wonderful cycle, and of a kind that had long been unsuccessfully sought for by astronomers; a cycle thirty times longer than the celebrated cycle of Calippus, and having an error which is only the seventeenth part of the error of that ancient cycle. It is a period as distinctly marked off as a unit of time, as is a month or a year. Yet in the days of Daniel this fact cannot of course by any possibility have been known, as there were no instruments in existence capable of measuring solar revolutions with sufficient accuracy to reveal its cyclical character.

The selection and employment of *this* period consequently in this place is an unanswerable proof of the inspiration of the book of Daniel, and was felt to be such by M. de Cheseaux when he discovered the astronomic nature of this period. It would be a million chances to one that such a cycle could have been employed by accident. If selected intentionally as a cycle, it must have been by Him who timed the movements of the sun and moon in their orbits.[1]

The question now arises, Where does this long period run out? and to what events does its termination lead? We may reply, first, generally.

It runs out like the "seven times," both on the lunar and solar *scales*, and its various termini fall within "the time of the end"; that is, in the period that has already elapsed since the middle of last century. It leads to several of the dates we have already considered as stages in the downfall of the Mohammedan power, as well as to others which have not yet come before us. One of the measurements is exactly bisected, just as one of the measurements of the seven times was, by the Saracenic capture of Jerusalem. In fact, this period may, in a certain sense, be considered as simply a briefer form of "the times of the Gentiles"; it covers the same period chronologically, *omitting the first of the four*

[1] See the account of the remarkable discoveries of this astronomer in the "Approaching End of the Age," pp. 400–406.

Digitized by Google

empires. Starting as it does, not from the Babylonian captivity era, but from the Persian restoration era, it includes the last twenty-three only of the twenty-five centuries of the great Gentile dispensation.

Its lunar measurements run out in the years A.D. 1753, 1776, 1789, 1808, 1825, and 1838; while its solar termini extend to the years 1821, 1844, 1857, 1876, and the two still future years 1893 and 1906. The annexed diagram will show the relation of these dates, all included in "the time of the end" to their respective *termini a quo*, in the Persian restoration era.

And what were the events of these different terminal years? From the nature of the period we are considering we should expect them to be critical, especially in connexion with the modern Jewish emancipation movement, and the fall of Mohammedan power. But as the French Revolution was also a principal factor in the liberation of the Jews, we need not be surprised to find it also indicated.

THE FIRST CLOSE, the middle of last century, is recognised as a marked turning-point in Jewish history by its own distinguished historian, Prof. Grätz.

"So clearly and indubitably does the middle of the last century mark a turning point in this respect in the history of the Jews, that the eminent Jewish historian, Prof. Grätz, in his great work on 'The History of the Jews,' dates the beginning of the fourth and last of the periods into which he divides Jewish history from A.D. 1750, and introduces that part of his work with the following words—words which, in the light of the present argument, are very suggestive:

"'Can a nation be born in a day? or can a nation be born again? . . . Yet in one nation a new birth appears, a resurrection out of a state of death and apparent corruption; and that in a race which is long past the vigour of youth, whose history numbers thousands of years. Such a miracle deserves the closest attention of every man who does not overlook all wonderful phenomena. Mendelssohn had said at the beginning of this period, "My nation is kept at such a distance from all culture, that one might well doubt the possibility of any improvement." And yet she arose with such marvellous quickness out of her abasement, as if she had heard a prophet calling unto her, Arise! arise! Shake off the dust. Loose the bonds of thy chains, O captive daughter of Zion.'"[1]

The year 1753 witnessed the first Jewish emancipation act

[1] DR. KELLOGG: "The Jews," p. 144.

Digitized by Google

in England, an act which, although it was repealed the following year, yet indicates the beginning of a movement which has never since been arrested. This was the period of the rise of the distinguished Jewish writer MOSES MENDELSSOHN, who prepared the way for the great change that was so soon to pass over his people. Of the influence of Mendelssohn Dr. Kellogg writes:

"Mendelssohn prepared the way for the great change that was so soon to pass on Israel, both by his influence on his own people, and by the effect of his life and work upon the sentiments and prejudices of the Gentile peoples of Europe. Till his day the Jews, in a proud isolation, had held themselves in a great measure aloof from the thought, and even from the language, of their merciless oppressors. . . . It was Mendelssohn, first of any among the German Jews, who ventured to enter the profane precincts of Gentile literature. While none the less familiar with his native Hebrew, he became a master of the classic German; and so by his writings brought the German Jews for the first time into contact with the Gentile life and thought of which the German language was the channel. . . . Thus, after an isolation of centuries, they began to feel the full force of the influence of German thought and culture, and so were gradually brought into a position to exert in turn a mighty influence on the Gentiles. Besides this, Mendelssohn, by his notes upon and translation of the Pentateuch, and also by his constant protest against the authority of the synagogue to interfere with the right of individual opinion in religious matters, initiated a great movement against the old rabbinical Judaism, which had for so long a time stood as an impassable barrier between Jews and Gentiles. Thus, quite without intention of his own, he became the immediate author of all that deadly rationalistic tendency which has now so great prevalence and power among the Jews. As Mendelssohn did so much to bring his people in various ways nearer in sympathy to the Gentiles, so, on the other hand, he did scarcely less to enlist Gentile sympathy for the Jews. His rare intellectual endowments, together with the singular attractiveness of his personal character, did very much among the influential circles of Europe to diminish that indiscriminating prejudice of ages, which could believe no good thing of a Jew. How much he influenced Gentile thought and action we can appreciate, when we recall his intimate relations with such men as Lessing, Goethe, Chancellor Dohm, and Mirabeau; and *the active influence of Mendelssohn dates from the same decade which saw the initial act of Jewish emancipation in England.*"

This, it will also be remembered, was the decade of the commencement of Voltaire's anti-Christian influence in Europe, which provoked the French Revolution.

THE SECOND LUNAR CLOSE is the year A.D. 1776, the date of

Digitized by Google

the American declaration of independence, which was indirectly one of the causes of the French Revolution ; and the other two lunar closes are, as will be recognised at a glance, leading crises of that great Revolution itself.

But what has the French Revolution to do with Jewish emancipation, or the cleansing of the sanctuary ?

Much every way. Louis XVI. sent his French troops under Lafayette to assist the United States in their struggle for freedom and independence. When that struggle was crowned with success, these French officers and troops returned to France, carrying with them seed-germs of republican ideas, which, while they developed beneficently and gloriously in the virgin soil of a new and unpeopled continent, produced, on the contrary, in the exhausted soil and amid the old world institutions of Catholic Christendom a poisonous and destructive harvest. The force engendered a few years later on by these revolutionary notions induced the destructive volcanic action which shook into ruins the governments and institutions of Europe, and desolated all its countries with sanguinary and long-continued wars. In the midst of the great upheaving and dislocation of society which resulted, *Israel obtained her emancipation.* The fetters fell everywhere from the limbs of the long oppressed and long suffering Jew, and before the revolutionary earthquake subsided he was no longer the slave of the Gentile, but a free man among his fellows. The new-born United States were the first nation to embody the principle of Jewish equality before the law in the fundamental statutes of their new constitution of 1776.

Nor was this all. The fearful judgments which in these years crushed all the Catholic nations of Christendom, had two other unlooked-for and most important results. They established the military and maritime supremacy and the vast colonial empire of Great Britain, which went into the revolutionary wars a dwarf and emerged from them a giant; and they established also a new power in Europe, the mighty military empire of Russia, which now rules a non-Catholic empire extending from the walls of China to the Baltic Sea, and from the Arctic Ocean to the Himalayan Mountains. This is *the* power to which has been allotted the task of

Digitized by Google

overthrowing Mohammedan rule in Europe and Asia; its greatness has ever since grown exceedingly, year by year, and it has yet a most momentous part to play in the near future. Russia is the great foe of Islam, and Britain is the great friend of the Jews, because the great protector of the oppressed; both are strongly anti-Catholic, and Russia is in addition strongly anti-Mohammedan. The French Revolution movement, which unintentionally placed these two nations in the forefront of the family of European peoples, must needs be regarded, therefore, as *an all-important one* in connexion with the fall of the Papal and Mohammedan apostasies, and in the contemporaneous liberation of the Jews and cleansing of their sanctuary. Though called the French Revolution, because it happened to originate in France, that great movement really ran on into a European one, the duration of which was not limited between the convocation of the states-general and the entry of the allies into Paris, but reaches back to the middle of the eighteenth century for its commencement, and continues as to its consequences to this day.

THE THIRD LUNAR CLOSE A.D. 1789, which terminated twenty-three centuries from the Nehemiah starting-point, was in the West the year of the destruction of the Bastile in Paris, marking the actual outbreak of the French Revolution; and in the East, that of a most disastrous war between Turkey and the Empress Catherine of Russia in alliance with Joseph of Austria,—a war which resulted in a decided advance in the downfall of the Porte.

THE FOURTH LUNAR CLOSE, A.D. 1808, witnessed the foundation of the first society for the evangelization of the Jews. And the FIFTH, 1825, fell in the midst of the Greek War of Independence, and coincides with the point at which the Porte, "tired and terrified with a struggle in which its armies had been swallowed up during three successive years without any result,"[1] was driven to call in the aid of Egypt, a step which afterwards led to its loss of that country also.

THE SIXTH AND LAST LUNAR CLOSE, 1838, was marked by the outbreak of the Egyptian insurrection of Mehemet Ali, which led to the independence of Egypt.

[1] "Turkey, Old and New," p. 362. Menzies.

Digitized by Google

THE SIX SOLAR CLOSES of the period of twenty-three centuries from the six starting-points of the restoration era are the years A.D. 1821, 1844, 1857, and 1876 in the *past*, and 1893 and 1906 in the *future*. All the four first, as we have previously shown, brought most marked crises in the fall of Turkey, and ought consequently to be regarded as so many stages in the cleansing of the sanctuary.

A.D. 1821 was the year of that insurrection in Greece which ended in its total liberation a little later on. Greece had always been regarded by the Porte as one of its most important and valuable provinces, and vehemently did it strive to avert Greek independence.

At the news of the outbreak in the Morea, the ferocity and fanaticism of the Ottomans were aroused, and the Greeks in Constantinople were mercilessly massacred, the churches pillaged, the patriarch hanged at the door of his own palace, while three archbishops, eighty bishops, and numbers of other members of the synod shared the same fate. In Thrace, Macedonia, Thessaly, and all parts of the empire, peaceable and defenceless Greeks were pillaged and slain, and the cruelties and enormities perpetrated roused all their fellow-countrymen at home to desperation. One wealthy man alone contributed five millions towards the cost of the war.[1] The insurrection made progress; the Turks were beaten; and in their fierce indignation they committed a suicidal act in commanding the massacre of the male population of the island of Scio. Ten thousand Asiatic Moslems landed on its shores, and in a brief time, out of one hundred thousand inhabitants, only nine hundred remained! This action raised a cry of horror throughout Europe, and the maddened Greeks took a startling vengeance. They set fire to the Turkish fleet, half of which was destroyed, beat enormous armies of Turkish soldiers, and continued to struggle till they gained their complete liberation from the Turkish yoke.

Of the year 1844 we have before spoken, as it is indicated by other periods than the one we are now considering. This year brought no military defeat, but one of a far more important character, both as marking the loss of the indepen-

[1] "Turkey Old and New," p. 359. Menzies.

Digitized by Google

dence of the Porte, and the liberation of its Jewish and Christian subjects. It was the year in which the united powers of Europe obliged the Turkish Government to cease the practice of execution for apostasy; in other words, to cease persecuting on religious grounds. This, being contrary to the fundamental principles of Mohammedanism, would never have been conceded, until all power of resistance had failed. The grand vizier, in a correspondence with the English Government on this subject, says: "The laws of the Koran are inexorable as regards any Mussulman who is convicted of having renounced his faith. No consideration can produce a commutation of the capital punishment to which the law condemns him without mercy." The only reply was: "Her Majesty's Government *require* the Porte to abandon once for all so revolting a principle. If the Porte has any regard for the friendship of England, it must renounce absolutely and without equivocation the barbarous practice which has called forth the remonstrance now addressed to it." Russia wrote with similar distinctness, "We positively expect no longer to witness executions which excite the indignation of all Christendom." Even after similar appeals from all the great powers the Porte would have put them off with the statement that "the law did not admit of any change," but the ambassadors would not receive it. At last a concession was obtained with the greatest difficulty, and only by the firmest resolution, and the following official declaration was published: "The Sublime Porte engages to take effectual measures to prevent henceforward the execution and putting to death of the Christian who is an apostate. Henceforward neither shall Christianity be insulted in my dominions, nor shall Christians be in any way persecuted for their religion."

This decree was published in the 1260th year of the Hegira. It is dated March 21st, 1844. This date is the first of Nisan in the Jewish year, and is exactly to a day twenty-three centuries from the first of Nisan, B.C. 457, the day on which Ezra states that he left Babylon in compliance with the decree given in the seventh year of the reign of Artaxerxes.

Of the year 1856–7 we have spoken fully elsewhere; it

Digitized by Google

marked the close of the Crimean war, and the adoption of the EUROPEAN CONCERT ON THE EASTERN QUESTION, by which the five great powers undertook conjointly to regulate the dissolution of the Ottoman empire—the date of the Treaty of Paris.

And lastly, the year 1876 witnessed, as we know, the commencement of the recent Russo-Turkish war, the result of which would have been the total overthrow of the Ottoman empire but for the action of England. By the Conference of Berlin the larger part of the remaining portion of the Turkish dominions in Europe was rendered independent of the Porte, and England established a protectorate over the Asiatic dominions of the sultan. Of the last two solar closes, A.D. 1893 and 1906, both still future dates, we will speak later on.

It is evident that the 2,300 years of the sanctuary cycle indicate, not so much a closing year as a closing era, not so much a point of time as a process. Of a garden it might be said, "Let it lie fallow for the winter months; then shall it be cleansed and cropped." In the early weeks of March there might be few signs that the prediction would be fulfilled, though labourers might be digging and levelling here and there. An observer might say, "Spring has come, but the garden is not cleansed and cropped." Gradually, however, appearances change; plot after plot is brought into order and duly sown. Presently the seeds begin to spring, and by the end of May the garden is clad in verdure, it is cleansed and stocked. Thus the expression, "unto 2,300 years, then shall the sanctuary be cleansed," seems to mean, then shall the cleansing process begin, not then shall it come to an end. Jewish restoration is going on gradually and by stages, as Jewish decline and fall did 2,520 years ago, and as the former Persian restoration did 2,300 years ago. The process is naturally a slow one. The once mighty Ottoman empire could not be overthrown in a year, nor in a decade, nor in a century. Empires that spring up gourd-like in a night may perish in a night, as did the empire of Napoleon III.; but in the case of mighty and extended ones, consolidated by powerful bonds and ages of duration, decay is as slow as growth. The oak, that is a century in attaining

Digitized by Google

maturity, and lives for many centuries, takes centuries also to perish.

The terminal years of this great period, if we include its lunar measures, take us back to the middle of last century; and if we confine our attention to its principal solar closes, to the time that has elapsed since 1821, covering thus the events in Jewish, Mohammedan, and Syrian history which have occurred during the last sixty-five years. They have not brought the cleansing of the sanctuary. They have brought many stages leading to that great result; they have brought it perceptibly nearer; they have shown the means by which it is likely to be at last accomplished—the gradual rise of the Jews, and the gradual decadence of the Ottomans; they have led us to a point at which the climax of the liberation of Syria and the restoration of Israel may be said to have come within the range of practical politics: but they have not brought the end. We are still some few years distant from the close of the period when, according to prophecy, that end is to come.

We have seen reason at a previous stage of our examination of these prophetic periods, to anticipate that the very proximate year 1889 will see Jerusalem liberated from Moslem tyranny. This sanctuary cycle points us on to two other future dates, 1893 and 1906. What events are these years likely to bring? We do not venture even to suggest, but may remark that the overthrow of Ottoman rule in Syria, whenever it occurs, may, or may not, mark the close of "the times of the Gentiles." It is quite possible, and perhaps we may say probable, that when the Turks first cease to exercise direct control in Palestine, the country will be placed under a protectorate, either a joint protectorate of the western nations, or possibly, as less difficult to work, under the protectorate of one or two of them, or even of England only, as it already has a sort of protectorate in these regions through the Anglo-Turkish convention about Cyprus. In that case Turkish rule would be succeeded by another Gentile power; Jerusalem would still be under Gentile rule, showing that the "times of the Gentiles" were still running their course. Such rule might be brief, and autonomy might, after a few years, be granted to the people

Digitized by Google

of the land under a Jewish governor, and so it might continue to the end of the age. There seems to be no distinct revelation on this point in Scripture prophecy, though it is clear, from the twelfth of Zechariah, that there will be governors of Judæa in Jerusalem at the final crisis, and that Israel's God will defend them and their city against the confederation of hostile allies who will apparently be besieging Jerusalem at the time of the glorious advent of Christ with His saints.

It is, however, useless to speculate as to the detail of future events, even when the occurrence of the events themselves is distinctly predicted, and is near at hand. We may know that certain things will happen, because the Scriptures distinctly predict them, and we may know when they will happen, because the time of their occurrence has been revealed; but we may yet be entirely ignorant as to how they will be brought about, because the *mode* has *not* been revealed. That the sanctuary will be cleansed, or Syria freed from Moslem domination, at the close of this cycle of twenty-three centuries, there seems little room to doubt; but how the deliverance will be effected, or with what immediate results, it is not for us or for any one to say: time will declare. The ultimate result is clear: the rapid restoration of a considerable number of the Jewish people to the land of their fathers, where they will repent and be converted, led to say, "Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord!" and be thus prepared to welcome their long-rejected King, Messiah.

"Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem. And . . . I will make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people. . . . I will smite every horse with astonishment, and his rider with madness. . . . The Lord shall save the tents of Judah first, . . . and shall defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and . . . destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem. . . Then shall the Lord go forth, and fight against those nations, as when He fought in the day of battle. And *His feet shall stand in that day upon the Mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east.* . . . *The Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with Thee.* . . . And the Lord shall be King over all the earth: in that day shall there be one Lord, and His name one" (Zech. xii. 2 to xiv. 9).

Digitized by Google

What the interval between the cleansing of the sanctuary and this final and glorious crisis is likely to be, we must learn from the chronology of the times of the Gentiles. This cycle of twenty-three centuries from the Persian restoration era leads no further than the deliverance of the Holy Land from Gentile rule.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

THE CONNEXION BETWEEN THE SANCTUARY CYCLE AND THE "SEVENTY WEEKS," OR 490 YEARS, EXTENDING FROM THE PERSIAN RESTORATION ERA TO THE ERA OF "MESSIAH THE PRINCE."

BEFORE passing from the consideration of this sanctuary cycle, we must indicate some links of connexion between it and the celebrated prophecy of seventy weeks, which have, we believe, never before been pointed out. They possess, however, the highest interest, both as confirming the view that chronological prophecy deals with eras rather than with years, and as showing that there is a fulness and an exactitude of chronological prediction in this prophecy of the "seventy weeks" which is not generally recognised, making its inspiration more evident than ever. The facts to which we are about to call attention confirm also, if confirmation be needed, the importance of the six dates which we have indicated as starting-points of the sanctuary cycle.

We mentioned above that two of the starting-points of the twenty-three centuries of the sanctuary cycle (Dan. viii.) are the same as those of the seventy weeks (Dan. ix.). The following diagram shows that the chronological correspondence between the two prophecies is more full and exact than this. The prophecy of the sanctuary cycle indicates, as we have seen, four other starting-points in addition to the decrees of Artaxerxes; and we have considered the various years of close as measured from all six.

If now we take all these six dates as starting-points for the seventy weeks to "Messiah the Prince," what do we find? That not only do the dates of the two decrees of Ar-

Digitized by Google

taxerxes lead up, as is generally recognised, to the ministry and death of Christ, but that the analogy extends farther and is even more complete, affording a fresh proof that there is more in these sacred predictions than lies on the surface, more than is actually stated, and that they are adapted to history and to astronomy, in a way that is marvellous in its delicate complexity, and Divine in its absolute accuracy.

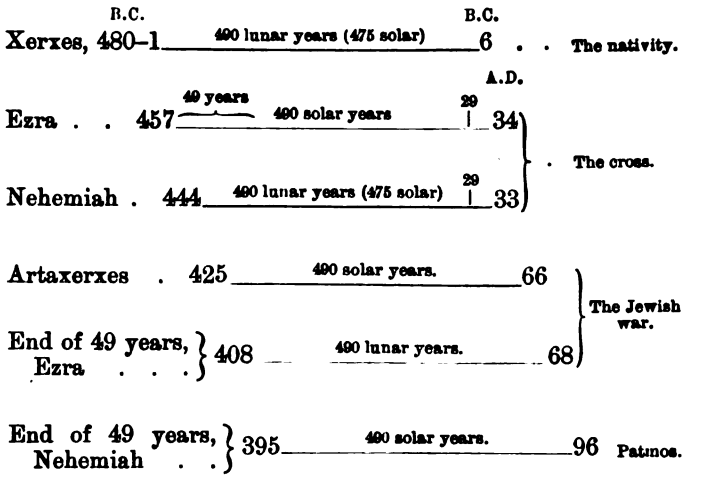
The prophecy of the seventy weeks was given at the close of the Babylonish captivity of seventy years. It announced that a week of such captivity periods, or seventy weeks of years, that is 490 years, would elapse to "Messiah the Prince." It foretold, besides, certain events which would follow the cutting off of Messiah, the fall of Jerusalem and the desolation of Judæa; but to these latter events it did not attach any chronological statement, it did not seem to intimate when they would take place, further than that they would follow the cutting off of Messiah. Moreover, the prophecy did not indicate any date for the birth of Messiah, but only for that of His "cutting off," or death; that supreme event, which was to make reconciliation for iniquity and bring in everlasting righteousness, is distinctly assigned to the middle of the last week; and, as we have shown,[1] it actually occurred exactly $69\frac{1}{2}$ weeks of years, or $486\frac{1}{2}$ lunar years, from the Nehemiah date, B.C. 444.

The six different commencing dates to which we have been led by the study of the sanctuary cycle extend, it will be observed, over an interval of eighty-five years in the fifth century before Christ. Now the following diagram shows that the corresponding terminal period, after the lapse of seventy weeks, or 490 years, included, not only the death of "Messiah the Prince," doubly indicated both by lunar and solar measures, but also the date of His birth,[2] and that of the Jewish war which led to the siege of Jerusalem and the desolation of the land, and that of the close of the Messianic and apostolic era, and of the canon of Scripture.

[1] p. 54.

[2] We have elsewhere demonstrated that the most probable date of the nativity is B.C. 6, and not, as commonly supposed, B.C. 4. See "Approaching End of the Age," p. 519.

Digitized by Google



Hence this wonderful period of seventy weeks did actually measure, from the different *termini a quo* in the Persian restoration era, the interval—

1. To the birth of the Babe of Bethlehem;

2. To the very day when Christ our Passover was sacrificed for us;

3. To that terrible Roman war, which fulfilled the predictions of the judgment which should fall on the Jews in consequence of their rejection of Messiah. "The people of the prince that shall come"—that is, the Roman soldiery of Titus—"shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. . . . Even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate." The Jewish war began in May, A.D. 66, and it terminated in A.D. 70, with the fall of Jerusalem and the burning of the temple.

4. To the close of the reign of the Roman emperor Domitian, which was also the close of the Messianic era—the date of the last appearance of Christ in glory to one of His apostles, the date of the giving of the apocalyptic visions to the last of the apostles, and thus of the close of the New Testament and of the entire canon of Scripture.

Digitized by Google

That the year A.D. 95–6 is the true date of these events is capable of most satisfactory proof. Domitian reigned from A.D. 81 to A.D. 96. It was in the year previous to his death that his severe persecution of the Christians took place, in the course of which he banished the Apostle John to Patmos. The fact is expressly asserted by almost contemporary testimony; for Irenæus, the disciple of Polycarp, who was himself the disciple of John, writing shortly after this date, says that the visions of the Apocalypse "were seen no very long time ago, but almost in our age, towards the end of the reign of Domitian."[1]

"The varied historical evidence which has been inquired into all concurs to confirm *the date originally and expressly assigned by Irenæus to the Apocalypse, as seen and written at the close of the reign of Domitian; that is, near the end of the year* 95 *or beginning of* 96. Accordingly, the great majority of the most approved ecclesiastical historians and Biblical critics, alike Roman Catholic and Protestant, French, German, and English,—writers who have had no bias on the point in question, one way or the other, from any particular cherished theory of apocalyptic interpretation; for example, Dupin, Bossuet, Tillemont, Le Clerc, Turretin, Spanheim, Basnage, Lampe, Mosheim, Mill, Whitby, Lardner, Milner, Tomline, Burton, etc., etc.,—have alike adopted it; to whom I am happy to add the living names of the German ecclesiastical historian Gieseler, and of our own learned chronologist, Mr. Clinton. We may, I am persuaded, depend on its correctness with an unhesitating and implicit confidence as on the truth of almost any of the lesser facts recorded in history. And I must say it seems to me most surprising that respectable and learned commentators should have spent their time and labour in building up apocalyptic expositions that rest wholly and only on the sandy foundation of an earlier Neronic date."—*Elliott:* "*Horæ Apocalypticæ*," vol. i., pp. 45, 46.

Thus, not only was the cutting off of Messiah the Prince separated by 490 years to a day from the Nehemiah decree "to restore and to build Jerusalem," but the *whole* Messianic era—from the birth of Christ, B.C. 6, to His last appearance

[1] Γραφων γε τοι ὁ Ειρηναιος περι της ψηφου της κατα τον Αντιχριστον προσηγοριας φερομενης, εν τῃ Ιωαννου λεγομενῃ Αποκαλυψει, αυταις συλλαβαις εν πεμπτῳ των προς τας αιρεσεις ταυτα περι του Ιωαννου φησιν. Ει δε εδει αναφανδον εν τῳ νυν καιρῳ κηρυττεσθαι τούνομα αυτου, δι εκεινου αν ερρεθη του και την Αποκαλυψιν ἑωρακοτος· ουδε γαρ προ πολλου χρονου ἑωραθη, αλλα σχεδον επι της ἡμετερας γενεας, προς τῳ τελει της Δομετιανου αρχης.—EUSEB., H. E. iii. 18.

Digitized by Google

to John in Patmos in A.D. 95—was similarly separated from the *whole* Persian restoration era. The different years of crisis which form starting-points in this latter are answered by events of supreme importance in the Messianic era; and the close of the Old Testament history is separated by "seventy weeks" from the close of the New.

This hidden yet exact analogy is all the more interesting because the clue to it is found, not in the prophecy of the seventy weeks, but in that of the cleansing of the sanctuary.

Now when we remember that the former prediction was given in the first year of Darius, that is to say, 600 years before the closing event which it indicates, the destruction of Jerusalem by Titus; when we note that it does not profess to give its chronological point at all,—its exactitude and comprehensiveness are surely a new and eloquent testimony to the Divine inspiration of the book of Daniel, and a fresh encouragement closely to scan and deeply to ponder the sacred chronological predictions of Scripture.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV.

THE FINAL "TIME," AND THE ANGEL'S OATH.

We must close this chronological investigation with a brief consideration of one more period mentioned, not in the book of Daniel, but in "the Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to Him, to show unto His servants things which must shortly come to pass."

The greater part of the events predicted in the Apocalypse belong to the second half of the great week of prophecy. The "time, times, and a half" of Daniel reappear in different connexions, measuring various though related episodes in the history of the true Church and of the Papal apostasy. There appears also in this book *a new period;* one much briefer than any mentioned in Daniel, and especially interesting as commencing in comparatively recent days. We have considered the period of "*seven* times," and the oft-repeated "*three and a half* times"; but this period consists of only *one* "time," *one* year of years, 360 years; *it is the last* "*time*" of the seven, separated from all the rest. It is connected, by contrast, in a very interesting way, with one of the periods in Daniel, as will be perceived by a comparison of the two following passages.

In answer to the question, "How long shall it be to the end of these wonders?" we read in Daniel xii. 7: "And I heard the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and sware by him that liveth for ever that it shall be for *a time, times, and a half;* and when He shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these things shall be finished." In Revelation x. we read: "And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon

Digitized by Google

his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire: . . . and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth, and . . . lifted up his hand to heaven, and sware by Him that liveth for ever and ever, . . . *that there should be 'a time' no longer:* [1] but in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as He hath declared to His servants the prophets."

It is evident that THE SPEAKER in both these cases is the same, and no other than the Son of God Himself. In both cases the SUBJECT of the revelation is the same—the length of time to elapse before the end. In both cases the solemn statements on this point are confirmed by an OATH; and these are the only two cases in which such confirmation of the sacred times is given. In both cases the END is the same, though expressed in different words in the two prophecies. The closing point is defined in Daniel as "when He shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people"; that is, when the dispersion of the Jewish nation under Divine judgment shall reach its termination. It is defined in Revelation by the expression, "the mystery of God shall be finished." The mystery of God is the rejection of the

[1] The correct reading of the words, "that there shall be time no longer," is, "that there shall not be yet *a time*." As numerous mundane events are predicted in the context to take place subsequently, it is clear the meaning cannot be that time should at that point give way to eternity. *It is a chronological prediction of a definite character.* The connexion of the two passages thus becomes clear. To Daniel it is announced that the events which had just been predicted would occupy "time, times, and a half," and that *then* the restoration of Israel would take place; to John it is announced, after six of the trumpets of judgment had been blown, and had failed to bring a guilty world to repentance, *that not one single "time" remained to expire* before the "seven times"—"the times of the Gentiles, the time of Israel's rejection—should close, and the mystery of God be finished. "Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, the hearts of the sons of men are fully set in them to do evil." The long delay of judgment on the apostate Church required this additional reminder that the Lord was not slack concerning His promise, but only long-suffering. The judgment was approaching all the time, and at the period indicated would be comparatively close at hand.

Digitized by Google

Jews and the calling of the Gentiles.[1] Both expressions point therefore to *the close* of "the times of the Gentiles"; and the statement of the angel is that when the point in history symbolised by this vision was reached, the end would then be within a *single* "time."

Now interpreters of the historic school are agreed that the vision in connexion with which this chronological prediction occurs (Rev. x. and xi.) is a vision symbolising the great Protestant Reformation movement in the sixteenth century. This is not the place to present the evidence of the truth of this interpretation; we take it for granted here, simply remarking that it is gathered from its position in the series of visions, between the sixth and seventh trumpets, as well as from its own marked and unmistakable symbols. They represent a notable intervention of Christ Himself on behalf of His true Church at the height and climax of the great apostasy; a second giving of the Scriptures to the world; and a second commission to His servants to evangelize all nations—the establishment and outward organization of a reformed Church, the resurrection to life and elevation to political power of the faithful witnessing Churches who had been destroyed by Papal tyranny. It includes therefore all the phases of the Reformation: the rediscovery by Luther and by others of the great doctrines of the Christian faith; their testimony to Christ and to the fulness of His grace and truth, and their testimony against antichrist and the fulness of his assumptions and corruptions; their *evangelistic* work and their *Protestant* work. It includes also the final establishment of Protestantism; and the severance of the reformed

[1] This is gathered from Romans xi. and Ephesians iii., where the rejection of the Jews and the calling of the Gentiles is described as the mystery "which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto His holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; that the Gentiles should be fellow heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of His promise in Christ by the gospel." That an age of gospel grace to the Gentile world was to intervene between Israel's rejection and Israel's restoration was a fact not understood by the Jews, and first plainly proclaimed in the ministry of the Apostle Paul. When the close of this Gentile age arrives, and the restoration of Israel to her ancient position on earth takes place, then this "mystery of God" will be finished.

Digitized by Google

nations from Latin Christendom. The period covered lies in the earlier part of the sixteenth century, one of the most remarkable centuries in human history, and the most momentous, *since* the Christian era, in the history of the world's redemption.

The Reformation movement, from which this final "time" of prophecy is to be measured, is commonly regarded as extending from A.D. 1517 to A.D. 1555; that is, from the year when Luther first openly attacked the Papacy by posting on the doors of the church in Wittenberg his celebrated theses, to the year of that PEACE OF AUGSBURG, which recognised the civil and religious rights of the Protestants of Germany and their complete independence of the popes.

But the vision seems to include an earlier incident than the first of these. The reformers had to *receive* the truth before they could proclaim it; the eating of the little book had to precede the prophesying to all nations. Luther's conversion, and his reception of the doctrine of justification by faith, was in reality the source and first incident of the Reformation. His spiritual enlightenment extended over several years, but the "decisive epoch in the inward life of Luther" would seem to have been when for the third time the words, "The just shall live by faith," resounded in his soul as he was creeping on his knees up Pilate's Staircase at Rome, in the year 1510.[1] It was at this time also that he was *appointed a preacher*, and actually entered on his reformation of the Church by teaching the true gospel doctrines that had been so long corrupted. It would seem therefore as if the opening events of this vision dated back at least to the year 1510; and as it also *includes* the Papal war against the faithful witnesses, up to the point of their elevation to the political heaven, or to the establishment of Protestantism —up to the point at which the accompanying earthquake, or revolution in Papal Europe, severed "the tenth part" from the "city," or one of the ten kingdoms from Latin Christendom, it seems proper to consider the era as extending at any rate to 1563, when the Reformation was completed in England, and when the anti-Reformation Council of Trent closed its sittings. The fifty-three years from A.D. 1510 to A.D. 1563

[1] MERLE D'AUBIGNÉ: "History of the Reformation," vol. i., p. 209.

Digitized by Google

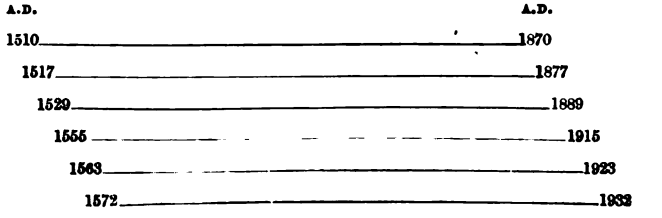
included *all* the main stages of the Reformation movement. The enlightenment and conversion of the great reformer himself; the publication of the Greek Testament of Erasmus in 1516, of Luther's theses at Wittenberg in 1517, and of his treatise "On the Babylonian Captivity of the Church"; together with his burning of the Papal bull of excommunication in 1520; followed the next year by the Diet of Worms and Luther's captivity in the Wartburg, where his German translation of the Bible was made; the presentation of the celebrated protest (from which the reformers gained the name of Protestants) to the Diet of Spires in 1529; the Confession of Augsburg in 1530, and the formation in the following year of the Protestant League of Smalcald for mutual defence against Popish attacks; the publication of Luther's Bible in 1534, with the abolition of Papal supremacy in England in the same year; the national establishment of the Protestant Church in Saxony in 1539, the religious Peace of Augsburg in 1555, and in addition the various persecutions of Protestants all over Europe; the numerous sessions of the Council of Trent; the foundation and early activities of the order of the Jesuits and of the inquisition; down to the close of the Council of Trent, by which council *Rome's utter refusal of all reform* was published and proclaimed in the most definite and formal manner.

Among all these critical dates, and others which we might indicate, are we to select any one as *the* starting-point of this final "time"? Probably not. Probably here, as in all the other cases we have studied, it is to an era rather than to a year that the angelic oath refers. That era lies from A.D. 1510 to A.D. 1563, and the corresponding era at the close of a full "time" lies between the years 1870 and 1923. It reaches therefore to the notable era in which other prophetic periods also expire—from the year of the fall of the temporal power of the papacy—to the yet future date, 1923, to which we have been pointed before by several previously considered prophetic periods. *This is surely strong confirmation of the entire system.* From events of a character widely different to any we have noted previously,—from comparatively recent days,—we measure this brief period; and, lo! it extends to *the very same years indicated as terminal* by long periods of

Digitized by Google

twenty-five centuries, running back to the far away ages of ancient history.

The close of the Reformation movement proper is given in chronological works as the "Peace of Augsburg," 1555. The final "time" from that date runs out in 1915, the first terminal year indicated by the "seven times" solar from Nebuchadnezzar's conquest of Jehoiakim; while, measured from the close of the Council of Trent, it expires in 1923, as do the "seven times" measured from the *principal* date of the captivity era, the fall of Jehoiachin. *No date in the actual Reformation era properly so called leads us further than this;* and as the angelic oath so solemnly declares that "there shall *not* be yet a time," we seem forbidden to expect that the mystery of God will extend *beyond* this date, and we are not authorized to assume that it will extend *up to* this date. This fact confirms the impression created by others which we have previously indicated, that the close of "seven times" from the first and second crises of Nebuchadnezzar's overthrow of Judah indicates crises of *greater* importance than the close of the period as measured from the third and final crisis, the fall of Zedekiah. Yet we may note in passing that the "time" measured from the massacre of Saint Bartholomew leads to 1932, the end of "seven times" as measured from Zedekiah. That massacre, however, was an incident, *not* of the Reformation era, but of the period which extended from the Peace of Augsburg to the Peace of Westphalia in 1648, and even up to the Peace of Ryswick in 1697, and must be regarded as an entirely distinct episode from the Reformation itself. The following diagram presents a conspectus of the final "time," as measured from *these* principal dates of the Reformation era.



Digitized by Google

The year 1889 will be a full "time" from the presentation of THE PROTEST which has given their name to the reformed Churches, a protest by which they nailed to the mast their glorious colours, "the Bible, the whole Bible, and nothing but the Bible" (April 20th, 1529). The Lutheran Confession of Faith was presented to the Diet of Augsburg in the following year, and the "Confession of Augsburg" was formulated in 1532, when the Emperor Charles V. was obliged to grant a formal decree of toleration to the Protestants. It was a pregnant and portentous era, and events followed each other in rapid succession. It must be regarded as a whole, as *the half century in which the spiritual Israel returned in detachments from her Babylonish captivity.*

And it is interesting to note that just as there was associated with the earlier return the gift of the chronological prophecy of the "seventy weeks," to measure the interval to the *first* advent, so is there associated with this Reformation vision a similar prophecy measuring the interval to the end of "the mystery of God," at the *second* advent,—to the end of "the times of the Gentiles,"—the establishment of the manifested and glorious kingdom of God.

We have already, since 1870, passed seventeen years of the terminal fifty of this final "time," which according to the prophecy is not destined to run its full course.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV.

THE FUTURE DATES OF THIS SERIES.

Up to this point of our investigation we have been dealing exclusively with past events and past dates; that is, with fulfilled prophecy. This should be distinctly observed. *We have been studying facts, not theories.* In our investigation of the dates of the "seven times" and of the sanctuary cycle, we reserved for consideration in a separate group all those which are still future. Here therefore we must cross *the line that divides the fulfilled from the unfulfilled;* and here, losing the clear light of history, we have to complete our survey of this series of prophetic dates, guided for the most part by the comparatively dim and doubtful light of analogy. We do not, be it observed, plunge into the total obscurity which leaves no room for anything but baseless speculation; there are still *facts* for our consideration, facts as to the dates of the expiration of the prophetic times, and facts as to the predictions of the word of God concerning the closing events of this dispensation. We shall seek to confine ourselves chiefly to a statement of these *facts*, and avoid as far as possible all unwarrantable speculation as to their significance.

The dates we have now to consider are the few last of the long series, numbering many score, and extending back over eighteen centuries, which we have studied in the foregoing pages. All the previous dates in this series have brought about stages in certain definite historical movements, and the events which prophecy attaches to these future dates are mainly final stages of the same movements. The analogy of the past, from which we may judge of the future, is therefore a broad and strong one, as regards the nearer dates; and the word of prophecy throws a flood of light upon the closing events of this dispensation, which would seem to be indicated

Digitized by Google

by the more remote ones. The detailed and exact order of those events is to some extent doubtful, but their nature is indisputable. When the "times of the Gentiles" close, the millennial age begins, and at the junction of these two great ages lies the glad fruition of our "blessed hope," the second coming of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Daniel's grand prophetic outline of the future places this beyond dispute; the second advent of Christ in glory is there connected again and again with the termination of the fourth, or Roman empire, in its divided, ten-horned, Papal form. The stone cut out without hands falls upon the feet of the image, breaking them and the whole image to pieces, before it becomes a mountain and fills the whole earth. The Son of man comes with the clouds of heaven, and receives dominion and glory and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages should serve Him. At the advent of the Ancient of Days, the dominion of the persecuting horn is taken away, and "the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him."

Numerous prophecies, both in the Old and the New Testaments, treat of this solemn and glorious crisis, and of that which succeeds it. The 2,520 years of the "times of the Gentiles" extend from the fall of Judah's independence *up to this crisis*, from which dates a *new* chronological period—the thousand years of the millennial age. Now, not only have by far the greater number of the events foretold by Daniel and the prophets, and by our Lord and His apostles, as destined to intervene before His return, already taken place, but by very far the longer portion of the "times of the Gentiles" has, as we have seen, already elapsed. Measured on the lunar scale, and from the *earliest* date, the period expired 187 years ago, at the beginning of this era of the "time of the end"; and measured on the full solar scale, from the *latest* date in the captivity era, we are now within half a century of its final close. There is not therefore chronological room for any large number of future events of a critical character, nor are there many such on the scroll of

Digitized by Google

prophecy. The complete fall of "Babylon the Great," the entire removal of the Mohammedan power from Syria, and the restoration to a larger extent, and in a more corporate and national sense, of the Jews to their own land,—these seem to be the principal remaining events predicted in prophecy as destined to occur before the end of the "times of the Gentiles," "the end of the indignation" against Israel, and the advent of the manifest kingdom of God on earth.

Hence the future, *prior* to the second advent, is a question, not of new and different historic events, but simply of fresh stages in existing and progressing movements. How many more stages are there likely to be in the fall of Babylon? How many more in the fall of Islam? How many more in the restoration of Israel? This it is not for us to say; but we may point out that *only a few more dates are indicated* by the chronological prophecies we are considering; so that if the system we have sought to unfold be true and scriptural, the remaining crises cannot be numerous.

Five of the dates which remain are the full *solar* termini of the respective prophetic periods as measured from their *latest* starting-points in the captivity, restoration, and bisection eras. They extend to the *end* of the "time of the end" —to the *full* close of this closing era, to the *last* events of this Gentile age. Grouping them according to their astronomic and historic nature and connexion, they are as follows:

I. Two of the *calendar* termini from the two *last* Nebuchadnezzar starting-points of the captivity era—the years 1887 and 1898, which being only calendar are not likely to be of *great* importance.

II. The three full *solar* termini from all the three Nebuchadnezzar starting-points (that is, from the falls of Jehoiakim, Jehoiachin, and Zedekiah), the years 1917, 1923, and 1934, one of which is likely to be supremely important.

III. The two *solar* termini from the two *latest* starting-points of the sanctuary cycle, the years 1893 and 1906, likely to bring Eastern crises.

IV. The *lunar* closes of the *supplementary* periods of Daniel

Digitized by Google

xii., the added thirty and forty-five years—which, measured on the lunar scale from the Omar capture of Jerusalem, run out respectively in the years 1889 and 1933.

Arranged in *chronological* order, the dates we have named lie, two in this decade, two in the next, and the remaining five in the early part of next century. 1887, 1889, 1893, and 1898 in this century; 1906, 1915, 1917, 1923, and 1933–4 in the next century.

We are not about to attempt any prediction of the specific events which may be expected to occur in these years of crisis in the near future, but we may point out that analogy seems to warrant the assumption that the dates which remain will bring events *harmonious in character* with those which have been brought by *previous dates of the same series*. The series, for instance, which starts with the Zedekiah destruction of Jerusalem and the burning of the temple, and which has already led us in the bisection era to the Saracenic capture of the city and conquest of the land, and in this "time of the end" to the "Universal Israelite Alliance" and the European protectorate of Northern Syria in 1860, runs out in its extended form of 1,290 lunar years in the year 1889. That year is consequently likely to witness, not a Papal crisis in *western*, but a Mohammedan crisis in *eastern* Europe, or some further and marked stage of Jewish elevation and restoration, or possibly both. It is likely to carry forward another step the cleansing of the sanctuary. This is also the case with the dates 1893 and 1906, both of which are termini of the sanctuary cycle, and have to do with Palestine, not Rome.

On the other hand, the four still future years of the series which, starting from the Babylonian overthrow of Judah, have already led us to so many stages, first in the *rise* and subsequently in the *fall* of Rome Papal, seem likely to bring fresh crises *of a similar character*, or further stages in that fall of Babylon the Great, whose final judgment is to be the immediate precursor of the marriage of the Lamb. Especially *the three full solar termini* from the three latest Nebuchadnezzar starting-points of the captivity era, are likely to prove years of solemn and terrible crisis to "Babylon the Great," and of blessed liberation and uplifting to the people

Digitized by Google

of Israel, and to the true Church of God. The solar termini from earlier stages of the captivity era have already brought most momentous events, though only of the nature of preliminary stages. The solar terminus of the period of "seven times" from *Shalmaneser* brought the Papal overthrow connected with the French Revolution. The solar terminus of the same period from *Sennacherib* brought Napoleon's awful wars, including the retreat from Moscow, in which an army of half a million of men perished almost as tragically as did the hosts of the Assyrian monarch of old when the angel of death passed over them.

The solar terminus of "seven times" from the captivity of *Manasseh* brought the final fall of the temporal power of the Papacy; but from no one of the *Nebuchadnezzar* starting-points has the period yet run out on the full solar scale. The years in which it will do so are *the four closing ones of the series given above*—1915, 1917, 1923, and 1934.

The question as to what events are likely to be brought by these future dates is a deeply interesting one, which no reader who has intelligently followed us thus far can avoid pondering, as we have pondered it, but which no one who realizes as strongly as we do the utter folly of speculation will venture to answer dogmatically. When we glance back over the many stages of fulfilment which we have indicated in the past, we feel little difficulty in anticipating the nature of the crises which may be brought by the *nearer intervening dates*, though they afford but slender help when we attempt to conceive the close. What is likely to be the nature of the events of these earlier dates, the four in this century, and the first in next century? In answering this question we need to remember that the symbolic language of some prophecies, and the poetical imagery of others, are too often permitted to create expectations for which, in reality, they give no ground. The final fall of the anti-Christian Roman apostasy is predicted, as we before stated, to occur in two contrasted ways: the first, a gradual consuming; the second, a sudden destruction. The latter is to take place at Christ's coming, the former prior to that coming. The instrument of the latter is to be the brightness of His epiphany, the power and glory of His advent. The instruments of the

Digitized by Google

previous consumption are twofold: first, a *spiritual* movement; and, secondly, a *political* one. The spirit of God's mouth, or truth of Scripture, has been the one agency, and the hatred of the "ten horns" the other.

We have seen both these agencies at work. In the Reformation movement, and in all subsequent Protestant evangelistic movements, in the circulation of the Scripture and religious literature, we have seen the first, the spirit of God's mouth, undermining and destroying the vitality and power of the Papacy; and in the atheistic revolution born of the revulsion from degrading superstition and of hatred to the lying pretensions of the Papacy, we have seen the second —the kingdoms of modern Europe hating and destroying the Romish Church and Papal power, and liberating themselves through vehement revolutions and bloody wars from its yoke. These opposite agencies are probably destined to continue, each in its own way, the predicted consumption of the anti-Chrisitian apostasy, until the last stage of the great prophetic drama arrives, the supreme crisis for which apostles and prophets and martyrs have waited, and for which the Church has watched through many a century,— until the cry is heard, "Behold, the Bridegroom cometh: go ye out to meet Him." We ought to expect, then, at the earlier of these future dates only such events as have fallen out at the previous closes of the prophetic periods; nothing supernatural, nothing unprecedented, nothing that cannot be perfectly well accounted for by second causes, nothing that will irresistibly fix the attention of the world, or even of the Church—events of a certain definite character, that cannot be overlooked or misinterpreted by those who understand the counsels of God, but which will no more disturb the wicked or arouse men from their fatal dreams of peace and safety, than did the fall of the temporal power of the Papacy in 1870. We may expect, for instance, that ultramontanism may bring down on itself, during the next few decades, even more marked and disgraceful defeats than it has hitherto sustained; that the decadence of the Papal nations will, as time advances, become more and more conspicuous, and more sharply contrasted with the advance and prosperity of Protestant ones; that priestly encroach-

Digitized by Google

ments on the civil power will be less and less tolerated; that disestablishment and disendowment will be everywhere the order of the day; that *ecclesiastical* influence will wane, though true religion will increase on the one hand, and infidelity, on the other. We may expect a further dismemberment and final extinction of the Turkish power in Europe, and especially in Syria, and that probably very soon. We may expect Russia, "the king of the North," who is to figure so largely in the closing scenes, to become mightier and mightier, and to aim at possession of the Holy Land We may expect the Rabinowitch movement to grow, and similar movements to arise elsewhere, issuing in the reception of Christ by a considerable number of Jews, and in a preparation of heart in a still larger number to receive Him when He shall be revealed in glory. We may expect the *Juden-hatze*, which has been already so painfully conspicuous in central and southern Europe, to grow and increase, and perhaps to extend to other lands, until it lead to the voluntary exile of Jewish citizens from many countries; and we may expect that the exiles will gather in increasing numbers to Palestine.

That further and notable crises in these movements, already so far advanced, are likely to occur at the still future dates of this series, there seems little room to doubt. The light of analogy is here full and perfect; whoso is wise, and will observe the providential acts of God in the past, will understand the moral character of the events which may be anticipated between these days and the close. Their precise political nature is a matter of very secondary importance. If, for instance, in the past the idolatry and corruption of Catholic Christendom were at a certain point of time to be judged and punished by a fearful democratic revolution; if a modern Sennacherib was to be raised up to afflict the Papal nations of Europe with the scourge of war, it was comparatively unimportant that the revolution began in France, and the conqueror's name was Napoleon; the number and dates of his battles, and the details of his career are *little*, the episode as a whole is *much*. So, if now we know that worldly ecclesiastical systems, the baptized heathenism of modern Europe, the idolatrous and corrupt Papal system and

Digitized by Google

all Church systems which in their essential features resemble it,—if we know that all these are destined to decay and decrease in power, we do not need to discern beforehand the precise geographical or national features of the process, though it will be profoundly interesting to watch the playing out of the last acts of the great Papal drama, and to see again, as we have already seen so often in the past, the predictions of prophecy transforming themselves into the facts of history. If we know that Mohammedanism is to decay with increasing rapidity until the Ottoman empire falls to pieces, and its place in Europe and in Syria knows it no more, it little matters by what exact means the change is to be brought about. The wise will note each stage of the process and its date with exceeding interest, and will greet each one as it arrives as one greets an expected guest. But whether the next stage will come about by a Greek rising, or by some Armenian outbreak, or by some Russian aggression, it little matters. Prophetic students can possess their souls in patience, and calmly watch the unfoldings of Divine providence; they know beforehand what *the end* will be, and they know that God has never lacked *means* to accomplish His own purposes. Without pretending to predict a single stage in the process or a single incident in the drama, they foresee *the character* of the events to be expected, and can accurately anticipate the close, which must come in its due season.

This is true as regards the intermediate dates, while as regards the closing ones the case is somewhat different. We have watched the various acts of a long drama; the same figures have reappeared continually on the stage, their mutual relations have changed from time to time, and we expect still to see them in a few more final configurations: but then the curtain must fall on *them* for ever, and when next it rises we behold a glorious transformation scene. The Gentile ages have rolled away, and the Lion of the tribe of Judah reigns over a ransomed earth. The kingdoms of the image are gone, the kingdom of the mountain is come; the wild-beast empires are no more, but the Son of man and the saints have taken the kingdom. Babylon has fallen, Rome has vanished, Jerusalem shines resplendent. The sanctuary

Digitized by Google

is cleansed, and Israel's age-long exile is over. The martyrs are enthroned beside the great Martyr, who resisted unto blood, striving against sin; the millenial Sabbath has dawned, and Christ is King indeed, no longer in the hearts and lives of a little flock alone, but in all the earth, and for evermore.

We cannot love Christ's appearing, or long for the promised times of the restitution of all things, the glorious millenial Sabbath, without inquiring, "When shall these things be?" Nor can we, after the careful study of chronological prophecy in the light of history and astronomy, avoid the question, Which of the closing dates of this series is likely to bring the promised consummation? The inquiry is one of so interesting and important a character, that even if we were—from motives of cautious reverence, and from the desire to avoid all appearance of presumptuous speculation—to leave it aside, and close this investigation without any consideration of this supremely important point, our readers would none the less consider it each for himself. While therefore we almost shrink from dwelling on anything but the facts of past history and the statements of Bible prophecy, and while we are as unable as we are unwilling to attempt any indication of that day and that hour which no man knoweth, yet we dare not refuse, to those who have accompanied us so far in our study, any slight guidance and help which we can afford towards the formation of judicious opinion as regards the brief remainder of the "times of the Gentiles" which lie still in the future. We have no more trodden those closing stages than have our readers; we have no other means of forming correct and scriptural anticipations than have they: but in our long and careful study of the subject, we have noted some points which may have escaped their observation, unless here indicated, and we are especially anxious to guard others from a rash assumption that the *last* date indicated by prophecy must needs, according to this exposition of the subject, be that of the second advent. This is far from being the case. The last of the Nebuchadnezzar dates in the captivity era was *by no means the most important stage* in the fall of Judah; the previous one was far more so. The last Nehemiah date in the restoration era was of very inferior importance; the previous crises of

LIBRARY OF T
UNION
THEOLOGICAL SE
Digitized by Google

that era, the two central ones, having been the most momentous. Similarly the two central dates in the Messianic era, and *not* the closing one, marked the times of *its* supreme event; so that it may well remain an open question which of the four Nebuchadnezzar dates of the series we are considering is most likely to indicate the time of the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ, to establish the manifested kingdom of God on earth.

In considering this subject we must bear in mind the connexion in which these dates are given. They do not occur in the gospel of St. John, nor in the epistles of St. Paul, but in the prophecies of Daniel. Their object is to measure the duration of Gentile sovereignty in the earth up to the time of the restoration of Judah's throne—up to the time of the accession of the Son and Lord of David to the empire of the earth as God's King on His holy hill of Zion—up to the time when the heathen shall be given Him for His inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for His possession; when He shall reign in righteousness, and rule in judgment, and have dominion from sea to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth; when all kings shall fall down before Him, and all nations serve Him; when men shall be truly blessed in Him, and all generations call Him blessed. Up to this great public crisis of world-wide importance the "times of the Gentiles" extend. *They* have not primarily to do with the hope of the Church—with the coming of the Bridegroom to take to Himself His long-loved and blood-bought bride; but the second advent has to do with both, and in whatever connexion we view it, *that advent is one and the same event.* We are not of the number of those who make a *chronological* distinction between Christ's coming *for* His people and His coming *with* them, who teach that there will be a secret rapture of the Church first, and a public epiphany afterwards; we see no Scripture warrant for any such chronological distinction, though the *moral* distinction between the two aspects of the second advent is exceeding broad. Prophecy announces two advents only, *not three.* All along it has announced a first advent to suffer and to die, and a second to rule and reign; but of a third it makes no mention. Our Lord himself says that as the lightning

Digitized by Google

cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be; and He could hardly have used a stronger figure to imply suddenness and universality of recognition. The passage which describes the rapture of the Church speaks of a shout, and the voice of the archangel, and the trump of God; while another passage distinctly states that the event will take place in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye. While, therefore, we see no authority for making chronological distinctions between separate stages of the one *advent*, we see, on the other hand, abundant reason in Scripture to believe that *the millennial reign of Christ will not be fully established in a day or in a year.* It must be remembered that He comes, not peacefully to ascend a vacant and waiting throne, welcomed by a willing people, but to dispossess a mighty usurper and to overthrow a great rebellion, to right the accumulated wrongs of ages, and to introduce moral order and righteous government into the moral chaos created by the long domination of the prince of darkness, the god of this world, the deceiver and destroyer of men.

The second coming of Christ is associated with the work, the strange, sad work, of judgment—of the judgment of apostate Christendom, as well as with the rapture of His Church and the restoration of His ancient people Israel. Like the cloud of old, bright to the Jews and dark to the Egyptians, His advent in glory has a different aspect to the Church and to the world.

"Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; and to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, and to be admired in all them that believe . . . in that day."

There can be no stages or differing dates for an instantaneous advent, but there may be, and probably must be, *many stages* in the work of bringing into moral order a rebel world. Just as an interval elapses between the accession and coronation of an earthly monarch, so it may prove to be in

Digitized by Google

this case; and the last of the dates in the series we are considering *may* mark, not the accession of the King, but rather the glad coronation after all enemies are subdued and all rebellion put down. For some years after he crossed Jordan, Joshua was engaged in conquering Canaan, before he divided to the tribes their inheritance. David was king some time before he reigned over all Israel in Jerusalem. Solomon was on the throne some years before he dedicated his glorious temple. Human thought is of course all unable to fashion to itself any conception of the progress of events after the second advent, though reason as well as revelation compel us to believe that crises of stupendous importance to Israel and to the Gentile world must succeed it. The restoration of Israel appears to be incomplete before the advent, for some of its principal stages, as it is clearly stated in Scripture, will follow and not precede that event. To what point in their restoration these *final* dates lead, it is not for us even to suggest; we are only careful to guard against the assumption that the *last* of them must needs indicate the time of the advent. On the other hand, it does *seem* as if *one* of the principal closes of the "times of the Gentiles" was to bring that supreme event, and some gleams of light there are on this sacred subject which we may do well to note.[1]

The first nineteen or twenty years of Nebuchadnezzar, which witnessed all the stages of the fall of Judah before Babylon, were *the main and terminal years of the captivity era*. All that had gone before was only preparatory. The fall of the ten tribes before the Assyrian conquerors, and even the brief captivity of Manasseh, did not permanently shake the throne of Judah, or compromise the independent sovereignty of the house of David. The penumbra of the eclipse

[1] The mere suggestion of a date for this great event will startle some readers as presumptuous and wrong in view of our Lord's own assertion, "of that day and that hour knoweth no man," and of other similar statements of Scripture. We will answer the very natural objection which is based on such passages in a later chapter, as we could not do it here without interrupting the continuity of our argument in this place; meantime we hope that our remarks here will be read *without prejudice on this score*, and that any weight they may appear to have may be fairly recognised, according to the precept, "Prove all things, hold fast that which is good."

Digitized by Google

had indeed fallen on the moon, but not as yet the dark shadow. All through these years Babylon was steadily rising, and with the accession of Nebuchadnezzar, and his first campaign against Judah, reached its climax. In the eighth year of Nebuchadnezzar the throne of David fell, and the independent national existence of Judah ceased until the "times of the Gentiles" should be fulfilled. Hence those nineteen years especially form the important critical era; the rubicon of history was crossed at one or other of the crises in its course. It extended from B.C. 605 to B.C. 587, and the *principal* crisis in it was the fall of Jehoiachin in the eighth year of Nebuchadnezzar, B.C. 598.

The corresponding terminal years after the lapse of "seven times" in full solar measure, extend from A.D. 1915 to A.D. 1934. During these years then we may expect to see the full and final fall of the anti-typical "Babylon the Great"; and if that event is to answer chronologically to the culminating point of the typical Babylon, it seems probable that it will occur at one of the *central* dates A.D. 1917 or 1923. This Gentile age closes, as we have seen, with an era, and not with a date. Most of the critical years in that era are already passed; the first four or five of the still future dates seem to be connected with eastern and not western chronology, and are consequently scarcely likely to indicate anything connected with "Babylon the Great." For *its* fall we should consequently look to one of the four final dates, and for the reasons above stated apparently *not to the last*. Which of the remaining three stands pre-eminent above its fellows? It is impossible to say. One of them, A.D. 1923, has a distinct *historical* pre-eminence as corresponding chronologically to the Jehoiachin overthrow of B.C. 598. Of the four campaigns of Nebuchadnezzar against Judah this was by far the most fatal; indeed, we may say it was not *an* overthrow, but *the* overthrow of the kingdom of Judah; it was emphatically the breaking up of the nation and the fall of the independent sovereignty. It was moreover the date of the captivity of the prophet Ezekiel, the date from which he uniformly reckons the visions of the remarkable series that were granted to him in Babylon and by the river of Chebar, visions of the departing and returning glory;

Digitized by Google

and the question naturally occurs whether *its* answering year in this "time of the end" is not destined to witness the return of the glory and the re-establishment of the throne of Judah.

On the other hand, the *astronomical* features of this measurement of the "seven times" are *not* as remarkable as are those of two other measurements; that from the *first* of Nebuchadnezzar, and that from his *final* overthrow of Zedekiah. It was in the year B.C. 606 that Nebuchadnezzar first came against Judah, and carried Daniel and the Hebrew children among others captive. At this time he was acting on behalf of his father, and it was not until nearly two years later, B.C. 604, that he himself acceded to the throne. That year is consequently, properly speaking, the first of Nebuchadnezzar; and it was probably also the year in which he saw the vision of the great image, in connexion with which it was said to him, "Thou art this head of gold." This year has therefore some special claims to be considered as a *very principal starting-point* of the "times of the Gentiles." Measured from it the period runs out in A.D. 1917, and it is a very notable fact that a second most remarkable period also expires then. The 1,335 years of Daniel xii. 12, the *ne plus ultra* of prophetic chronology, which is evidently eastern in character, and consequently lunar in scale, measured back from this year 1917, lead up to the great Hegira era, the starting-point of the Mohammedan calendar, the birthday of the power which has for more than twelve centuries desolated Palestine and trodden down Jerusalem. The two periods lie thus:

B.C. 604	2,520 solar years	A.D. 1917
A.D. 622	1,335	A.D. 1917

The year 1917 is consequently *doubly* indicated as a final crisis date, in which the "seven times" run out, as measured from two opening events, both of which are clearly most critical in connexion with Israel, and whose dates are both absolutely certain and unquestionable. The 1,335 years' measure is, as we before pointed out, the half week, or 1,260 years, *plus* the additional seventy-five, which in the prophecy

Digitized by Google

is added in two sections of thirty and forty-five years. The passage in which these periods are announced gives no distinct indication of the events to which they lead, nor does it state whether lunar or solar years are intended. Prophecy indeed never does this; but the astronomic features of this period seem to indicate distinctly that lunar years are intended, for *seventy-five years is exactly the difference between seven times lunar and seven times solar*, and hence the addition of seventy-five years to the lunar measurement of the period makes it *equal* to the solar measurement. We have before stated that both Jewish and Mohammedan chronology are strictly lunar, and that chronological periods connected with eastern events seem to be always calculated on this scale, while those connected with western or Papal events are measured by the solar year.

The coincidence of the close of these two periods seems to answer a question which will occur to every reflective mind,—the question, Are the supplementary seventy-five years of the last verses of Daniel to be added to the latest *solar* terminus of the seven times? The answer is, They may be; it is possible: but it seems *extremely unlikely*, because of the astronomic fact just indicated.

The year in which these two periods—the one of over twenty-five centuries, and the other of over thirteen centuries—run out together is astronomically a notable one. We have before met, in the course of our investigation, years such as 1848, in which several prophetic periods meet; but they were only those from more incipient starting-points, and minus the seventy-five terminal years. Here, on the contrary, we have a *main* starting-point, the first of Nebuchadnezzar, as our terminus *a quo* for the one period, and the acknowledged commencing date of the great eastern apostasy, Mohammedanism, as that of the other; and we see that the latter in its extended form *meets* the former, and expires with it in the future year A.D. 1917.

Thoughtful readers will weigh the facts and draw their own conclusions, asking themselves, in the light of all the chronological facts mentioned in this work, *if* the year B.C. 604 witnessed the rise of the typical Babylon, and its supremacy over the typical Israel, what event is the corre-

Digitized by Google

sponding year in this time of the end *likely* to witness? The fall of the anti-typical Babylon—the extinction of Gentile supremacy on earth, and the restoration of Judah's throne in the person of Christ? The secret things belong to God. It is not for us to say. But there can be no question that those who live to see this year 1917 will have reached one of the most important, perhaps *the* most momentous, of these terminal years of crisis.

Yet we must also call attention to a further interesting fact connected with the last possible measure of this comprehensive and wonderful "seven times," that starting from the capture of Zedekiah and the burning of the temple in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar, and terminating in A.D. 1934. The termination of the "times of the Gentiles" meets at this point the 1,335 lunar years, dated from the *Omar capture of Jerusalem*—an event more momentous in its effects on Palestine and Jerusalem than the Hegira era of the commencement of Mohammedanism. No chronologic prophecy of Scripture indicates any date whatever beyond this year, as astronomic considerations forbid the thought that the supplementary seventy-five is to be added to these solar measures.

Here then we reach the close of this long chronological section,—of our endeavour like Daniel, to understand by books the number of the years whereof the Lord hath spoken; and here, like that holy prophet, when he was convinced that the end was close at hand, may we set our faces to the Lord our God, to seek by prayer and supplication with confession that He will fulfil His own word, and cause His face to shine once more upon His sanctuary, which has so long lain desolate, and on His people, who have so long been a reproach; that He will do as He has said, and speedily send Jesus Christ, whom the heaven must receive until the times of the restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of His holy prophets since the world began—that the times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord!

What is the result of our investigation? Is it not a strong confirmation of our blessed hope? Is it not a con-

Digitized by Google

viction that we may well lift up our heads, because our redemption draweth nigh? Slowly and cautiously we have descended the long stream of time, with its turnings and windings, and confluences with many tributaries. It has flowed through broad Assyrian and Babylonian channels, through Persian plains, amid Grecian islands and Roman provinces; it has rushed in revolutionary rapids, and broadened in lacustrine empires; it has divided itself into a tenfold delta, and is moving on to mingle its waters with those of the ocean of eternal ages. We have carefully noted each chronological waymark as we passed it by, and compared its position with that assigned to it in the chart of sacred prophecy. Already we have verified nine-tenths of such waymarks; the few remaining ones lie close together on the chart, and close ahead: can we question that they will do so in the facts of history? Can we doubt that the "times of the Gentiles" are all but over? We have not been in this investigation following cunningly devised fables, nor elaborating fantastic and baseless theories; we have been studying the mutual relations of three sets of unquestionable facts: the occurrences of history and their dates, the astronomic measures of periods of time, and the sacred prophecies of the word of God. We have been studying facts written large in the book of providence, the book of nature, and the book of revelation. No sciences lend themselves less readily to the service of mere imagination or of foolish speculation than chronology, astronomy, and arithmetic; yet these are just the three that have led to these profoundly interesting and important results. History is of course less rigid, and there is room for some diversity of opinion as to the character and importance of the events it records. But will any one question the critical character of the conquests of the Assyrian and Babylonian monarchs, or of the Persian restoration decrees, in the history of the Jews? Will any one question that the fall of the western empire of old Rome, or the Hegira of Mohammedanism are great dividing lines on the page of history? Will any one question that the English or French revolutions had a momentous bearing on the fall of the Papal power in Europe, or that Carlowitz and Kainardje and the treaties of Paris

Digitized by Google

and Berlin mark stages in the decay of the Ottoman empire? Is it a mere matter of opinion that the condition of the Jews has undergone a startling and marvellous change within the last century, or that the evangelization of the world has received within the same period an unprecedented impulse? Is there any uncertainty about the dates of these events, or any difficulty in calculating their chronological distance from the events of the captivity era? None of these things are obscure or doubtful; they are evident and acknowledged facts; their relation to the predictions of Scripture has long been seen and acknowledged by the most cautious and reverent students of the prophetic word; never demonstrated before, they are sufficient of themselves to prove the true scale of prophetic chronology, for the chances are of course a million to one that so *many* accurate correspondences as we have here indicated are not fortuitous. Not a few of these facts have been noted and explained by other observers, and placed on record even centuries ago; but as far as we know they have never before been grouped together as we have here grouped them, and their united testimony, which is strictly cumulative, seems to us to raise probable proof to the rank of demonstration and moral certainty.

In a later chapter we will endeavour to answer objections and remove the difficulties before alluded to, as sure to suggest themselves to the minds of thoughtful students.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

SIGNS OF OUR TIMES.

To sum up the conclusions we have reached so far. Divine wisdom has seen fit to order human history according to *a chronological plan*, measured, not only by days and weeks and months, but by solar, lunar, and calendar years; by cycles which harmonize solar and lunar movements; and by periods which are days and weeks and months and years of larger cycles, created by the revolution, not of the sun and moon themselves, but of their orbits.

The lapse of six thousand years of history, and the science arising from four thousand years of astronomical observation, as well as the light afforded by the fulfilment of nine-tenths of the predictions of Scripture as to historical events, enable "the wise," or the godly students of the works and word of God, to understand *in these days* His revealed purposes as regards the times and seasons of the redemption of our race, as earlier students could not do.

To encourage us to such studies we have the definite promise that "the wise shall understand" in the time of the end much that was, for kind and wise purposes, hidden from earlier generations. This promise is in its context especially connected with *chronologic* prophecy; but a comprehension of the true scale and scope of this, an understanding of the times and seasons of sacred predictions, determines to a very large and important extent their true historic meaning and application.

The chronological prophecies of Daniel are all included within a period of "seven times," or 2,520 years, and the greater part of them relate to its second half; one prediction, however, and that the most important in the book, measures

Digitized by Google

the interval from the restoration of the Jews after their captivity in Babylon to the first advent of Christ. This last prediction of "seventy weeks" was fulfilled on the scale of a year to a day; and led up to the advent and death of Messiah, and the subsequent destruction of Jerusalem as foretold, running out, as regards the central event, the crucifixion, *to a day*, when measured on the lunar scale from its Nehemiah starting-point.

This accurately fulfilled chronological prediction determines the scale on which all such predictions are to be understood in Daniel and in similarly symbolic prophecies—a day is to be regarded as meaning a year. It determines, too, the fact that lunar as well as solar years are employed in these predictions—a fact which can be otherwise proved also.

The great week of "the times of the Gentiles" is the lifetime of the fourfold image, and of the four wild beast empires of Daniel—Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome; the last in its two stages, first pagan, and secondly Papal. The four pagan empires did actually, as a matter of fact, last half "seven times" (lunar), *i.e.*, 1,260 lunar years; and the second half of the great week has been occupied by the rise, culmination, and decay of the Papal empire of Rome.

The great chronologic prophecies of Daniel are not to be measured from one special *year* to *another*, but from one *era* to another, because the rise and fall of nations—the great movements of history—must in the nature of the case occupy more or less extended *eras*. An *event* like the crucifixion might be and was predicted to a day. Historical movements, like the birth and death of nations, cover many years, or decades, or centuries, in proportion to their greatness and duration. The fall of Israel and Judah covered a period of 160 years, and their restoration and recovery is likely to extend over an equally prolonged period, at least.

The capitivity era of Israel and Judah marks the beginning of the "times of the Gentiles," and the present era of their elevation and emancipation indicates the close of that dispension.

This great week was bisected by a third era, signalised by the rise of the two anti-Christian powers, the Papacy and

Digitized by Google

Mohammedanism; and the present restoration era of the Jews is marked by the gradual decay and fall, under Divine judgments, of both these iniquitous systems.

The chronology of these events confirms most wonderfully this general view, and evidences most marvellously the hand of God in history, and the inspiration of Bible prophecy.

On both lunar and solar scales, the opening and closing eras are separated from each other by "seven times," or 2,520 years; and their years of crisis also correspond. Both are consequently separated from the bisection era by half that interval, the oft predicted "time, times, and a half," or 1,260 years.

The era of the "time of the end" is longer than the earlier eras, because the 2,520 years and its half run out on both lunar and solar scales. It seems to cover 235 years, of which about 187 are already expired. It dates back to the establishment of Protestantism in Europe, and includes all the stages of modern Jewish emancipation, of the great anti-Papal democratic French Revolution, as well as of all subsequent anti-Papal and anti-Moslem revolutions and changes. The system indicates several more dates in *this* century as probably critical in these movements; and several also in the early part of next century, as terminal in character.

Concurrent with the fall of the apostasies and the renaissance of the Jewish people, there has taken place within the last hundred and fifty years a most notable revival of true faith and practical godliness among the *reformed* Churches everywhere, so that there is now an immensely larger number of truly converted and renewed men and women in the world than ever before. There has been a revival of the spiritual Israel even more marked than that of the natural Israel; and this has been accompanied by an influential and widely spread evangelization of the heathen, and by a marvellous circulation of the Scriptures, missionary and Bible societies having all sprung into existence during this "time of the end."

An entirely unprecedented progress has also been made in the elucidation and comprehension of the prophetic Scriptures, so that a large and annually increasing number of Christians are looking for "that blessed hope, and the

Digitized by Google

glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ."

Our blessed Master, when reproving the Jews for not recognising Him as their Messiah, blamed them for *not understanding the signs of the times*. They wished Him to give them a sign from heaven, something wonderful, something supernatural, something miraculous. He refused and said: "O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times? A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed."

Did He object to their wishing for signs? No; for He gave such in abundance to His disciples and to the multitude, and He appealed to the witness borne by these signs to His Messiahship. He objected to *their refusal to discern the signs that abounded on every hand* in the shape of fulfilled prophecy, chronologic and otherwise, gracious miracle, and moral and spiritual revelations. He objected to their craving for the supernatural, the sensational, instead of taking to heart the abounding signs that were actually present.

He subsequently gave signs of His second advent in glory to His disciples, and charged them, saying, "When ye see these things begin to come to pass, lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh." After His resurrection He upbraided the two disciples on the road to Emmanus for not believing *all* that the prophets had spoken of the Christ —His sufferings as well as His glory. It is evident, therefore, that He wishes His people to study and comprehend prophecy, and to be alive to every true sign of the times.

Remarks on this subject are too often made, which betray a want of intelligent comprehension of the *nature* of the signs that are, according to Scripture, to indicate "the time of the end." A careless reading of our Lord's prophetic discourse on the Mount of Olives seems to be the cause of much of this misapprehension. His prediction of wars and rumours of wars, famines, pestilences, and earthquakes, are quoted as if *they* and such like things were to be the signs of the end of the age. A little accurate attention to the order of His statements would at once show that, so far from this being

Digitized by Google

the case, He mentions these are the characteristic and common events of *the entire interval prior to* His coming. Wars and calamities, persecution and apostasy, martyrdom, treachery, abounding iniquity, gospel preaching, the fall of Jerusalem, the great tribulation of Israel, which has, as we know, extended over eighteen hundred years,—all these things were to *fill the interval*, not to be signs of the immediate proximity of the second advent. How *could* things of common, constant occurrence be in themselves signs of any uncommon and unique crisis? What commoner all through the ages than wars and rumours of wars, famines, pestilences, and earthquakes? These, as marking the *course* of the age, can never indicate its *close*, to do which something distinctive is evidently requisite.

Many who perceive the folly of thus looking at every great natural calamity as a sign, go to an opposite extreme, and expect wonderful, unprecendented, supernatural, and impossible signs, basing their expectations on a literal interpretation of the symbolic hieroglyphs of the Apocalypse. Such signs would be so grotesque and absurd in character, that it is an insult to human intelligence, not to say to Divine revelation, to assert that they are to be expected. There is one simple and all-sufficient answer to this childish conception of the signs of the last days. Our Lord and His apostles alike furnish the reply. Our Lord says:

"As it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, *until the day* that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed."[1]

And the Apostle Paul confirms this:

"For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape."[2]

If such signs as are imagined by some *were* to precede the

[1] Luke xvii. 26–30. [2] 1 Thess. v. 2, 3.

Digitized by Google

advent, the state of society predicted in these passages could not by any possibility exist. If monstrous, unheard of, supernatural, portentous events were to transpire, would they not be telegraphed the same day all over a startled world, and produce such a sense of alarm and expectation that buying and selling, and planting, and building, and marrying and giving in marriage, would all be arrested together, and "peace and safety" would be far from any one's lips or thoughts? And if *one* of the apocalyptic prodigies is to be thus fulfilled, *all* of course must be so. Conceive a succession of such supernatural prodigies, and a world asleep in fancied security, and overtaken by sudden destruction! No; there was nothing special to alarm the antediluvians before the day that Noah entered into the ark; nothing special to startle the men of Sodom ere the fire from heaven fell; and *like as it was in those days*, so will it be in *these*. All going on just as usual, no stupendous sign to attract the world's attention. "None of the wicked shall understand" the true state of affairs, only the "wise," enlightened by the word of prophecy.

It will be objected, perhaps, But if the signs of the times which we are expected to recognise are neither ordinary natural events, nor extraordinary unnatural ones, what are they? Scripture abundantly answers this inquiry. *They are special, but perfectly natural events, occurring in a predicted order, and at a predicted time*, various and widely differing events occurring in special combinations. They are not sudden, startling, supernatural phenomena, but *definite stages in long progressing natural movements*, whose history was written twenty-five centuries ago by Daniel.

Hear a parable! A man, wholly ignorant of the actual length of human life, is told that his existence will consist of four stages, infancy, childhood, youth, and full age, and that this fourth stage will have two sections, maturity and decay. Certain general particulars of the three earlier divisions are given to him, and much fuller particulars as to the characteristics and events of the fourth. He is told that its first portion will be marked by a certain perfection of strength and intelligence, by the ability to do great things physical and intellectual, by a power of self-multiplication

Digitized by Google

and of ruling others, by the acquisition of wealth and influence, respect and honour; and that after a time a change will come, there will be manifested a loss of vigour, a failure of power, a gradually increasing feebleness, necessitating a gradually decreasing sphere of action; and moreover, that in this second stage of adult life, disease of a fatal character will be slowly developed in his system, having certain very definite symptoms, which will arise in a given order. He is told that the last symptoms which will usher in the great change will be a loss of sight, a difficulty of breathing, paralysis of the nervous system, and lastly, failure of the heart's action. He is told that when all these things come to pass he may know that a rapid and momentary passage will take him into a better stage of things. All this falls out in due order. His feeble infancy merges into a merry childhood, and that again into brilliant, glowing youth; in his early maturity the world rings with his achievements, but later years bring, as foretold, infirmity, disease, and gradual decay.

What now is the ground of the old man's conviction that his earthly existence is all but over? What forbids him to look for recovery, or even to hope for cure? Not his own impressions or feelings; not any sudden or new pain, that may rouse him for a moment to more vivid and distressing sensation; not any freshly developed stage of his malady. None of these things, but the irresistible inference, deduced from seventy or eighty years of experience, that every part of the prediction given him must be fulfilled in its season.

If now, in addition to its other causes, that prediction had contained *an anagram*, which, when interpreted by the right clue, would give the chronological duration of his illness; and if by some chance the clue to the anagram came into the old man's hands, and on reading the riddle he found that it amounted to a statement that *his fatal complaint would last for rather more than twelve years*, he would have still clearer grounds for the conviction that his end was near. His illness had already endured for that time within a few weeks or days; he might and would still be ignorant of the day and the hour of his decease, because the exact date of the first incipient commencement of his fatal malady

Digitized by Google

might not be discernible to memory. It had come on gradually and by stages, he cannot at present recall exactly how or when. He well remembers when he first sought advice about it, when he first adopted a certain mode of treatment, when it forced him to give up his business, when he was obliged to take to his bed, and when his sight began to fail; but the first beginning is not so easily fixed. Still, he knows it was about twelve years ago; and the *time*, taken in conjunction with all the other features of the case, settles the question. But he has yet further confirmation, for the prediction had announced that *immediately* before his dissolution his first-born son, a prodigal who had forsaken his father's house in the days of his youth, and who had been ever since a lost wanderer, would return to his home. Now already, after years of silence and oblivion, he has heard from that prodigal. His first letter was from New Zealand, and spoke of his return. The second arrived from Ceylon, the third from Aden; once more he wrote from Port Said, and then from Malta, and his last letter had been dated from Southampton. He had reached England, he had got so far on his way home, he might be expected at any hour. The old man says to himself, "It has all come true; I shall breathe my last in his embrace."

If now a friend said to him: "Perhaps you are mistaken: you had often thought yourself dying before. Do you not remember how, soon after your illness began, you used to think you were very near the end, and how again and again you have formed wrong anticipations, that have been falsified by the events? Your symptoms are not much worse than they have been for years; you may rally yet and live on"—what would the old man reply? "True, I did some time since prematurely anticipate the close, but that was before I clearly deciphered that anagram which limits this illness of mine to twelve years. You know I have already been ill about twelve years; besides, hearken! are not those the footsteps of my long lost son?"

Now what are the grounds of that old man's conviction? They are deduced from the long course of bygone events, compared with present ones—events which had all been predicted to him in the order in which they had occurred.

Digitized by Google

The four stages of life had come in their turn, they had borne precisely the characteristics attributed to them. The last, as indicated beforehand, had proved to be by far the most important of the four; not only longer than all the others put together, but amazingly more influential over the then existing generation, and over generations yet to come. The disease and decay of its latter portion had insidiously invaded his constitution as predicted; every sympton of the illness had been clearly marked and developed in the predicted succession. It had now run a course of rather more than twelve years, and every present indication presaged an early dissolution; and, lo! the prodigal, who had seemed so hopelessly lost, returns!

Somewhat similar in character are the signs of these times, the signs of the fast approaching "end of the age." Of this nature is the evidence which compels us to conclude that we are on the eve of the great and long-predicted change. There is nothing supernatural, nor will there be, nothing extraordinary, nor will there be, until the epiphany of the Son of man in glory startles a sleeping world as a thief in the night. Each of the signs taken separately and singly, or occurring in any other connexion, or at any other time, might argue nothing remarkable; but occurring as they do, *as links in a predicted series*, as the closing stages in a long movement, and at the precise periods indicated twenty-five centuries ago, they become to "the wise" clear signs that the end of the present state of things is at hand. To the world they *seem*, as they *are* in themselves, perfectly natural and ordinary events, easily to be accounted for by second causes, and having about them no special providential character or evidential value as signs of the approaching end; but to the understanding they portend the near approach of "that sudden destruction" which impends over a guilty and Christ-rejecting world, and over a corrupt and apostate Church, as well as the glorious deliverance speedily to arise to the true people of God. Yet there is nothing in them to interrupt the world's dream of "peace and safety," or to disturb the scoffer's conviction that "all things continue as they were."

A little reflection will show that we have *six separate and*

Digitized by Google

distinct sets of signs, each sufficient by and of itself alone to indicate that we are on the verge of the establishment on earth of the eternal kingdom of the Son of man—that eternal reign of righteousness and peace, of which the millennial sabbath is only the portal and introduction. We have:

I. Political signs.
II. Ecclesiastical signs.
III. Jewish signs.
IV. Mohammedan signs.
V. General social signs.
VI. Chronological signs.

I. The POLITICAL SIGNS lie in the wonderful fulfilment of the *broad outline* of Gentile history given by Daniel twenty-five centuries ago, in the succession, order, and events of the four great empires. There neither is nor can be the slightest doubt in the mind of any educated man, that in that part of the world in which the people of God, natural and spiritual, have existed, and in which the redemption of mankind has been wrought, four great universal empires have succeeded each other since Daniel's day, nor that the fourth has been in every sense the greatest of them all.

ROME, the city which gives its name to the fourth, was in Daniel's day a mere cluster of huts, surrounded by a wall of mud, and inhabited by a handful of discontented and turbulent outlaws. Its existence was unnoticed and unknown beyond the limited sphere of the barbarous tribes of its own neighbours in Italy. Yet its matchless might and dominion, its iron like strength and power, its universal and long-lived empire, are foreseen and foretold as the fourth in succession from that founded by Nebuchadnezzar. The ruins of Babylon, the monumental writings of Medo-Persia, the statues and temples and literature of Greece, are with us to this day, and we are ourselves a fraction of the empire of Rome. We ride over ROMAN roads, we visit ROMAN baths, we use the Latin tongue of ROME; ROMAN law is the basis of our jurisprudence; we are a witness to ourselves of ROMAN dominion to the ends of the earth; while the Church to which most of the continental nations still belong is the Church of ROME, and the professedly infallible teacher to whose doctrine they bow is the Pope of ROME, who claims

Digitized by Google

supreme dominion to-day over two hundred millions of mankind.

Unlike the ancient oracles of an idolatrous priesthood obscure, enigmatical, and having reference only to petty present or proximate matters, these simple, sublime, far-reaching oracles of God stretch over empires and ages. They arch in under one vast, unbroken vault the infinitely numerous and ever-varying changes among nations and peoples, from Daniel's day to our own, and to still future days, and comprehend the whole in one marvellously clear and simple outline, with a fourfold division.

The fourth or Roman section of the history is represented in this prophecy as divided into two parts; the first a united empire, and the second a tenfold commonwealth of kingdoms under Roman sway.

Now it is clear that the Babylonian empire passed away even in Daniel's own lifetime; that the Medo-Persian fell before Alexander the Great, A.D. 330; that Greece in its turn passed under the all-embracing, all-crushing power of Rome, shortly before the first advent; that the first stage, or *empire* of Rome, ceased with Romulus Augustulus in the fifth century; and that the commonwealth of ten Gothic nations which then arose, and has ever since existed in the sphere of the old empire of Rome, owning for ages a voluntary subjection to the *Roman* pontiff, has already been in existence for between twelve and thirteen centuries. In a word, the first half of the Roman dominion ended in the fifth century, and the second, extending to the present day, has already lasted as long as the four pagan empires put together. Judging then from these broad outlines alone, *whereabouts are we in the lifetime of the image of Gentile monarchy?* How much of the prophetic programme remains unfulfilled? May we not feel absolutely certain that since all the foretold events, *stretching over twenty-five centuries* of history, have been accomplished in their time and in their order, the minute fraction that remains will be the same? How near then must be the great change? Whereabouts are we? The reply of this first witness is clearly—*on the very verge of the establishment of the kingdom of God* on earth, at the second coming of Christ.

Digitized by Google

It should be noted that the *first* coming of Christ is not glanced at in the prophecies of the succession of Gentile monarchies. That coming made no change in their history at the time of its occurrence; Pagan Rome was in the plenitude of its power when that event took place, and it continued to be so for centuries afterwards. The *first* advent did not crush, grind to powder, and extinguish for ever Gentile monarchy, as is evident from the fact that it continues until this day. Christ Himself was put to death by Roman authority, the object of His first advent having been to save, and not to govern the world. That first advent is described in the prophecy of Daniel ix., but is not mentioned in the visions of chapters ii. and vii. It resulted in the establishment of the present spiritual kingdom of God in the hearts of men; but very different will be the results of the *second* advent, which it is predicted will follow on the close of this Gentile age.

"In the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but *it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms*, and it shall stand for ever."

Now if no other line of evidence existed, if this grand outline of prophecy which has now become so largely fulfilled history stood alone, if we had nothing in Scripture to guide us but this one broad political outline, ought not every believer in inspiration to feel satisfied that we are living in the very end of this age? Heaven and earth shall pass away, but God's word shall not pass away. Four empires, *and four only*, fill the interval from the fall to the restoration of the throne of Judah in the person of David's Son and David's Lord; four great universal empires, *and four only*, are to be governed by Gentile rulers, who resemble wild beasts in their cruel ferocity and in their ignorance of God. Four such empires, *and four only*, precede the coming in glory of the Son of man, and the setting up on earth of the kingdom of the God of heaven, the kingdom which is *to replace all others* and stand for ever. We live not only at the close of the fourth, but at the close of *its last form*, the Roman Papacy. Already that power has ceased to exist as

Digitized by Google

a secular government. What is to come next? Scripture says the glorious kingdom of God! But there are plenty of confirmatory signs, and we will consider next the

II. Ecclesiastical Signs. The professing Christian Church is, and has been for fifteen hundred years, that is, since the days of Constantine, a great and important institution and organization in the sphere of the old Roman empire. Germs of corruption were apparent even in the days of the apostles; inspiration foretold that they would develop, till the professing Church, on the removal of the old Roman empire, would, while retaining the name of Christ, become a mighty anti-Christian system—a system energised and utilised by Satan for his own diabolical purposes. It was foretold that this apostasy would be headed and governed by *a specially evil and wicked ruling dynasty, which would succeed the Cæsars at Rome.* The apostles Paul and John present different but harmonious prophetic portraits of this evil power, both distinctly associating it with Rome. Daniel, in his much earlier vision relating to the succession of Gentile monarchies, also introduces (ch. vii.) this very same power as ruling throughout the whole period of the tenfold state of Rome, over its commonwealth of nations, and as *causing* the destruction of the whole Roman earth, by its boastings and blasphemies, at the second advent of Christ. The other Christian apostles confirm this account of the time of the destruction of the apostasy, presenting it, as Daniel does, as *the terminal event of this age,* an event synchronising with the marriage of the Lamb.

History tells us that gross corruption, worldly ambition, and carnal strife rapidly developed in the Church after imperial Christianity was introduced by Constantine, and that a ruling ecclesiastical system *did* arise at Rome on the fall of the old Roman empire in the fifth and sixth centuries; that this power, the Papal dynasty, *did* become a supremely wicked one; that it has fulfilled with marvellous exactitude every feature of the prediction; that like the ivy, from lowly beginnings on the ground, it climbed, by means of the very obstacles that thwarted its progress, ever higher and higher, till in the course of centuries it over-topped all the branches of the great tree of the European common-

Digitized by Google

wealth, and the humble Christian bishop became, in the Roman pontiff of the middle ages, king of kings and lord of lords in Latin Christendom. It tells of the centuries during which this great Papal apostasy continued to corrupt the gospel, oppose the truth, and persecute the saints, as predicted; and it tells us that for three hundred years since the Reformation this ecclesiastical system and its head have been rapidly losing power and influence, until some 150 millions of Protestants now exist in the world, *free* from its domination, while an immense number of infidels have in Latin Christendom equally thrown off its yoke. After listening to and pondering the testimony of this ecclesiastical witness, we ask ourselves, If this great predicted Roman apostasy has thus arisen, culminated, and been moreover for upwards of three centuries sinking, falling, and decaying, what remains? The reply is inevitable: One more stage, and only one; *its destruction as predicted, by the brightness of Christ's coming.* The apostasy of the Christian Church has run its course. The final act of the long drama is due.[1]

Further. If, instead of looking at the *ruler* of this great ecclesiastical apostasy, we look at *the Church he so long ruled*, the result is the same. That Church is represented as a woman riding the Roman wild beast (Rev. xvii.); *i.e.*, an ecclesiastical system identified with the secular power of Rome, influencing and guiding the tenfold commonwealth on the one hand, and upheld by it on the other. In "the time of the end" the mutual relation is changed; the ten kingdoms get tired of their burden, rebel against their would-be guide, throw off her yoke, hate her, spoil her, and consume her. At last a voice from heaven cries, "Come out of her, My people, . . . that ye receive not of her plagues"; and then adds, "Babylon the Great is fallen, is fallen: in one hour is her judgment come, in one hour she is made desolate."

History tells us how the Gothic and Frankish kingdoms that arose in Europe on the fall of old Rome voluntarily gave their support and allegiance to the Romish Church for well-nigh a thousand years; how as the result of her gross corruptions they ultimately came to despise, loathe, and reject

[1] Dan. vii. 2, 26; 2 Thess. i. 9, 10.

Digitized by Google

her teachings, her government, and her rule; how first one and then another of them have during the last three hundred years thrown off her control, appropriated her revenues, destroyed her priesthood, despoiled her monasteries, refused her claims for support, and forsaken her company. Reviewing carefully the history of this Roman *Church* as foretold by inspiration, we ask, *What then remains unfulfilled?* The answer comes again more clearly than ever—only her final fall under Divine judgment; that final fall of Babylon which synchronises with the marriage of the Lamb.

We summon next a third witness, who has no connexion with the two previous ones, and who looks at the question from an altogether different standpoint; and we seek to ascertain how his testimony bears on the question of "the signs of the times." He knows little of political or ecclesiastical questions, for he is a Jew; but he boldly says: "These are the last days, and I will undertake to prove it from

III. "JEWISH SIGNS. Long ago, six hundred years before the Christian era, my nation lost its independence; it fell under Gentile rulers. But its fall was illumined by hope, for our restoration had been predicted a thousand years previously by the same God who had also foretold our fall. Many particulars were associated with our fall in sacred prophecy, and *they all came true.* Many more were associated with our restoration, and one by one *they have been coming true for the last* 150 *years.* Not a single jot or tittle has failed of the threats of judgment; all came on our people and lasted through ages. And now the promises are coming upon us; one by one they have been fulfilled, and there remain unfulfilled but one or two, and even of these we are already receiving the first instalments—the conversion of our people and their restoration to the land of promise. *We* cannot from *our* experience doubt that the day is near at hand when the throne of Judah will again be established on earth, and when Messiah, Son of David, will be King over the whole world. You need not take my word for it; judge for yourself! Compare the condition of the Jews in Europe and the wide world to-day, with what it was only two centuries ago! *Then* our portion was, and for ages had been, homeless exile, perpetually renewed banishment, cruel

Digitized by Google

and constant massacre, ruthless spoliation, social contempt and degradation, destruction by torture and fire and sword; we were despised until we became despicable, oppressed until we became wicked, crushed down until we lost the power to rise, deprived of all chance of culture till we sank into almost brutal ignorance; we were enslaved and ill-treated till we hardly remembered we were *men:* and this for long, long centuries! *Now* all is changed, and our portion in most lands is as good a one as that of the Gentiles themselves. In some few countries we are still reminded of olden times occasionally, when our people by their financial dealings excite popular prejudice; but this is the exception, not the rule. Everywhere we are now emancipated, possessed of civil, social, and religious liberty, and of citizenship in all lands; we take our places in every class, even among the legislators and judges of the Gentiles; we teach their youth, we conduct their press; we enjoy honour and power, rank and wealth, and perfect equality with our Gentile neighbours. Further, we have once more AN INTERNATIONAL BOND OF UNION, and are one of the most rapidly rising, fast multiplying, vigorous, and advancing nations on earth. We can compete with Gentiles in the mart, in the study, in the senate, whenever we get fair play; and *we are getting it everywhere now.* Our restoration to our own land is but a question of time, and probably of a short time. If *our* revival, uplifting, and restoration mark the terminus of *your* Gentile age, then you may be very sure its years are few!"

So speaks the Jewish witness, and every fact he indicates is a true sign of the times.

And there is further confirmation still in connexion with *the land* of the Jews, as well as with their people. For eighteen centuries it has lain desolate and forsaken of its sons, occupied and oppressed by strangers, and its condition was indicated by our Lord Himself as *especially* a sign of the times. "Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, *until* the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled." The condition of Palestine, be it observed, is a wholly independent question to that of the state of the Jews. Since the close of the Jewish war 1,800 years ago, the Jews have had no more to do with it, practically, than the Chinese. It has passed

Digitized by Google

under the power of one Gentile nation after another, and no improvement in the condition of the Jews has as yet had any direct influence on the fate of Palestine. For the last twelve centuries it has lain desolate under Mohammedan despotism, and for nearly 400 years it has been wasted by Turkish tyranny. But the cruel grasp that has held it so long is fast relaxing; paralysis has smitten away its strength; the slightest effort would remove the weak and unwelcome constraint; yea, it would have failed long since had not outsiders upheld the arm and steadied the hand. It must evidently, as all admit, resign its hold ere long.

But perchance some other *Gentile* power may succeed the Turk? It does not follow that Jerusalem must cease to be trodden down by *Gentiles*, because it ceases to be trodden down by the *Turk*.

True; but this decay of Turkish power is represented elsewhere under the figure of the drying up of the Euphrates, and that figure points back to Cyrus' capture of Babylon, when the river Euphrates was actually dried up, that Israel's liberator might enter Babylon and set the captive people free. Of this Cyrus it was said, "he shall build My city; he shall let go My captives." He is a type of Christ, who is now by His providence drying up the anti-typical Euphrates—*i.e.* the Turkish power—that He may effect a greater deliverance.

Furthermore, facts indicate that it would be impossible permanently to replace the Turks in Jerusalem by any nation except the Jewish one. The powers of Europe would not suffer any one of themselves to possess it. When the eastern question comes to its solution, as it soon must, the probability is that the best course, even from a merely political standpoint, will be seen to be *a Jewish occupation*, under European guarantee, as in the case of Belgium. In any case, the condition of Jerusalem, and of the eastern question generally, seems to agree with all the rest in indicating that we have *nearly* reached the close of the "times of the Gentiles."

IV. MOHAMMEDAN SIGNS. This set of signs, though closely connected with the previous one, is yet to a certain extent independent, and may be regarded apart. The testimony of the Moslem witness to the chronological character of our days harmonizes with that of the other witnesses, but has

Digitized by Google

distinctive and confirmatory features of its own. Not only must it be considered in connexion with *the land* of Israel, as above indicated, but independently as a vast anti-Christian system, parallel with the Papacy in some respects, though contrasted with it in others, having opposed the truth, and persecuted the saints, and being doomed to be "broken without hand," and to come to its end, with none to help it (Dan viii. xi.).

When we remember what the Mohammedan power is and has done in the world; when we remember that the Apocalypse—which reveals, not only, like Daniel, the outward and visible action of the potentates and powers that influence the destiny of myriads of mankind for many generations, but goes further and shows their *origin*, whether from above or beneath—distinctly declares that *this* system, like the Papal system, originated with SATAN, and issued from the bottomless pit; when we remember that its sway at one time extended from the walls of China to the Atlantic, and from the Danube to the Nile; when we remember that it well-nigh extinguished Christianity throughout the whole of northern Africa, and cruelly persecuted it in all the rest of its dominions; when we remember that one hundred and fifty millions of men are still believers in its Christ-rejecting creed, and that millions more of nominal Christians are still the victims of its oppressions and cruelties: *then* its present and rapidly progressing *decay*, and the consequent gradual liberation of its Jewish and Christian victims, and the near prospect of its total extinction in Europe, become "a sign of the times," gigantic in its importance, and carrying a weight which a thousand brief and passing signs could never do. Every fresh stage in its fall is a confirmatory sign, as is every fresh manifestation of the decay of the Papal nations, and of the increasing spread and ascendency of the Protestant powers.

V. GENERAL SOCIAL SIGNS. But confirming all these great and principal signs, derived from the history of nations and the course of ages, we have also more specific ones of a different nature: such as the moral character both of the Church and of the world in the days in which we live; the prevalent philosophy of this time of the end; the inventions

Digitized by Google

and arts of this nineteenth century, with its habits and customs;—foretold, some of them eighteen, and some of them twenty-five centuries ago. As these are more frequently recognised as signs of the time than the others to which we have alluded, we do not dwell on them at any length here, though to reflecting minds their testimony is clear and conclusive.

In 1 Timothy iv. 1-3 we have a prophecy of Paul's of "the latter times," an expression which may refer to any part of the second half of the times of the Gentiles, though it is never used with regard to the first half. Paul in this passage describes the characteristic features of the Papal apostasy, which deluged Europe with superstition during the middle ages.

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats."

In 2 Timothy Paul predicts later events still, the perilous times of "the last days," an expression markedly distinct from the previous "latter times."

"This know also, that in the *last days* perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away."

Now while certain of the features here enumerated are evidently not peculiar nor distinctive of any one special period of history, yet a high state of civilization has a tendency to produce, not exaggerated individual cases, but a *general prevalence* of selfishness, pride, luxury, and corruption. The old Roman civilization, with which Paul was acquainted in the city of the Cæsars, was not certainly lacking in individual instances of these things, though it had also features of a very different character. But there were to intervene between those early days and "the last times" long ages of semi-barbarism, during which all that old civilization would

Digitized by Google

cease to be—ages which would be distinguished by other crimes, and especially by superstition and by a Christianized idolatry. But "the last days" were to witness the revival of the crimes incident to high civilization, with certain special classes of sins super-added. Boasters, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, despisers of those that are good, lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God, and especially "having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof," "ever learning, and *never able to come to a knowledge of the truth.*" That these features are all singularly characteristic of the nineteenth century none can question. Its latest and most popular philosophy is agnosticism,—a confession that after all its vast and far-reaching discoveries, after all its profound researches, it is *unable to reach any knowledge of the truth on the highest of all subjects.* Agnosticism is simply know-nothingism. It is more: it is not only an assertion that nothing is known, but that nothing can be known; it puts an extinguisher on even the attempt to know Him, whom to know is life eternal. Our age has "a form of godliness," a Christian Church is established in most of the states of Latin Christendom, and is sustained by the different powers of Europe; but where is the power to maintain purity in the Churches, or righteousness in the laws of Christendom? Where is the power to arrest war and bloodshed, rapine and slaughter? Where is the power to subject the counsels of nations to the law and will of God, to produce in society any sort of resemblance to the kingdom of God? The religion of these last days has well been called a baptized heathenism; it is Christian in creed, but too often heathen in practice.

Another feature of the philosophy of these last days is given by Peter, and is singularly characteristic of our times.

"Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, Where is the promise of His coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, *all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.*" As Darwin, esteemed by many, the apostle of the nineteenth century, puts it: "All things continue as they were since the beginning of the creation; there is no need for miraculous intervention, no room for supernatural action. We live under a reign of law; as it was in the beginning, so

Digitized by Google

it is now, and so it ever shall be as regards the succession of physical phenomena. One form of life is evolved out of another in endless succession; in physical, mental, moral, and religious spheres, all things continue as they were," or rather, change so slowly and gradually, that no sudden catastrophe need ever be apprehended; on the contrary, "we may count on an assured future of great length." Such is the fashionable creed, such the universal doctrine. But its teachers are, as the apostle states, "willingly ignorant" that all things have *not* continued in one long, uninterrupted succession. They are willingly ignorant of the all-important fact that a flood once broke in on ungodly men, and "took them all away." They are willingly ignorant that the invariable law of death has been conquered by the glorious fact of resurrection. If the combined voices of the most universal and ancient traditions and of the most authentic and well attested history demand credence for any fact, they demand credence for these two; and these two facts once admitted, Divine intervention—the control of the law by the Lawgiver—is demonstrated, and the occurrence of such a crisis as is predicted in Scripture is seen to be not only possible, but in the light of analogy *likely*. If what is called the course of nature has been interfered with in the past, it may be again interfered with in the future, and in the near future.

Daniel's prophecies also, though dealing principally with the course of nations and the lapse of ages, give us two or three general social signs of the state of things at the close of this age, and it cannot be denied that these apply to the nineteenth century *as to no previous one*. He does not say the power of steam will be applied to locomotion, and the art of travel will be revolutionised; but, looking at the result, rather than the cause, he mentions in half a dozen simple words the most characteristic feature of the nineteenth century—"many shall run to and fro." Now to an eye that could embrace in one glance the civilized world, all its seas and all its shores, all its roads and all its rivers, all its towns and its cities, what would be the first and strongest impression produced on considering the scene? Surely that of ceaseless motion; many running to and fro, like ants around an anthill. Innumerable travellers cross and recross each

Digitized by Google

other's paths, not creeping or crawling, but rapidly running in every direction; trains flying with amazing speed by day and by night all over the land; steamers, crowded with hundreds and even thousands of passengers, traversing every sea and every ocean; huge floating hotels, thronged with guests, plying in multitudes on the great rivers of the great continents; railroads, level, elevated, and underground, passing over and under each other in the million-peopled cities of different countries; the whole scene swarming with men and women in motion: *many running to and fro!* No previous age of the world's history could have presented this spectacle; it is unique, it is becoming ever more marked, as year by year hundreds of miles of fresh railroads open up new districts, and as population and emigration increase, and as commerce spreads. Ten thousand persons travel now where one travelled formerly; even ladies and children think little of circumnavigating the globe for pleasure. There is no mistaking this sign of the time of the end; it is distinctive, and so conspicuous and unprecedented as to be a subject of constant comment. How few, as they point to it with pride and pleasure, remember it is a Divine mark of the time of the end, and associated with the second coming of Christ and the resurrection of the dead!

Nor is the second prediction less remarkable and distinctive, "Knowledge shall be increased." Education in most of the countries of Christendom is now *compulsory*, and the result is that every child can read, on the one hand, while literature floods every home, on the other. All that is going on all the world over is known by the masses of the people as well as by their rulers day by day. The news of events transpiring in India and Australia is published in London before the hour of the events arrives, for telegraphic messages travel faster than the sun! Every discovery is immediately published throughout the earth, popularized and turned to universal account. The higher education, unattainable to saint or sage, king or conqueror in the earlier ages, is now at the service of the common people; and an intelligent English schoolboy in these days knows more of the elements of *true* science, of the system of the universe, of the laws of matter, of the past and present condition of the

Digitized by Google

globe on which he lives, than did the wisest philosophers of the olden time. As "knowledge is power," the result is, that nature with her mighty forces is every year becoming increasingly the helper and the friend of man, to the rapid increase of the physical well-being of the race. The knowledge of these days is real knowledge, an acquaintance with the facts and forces of nature, a rediscovery of the records of the past, and, above all, an immensely widespread acquaintance on the part of mankind with "the volume of the book," containing that Divine revelation which imparts the highest of all knowledge, the knowledge of God and of His Son Jesus Christ our Lord. Brief was the Bible of Daniel's day, and few were the copies of it! Yet only where it had enlightened the minds of men did any true moral or spiritual knowledge exist. Age after age elapsed, and the New Testament was added to the old. But how few *comparatively* were still the copies! And owing to the uneducated condition of the masses, how few could study the copies that did exist In the dark ages the Bible might almost as well not have existed, so little were its glorious revelations understood. And there followed ages when to read and study it brought torture and death, and when, alas! editions were printed to be burned. Only since the Reformation has the world really possessed the book, and only within the last century have Bible societies existed to multiply versions and editions, and to distribute by millions all over the world this king of books. The increase of knowledge which has resulted is almost inconceivable. It has rendered it difficult for us to realize the ignorance of other ages. The increase of knowledge is not to be measured by the amount of light possessed by individuals only, but still more by the *number of individuals enlightened.* The universality of education, and the marvellous results of the combination of steam power with the mechanical ingenuity that has perfected the printing press, has filled with the light of knowledge the whole civilized world, in a way and to a degree that is absolutely peculiar to the nineteenth century, and especially to its second half.

If this expression, "knowledge shall be increased," be taken as referring *especially* to a knowledge of the meaning of the prophetic Scriptures (a signification which its context

Digitized by Google

quite justifies) then also it is characteristic of these days, and of these alone. The early Fathers understood the predictions about the second coming of *Christ*, but they were inevitably in the dark, as indeed they were intended to be, as to the meaning of the prophecies about *antichrist*, and the events of the second half of the times of the Gentiles. Light dawned gradually after history began to fulfil the predictions; each stage of accomplishment has made the meaning of the prophecies clearer, and since the Reformation progress in a true knowledge of their meaning has been solid and rapid. Now, in the close of this "time of the end," the clouds of obscurity have completely rolled away; the whole plan and order of events, the succession of empires, the limits of chronology, the scales of measurement, the nature of fulfilments, all have become, in the combined light of facts and of analogies, so clear, that he who runs may read; and the fulfilment of ancient Messianic predictions in the first advent of Christ is scarcely more clear than the fulfilment of the predictions of antichrist in the history of the Papacy, and those of the incipient restoration of Israel in current events.

VI. CHRONOLOGICAL SIGNS. As our long section on the chronology of the "times of the Gentiles" and of the sanctuary cycle and other periods has gone very fully into the chronological character of the days in which we live, we need not dwell on it here further than to recall in a very few sentences the multiplied signs of our times derivable from this source. Though the impressions of multiplicity and complexity may to some extent be left on the mind by the perusal of our chronological section, it is possible nevertheless to gain a very simple and comprehensive view on the subject. Sacred prophecy presents us with only *four* main periods, extending into days still future; all these four, starting from different and widely severed dates in the past, *converge in our days*, indicating thus that they are the last days of this age. The four periods are:

1. The twenty-five centuries of the "times of the Gentiles."

2. The twenty-three centuries of the sanctuary cycle.

3. The twelve and a half centuries of the duration of the apostasies.

Digitized by Google

4. The 360 years or less from the Reformation era.

The initial eras of these periods are perfectly clear. The first dates from the Babylonian captivity era; the second, from the Persian restoration era; the third, from what we may call the Gothic era of the breaking up of the old Roman empire; and the last from the Reformation era of the sixteenth century. No one will question that the days of Nebuchadnezzar are removed by twenty-five centuries from the present time, nor that the days of Xerxes and Artaxerxes are similarly removed by twenty-three centuries. No one can question that the Papal and Mohammedan powers rose at the end of the sixth century, which is twelve and a half centuries distant from our days; nor that the Reformation took place in the beginning of the sixteenth century, while we are living at the end of the nineteenth: in other words, that a "time" has already elapsed since its first stages, and will soon have done so since its last. Without descending therefore to any detail at all, it is plain to the most superficial observer, that all the four main periods of chronologic prophecy *converge in our days* and expire within a comparatively few years.

We have seen that the testimony of this broad, superficial view of the subject is only confirmed by a more close and accurate examination; that all these periods have earlier and later dates of close, according to whether they are measured from the earliest point in their respective commencing eras or from the latest, and according to the scale on which they are measured; and that while incipient stages of the closing movements are reached at the earlier terminations, the final ones seem destined to bring the full close. The God of providence and Author of inspiration has seen fit to assign chronological limits to historical episodes, as much as to day and night, cycle and season; He who adjusts the axial and orbital revolutions of the globe to harmonize with the physical requirements of nature and of man, has in His wisdom and goodness adjusted also the revolutions and changes of history, the duration of empires and of kingdoms, the birth of new eras and the dates of closing revolutions, with a view to the moral and spiritual good of the human race, and the manifestation of His own glory. Further, He

Digitized by Google

has been pleased *to reveal* His chronological purposes as well as His moral purposes, and to make plain to His people in these days the fact that in those eternal counsels "the mystery of God" is well nigh finished, and the manifestation of His kingdom at hand.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVII.

ANSWERS TO OBJECTIONS.

We believe that the system of chronologic prophecy which we have in the foregoing pages to some extent expounded is a strictly biblical one, though in no one passage or book of Scripture is it plainly set forth as a whole. Its various parts are found in the Bible, embodied in Levitical ordinances, involved in Old Testament histories and simple Gospel records, or revealed in prophetic visions. *It lies latent in the Bible*, as all science lies latent in nature, and can only be presented in a systematic form after numerous observations of apparently disconnected phenomena have been combined into wide generalizations. So this system, though not as a whole set forth anywhere in Scripture, has its basis laid deep in the inspired writings, and results from a careful comparison of Bible statements with each other, with the facts of nature, and with the actual providence of God in history. We do not assume that we have expounded or even discerned with perfect accuracy *all* the features of this system, but believe, on the contrary, that passing years will clear up many of its remaining obscurities, and reveal more clearly the exactness of its adjustments. As the late Rev. T. R. Birks wrote of our former work on this subject, so we feel as to this one, though it is more exact and more thorough on this point than its predecessor; it is "probably a penultimate and not an ultimate arrangement of the times of sacred prophecy." We believe it to be in advance of any previous exposition of the subject both in comprehensiveness and in accuracy, but we do not claim for it that it is final. The unfoldings of history within the next few years will do much to confirm or to shake its credibility; and we are content that it should be judged in the light of proximate events. But we are

Digitized by Google

anxious to secure from all lovers of truth, of whatever shade of opinion on these subjects, *a candid examination of the facts* we have observed and here arranged, and in order to do this must now remove out of the way certain stumblingblocks which might hinder some readers.

1. The first and main objection which will be felt by many is the apparently strong and well-founded one that this exposition, and especially our remarks on the future dates of the series—cautious and interrogative as they are—come dangerously near an unjustifiable attempt to fix the time of the second advent. It will be alleged that the clear, unambiguous statements of Scripture prove that to do this is impossible, and even to attempt it foolish and reprehensible: for that it is evidently not the purpose of God that the time of that supreme event should be known; that Christ and His apostles founded their exhortations to constant watchfulness on the ground of our *ignorance* of the time of His return; that He used the most emphatic expressions on the subject, saying, "Of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father"; and again, "Take ye heed, watch and pray; for ye know *not* when the time is."[1] It will be urged that even after His resurrection He said, in reply to the question of His disciples as to the time at which He would restore again the kingdom to Israel, "It is not for you to know the times and the seasons, which the Father hath put in His own power"; and that consequently we must be wrong in attempting to indicate from the prophecies of Daniel the chronologic date of the end of this age.

This objection appears at first sight so weighty and well grounded, that unless we can completely remove it, and even draw from these very passages an argument in defence of our position, we might as well refrain from publishing this book. We could neither expect nor desire these solemn statements to be lost sight of, nor the objection founded on them to be waived. It must be *met*, and we need hardly add there is no difficulty in its removal. Had it been otherwise this investigation would not have been undertaken. Had it been true, as some assert, that in face of these solemn and

[1] Mark xiii. 32, 33.

Digitized by Google

emphatic Scripture assertions we ought to be silent on this question of the time of the end; had it been true, as is *assumed* in this objection, that these statements apply as fully to the *last* as to the *first* generation of the Christian Church; had it been true, as the objection also implies, that the God who has *given* chronologic prophecy in Scripture *does not intend the gift ever to become of practical value to His people, by permitting such prophecy to be understood;* had these things been true, we should never have undertaken the research of which the results are here presented. That research was commenced and continued under a conviction that the exact reverse is the truth; that so far from fearing to intrude into forbidden regions by such sacred studies, we might look for Divine light in pursuing them, seeing it is promised that in this "time of the end" the saints *shall* understand, as previous generations could not do, the chronologic predictions of Scripture.

We are the more careful to examine and remove this popular objection, because its results are widespread and serious. On the one hand, it disinclines many sober-minded Christians to study the subject at all, because they conceive light on it to be unattainable; and on the other, it drives not a few to the adoption of the futurist system of interpretation—a system which we earnestly believe to be seriously injurious to the Church, as depriving her of a much-needed bulwark to her own faith, and of an invaluable advantage in the present conflict with infidelity, by robbing her of the cogent and unanswerable argument of fulfilled and fulfilling prophecy. Futurism, by insisting on the literality of the symbols of time employed in symbolic prophecies, makes the predicted periods to be only a few years in duration, and thus finds no difficulty in assigning them all to the future, and in asserting that there *are* no chronologic prophecies relative to the Christian dispensation, and that the Church is left in ignorance as to her own present position in the stream of time. This is to rob the "more sure word of prophecy" —that "light that shineth in a dark place"—of some of its brightest rays, and to deprive this incredulous age of *the great and ever-present miracle*, with which, by the true interpretation, it is confronted.

Digitized by Google

It should be recognised that this objection is of course *a fundamental one*, and lies against all study of chronologic prophecy in the light of history, independent of any specific results arrived at. If we are bound to shrink with a religious horror from definite conclusions, *we say not as to the day or hour, but as to the general period* of the second advent, it were a clear folly to enter on investigations which must needs issue in such conclusions. There can be no question that the great historical predictions of Daniel lead up to the establishment of the kingdom of God on earth, that is, to the end of all *Gentile* monarchy—including that of antichrist; to the cleansing of the sanctuary, or Holy Land, from all Gentile oppressors, to the first resurrection and to the era of blessedness: in a word, to events which, as we learn from other Scriptures, are *synchronous* with the second advent.

Now these predictions contain *distinct chronologic statements;* so that the more closely we study and the more clearly we understand them, the more nearly we must *needs* approximate to a knowledge of the position of the second coming of Christ, not only in a series of historical events, but in a definite period of time. Hence if such knowledge be dangerous, such study should be avoided, for moral and mental danger must be shunned as cautiously as physical risk. If the ice be thin, we must refrain from going on it; if the vessel be unseaworthy, we ought not to embark. *But we are not at liberty to refrain from the study of chronological prophecy, any more than from the study of any other part of Scripture.* It is especially commended to us as a subject to which we *do well to take heed*, as one which both saints and angels in other days desired to look into, as one which carries with it peculiar blessing; and it is one in connexion with which there is the special promise that *it shall be understood* in this "time of the end." It cannot therefore be a duty to neglect it lest we *should* receive light, lest we should come to understand with some clearness "what manner of *time*" the Spirit of God has signified as the duration of this present Gentile age. There must be some explanation of this seeming inconsistency!

It should moreover be remembered that our Lord Himself

Digitized by Google

made use, not only of the expressions on which the objection we are considering is founded, *but also made use of others which inculcate the opposite duty of observing "the signs of the times," and of drawing from them the legitimate conclusions as to the proximity of His return.* He not only said, "Of that day and that hour knoweth no man," but He also said, "When ye shall see all these things, *know that it is near, even at the doors*"; "when ye see these things come to pass, *know ye* that *the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.*" Our Lord thus inculcated constant watchfulness and hopeful expectation, on two distinct and contrasted grounds: first, on that of His people's *ignorance* of the exact time of His return; and, secondly, on that of their *knowledge*, derived from fulfilled predictions, that it must be close at hand. He said, "Ye know not," and He said, "Know ye." He taught the same double truth in His parables. On the one hand, it was uncertain whether it would be in the first, second, or third watch of the night that the Lord of the servants would return to his household; on the other, it was "after a long time" that the master, who had taken his journey into a far country, came and reckoned with his servants. Again, there would go forth the midnight cry, "Behold, the Bridegroom cometh!" and then the indefinite waiting of the virgins would give place to immediate expectation.

The real question is, Which of these two attitudes better becomes Christians at the end of the nineteenth century? Should ours be merely the watchfulness based on *utter ignorance* of the times, or should it not rather be the earnest expectation and hope based on *knowledge?* Each in its season is good and right, for each has been expressly commanded; but for which is *this* the season? It is clear that the two states of mind cannot co-exist, they mutually exclude each other. Surely the explanation of the apparent inconsistency is, that the former style of watchfulness was adapted to the first disciples of Christ and to the early Church, and the latter to the Church of these last days. The statements about *not* knowing the times and seasons are applicable to those who as a matter of fact *did not know them*, but actually expected the return of Christ in their own day; and the statements about *knowing* them, to those who have learned

Digitized by Google

by experience that a period of eighteen hundred years at least was appointed in the councils of eternity to intervene between the departure of Christ and His return in glory.

It is self-evident that in respect of their knowledge of the true length of the Christian dispensation, these two classes, owing to the lapse of time, occupy wholly different ground, and that, but for chronologic prophecy, the Church of these last days would be exposed to fearful disadvantages compared with the early Church. The true length of this age was of course from the first known to God, but He did not reveal it to the early Church. He gave them general promises, like, "Behold, I come quickly"; "Yet a little while, and the coming One shall come, and will not tarry"; but He did not specify whether the interval was to be brief, according to human reckoning, or only according to the Divine scale of "one day is with the Lord as a thousand years." Did He therefore deceive them? No; but He allowed them to remain in ignorance of things it was better for them not to know, and that because He loved them, and sought their comfort and sanctification. Had *they* been informed beforehand of the predestined twelve centuries of apostasy and persecution, they would have been deprived of the cheering hope that they might be of the number who would be alive and remain at the second advent. What help would it have been to the martyrs under pagan Rome to look down the long, dark vista of ages, and behold the worse martyrdoms under Papal Rome? What present influence could an advent promised at the end of well-nigh two thousand years have had in cheering and strengthening and purifying the early Church? None! The knowledge would have paralysed faith and hope and courage. *Their ignorance was best for them*, and God, in mercy, did not remove it.

But we of these last days are *not* ignorant of the facts of the case. A strange and momentous historic drama of which they little dreamed, the great apostasy of the Christian Church, the long ages of Papal usurpation, corruption, and persecution, all lie open before *our* eyes on the page of history.

"A knowledge of the limits of the great anti-Christian apostasy would not now deprive us of hope, but the very

Digitized by Google

contrary; in fact, we need some such revelation to sustain our faith and hope to the end of the long delay; without the chronological data afforded us by the prophecies of Daniel and John, we should be in a position of fearful temptation to doubt and despair. The early Church was entirely ignorant of the length of the interval which we know to have occurred, and this knowledge absolutely prevents the general promises of the nearness of the second advent from having the same power over us that they had over it. Those statements cannot convey to us, after a lapse of well-nigh two thousand years, the impressions they conveyed to the primitive saints. They seemed to justify them in expecting the coming of Christ in their own day; but each succeeding generation would have less and less ground for such an expectation; and when the promise was already one thousand years old, who could avoid the reflection, 'Since it has included one thousand years, it may include another'? We, after nearly two thousand years, could not, as we read the promise, escape the conviction, that, having already included two thousand years, it was perfectly possible that two thousand more were yet to come. Each century of delay would thus increase the heart-sickness of hope deferred, and the Church of these last days might well hang down her head in the sorrowful but irresistible conviction that her redemption might still be at an immeasurable distance; she could have no well grounded hope that the Lord was, in any strict sense, 'at hand.'

"Now one generation of His saints is as dear to God as another; we may be sure He did not secure the holiness and happiness of the early Church at the expense of ours, nor conceal what might be a blessing to us, because the knowledge might not have been a blessing to them. No; He provided some better thing for us, than that we should float uncertainly on the stream of time, not knowing whether we were any nearer to the future than to the past advent of Christ. He revealed, but revealed in a mystery, all the main events of this dispensation, and nearly two-thirds of its duration; He revealed them in just such a way, as best to secure a renewal of hope that should give consolation, and revive in these last times a 'patient waiting for Christ.' Since continued ignorance of the true nature and length of this dis-

Digitized by Google

pensation, as determined beforehand in the counsels of God, would have produced the very opposite effects designed by the permission of temporary ignorance, we have every reason to conclude that God would in due time replace this latter by knowledge, and give a gradually increasing understanding of the inspired predictions."*

The change from utter ignorance to *comparatively* full knowledge on the subject of the chronologic measures of this Gentile age has been, and was doubtless intended to be, gradual and progressive through its entire course. It has been secured by a gradually increasing *comprehension* of the symbolic prophecies of Daniel and the Apocalypse. These have slowly become clear in the light of history, and their true *scale*, suspected and vaguely suggested, but always wrongly applied by earlier generations of students, has since the Reformation been demonstrated with ever-increasing distinctness. In the focussed light of all the facts mentioned in our chronological chapter, *our* position in the time of the end seems indicated with such a measure of exactness, that knowledge ought assuredly to be to us a far mightier motive to patient waiting for Christ than ignorance.

We add on this point some of the weighty and last words of another, whose cautious and reverent spirit, combined with clear, intelligent grasp of these subjects, has never been excelled.

"We are often reminded that the secret things belong to the Lord our God; and doubtless, even in searching God's holy prophecies, the spirit of that caution may be transgressed by a vain curiosity and irreverent boldness. But when the words are perverted into an absolute prohibition, the rest of the verse supplies a conclusive answer. *The things that are revealed belong to us and to our children.* Surely every part of God's word is a revelation. To number it among the secret things which are best honoured by neglect is really to fling back the Divine gift in the face of Him who bestows it. He solemnly declares that all inspired Scripture is profitable for us, and that whatever is written therein is written for our learning. Who are we that we should pretend to be wiser than God, or profess that some of His revealed sayings would have been more wisely kept back from us? as if our neglect were to remedy the unwise loquacity of the Spirit of God!"

* See "The Approaching End of the Age," p. 87.

Digitized by Google

Perhaps the most common objection to the study of chronologic prophecy is based upon our Lord's words, "It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in His own power" (Acts 1. 7).

"These words however, when searched narrowly, are a strong warrant for an inquiry into the times and seasons of prophecy, while they suggest a needful caution for its due exercise. The words are not general, as our version seems to imply, but special. 'It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath reserved in His own power.' There is here a direct allusion to a text familiar to the apostles, and which explains the true meaning of the answer. Daniel (chapter xii.) had heard two angels put the inquiry, 'How long shall it be to the end of these wonders?' The Son of God replies with a solemn oath, that 'it shall be for a season, and seasons, and half a season; and when He shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these things shall be finished.' The prophet then asks for further light, but receives the answer, 'The words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end.'

"The answer then of our Lord to His apostles on earth is only the echo of His reply to the prophet in the vision. The event spoken of is clearly the same in both, the restoration of the kingdom to Israel, and the end of the scattering of the holy people. The seasons of delay before the event were sealed *till the time of the end;* until then the Father, by the lips of the Covenant Angel, had expressly reserved them in His own power. The disciples asked the time of that restoration. Our Lord, as if pointing them to the words of Daniel, introduces the very term employed in the vision, 'It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in His own power.' As if He had said, 'The time of which you speak follows certain seasons of predicted delay; and these seasons have been reserved at present from a complete revelation, until the Father Himself, at the time of the end, shall begin to unseal them.'

"We have thus a threefold and fourfold answer to the objection. First, the words are *not general as to all times*, but refer specially to the three times and a half which were to be sealed and closed until a later period. Secondly, they are *not general as to Christians*, but relate with a marked emphasis to the apostles themselves, and Christians *in their day*. 'Such knowledge,' our Lord implies, 'may be hereafter given to others, but it is not for *you*. Another work is assigned *you*, to found the Church, and spread the gospel through the world.' It is only when the faith of the Gentiles begins to decay that the Father will unseal the times of that blessed hope which will be as life from the dead to the unbelieving world. And hence, further, they are a secret assurance that there will be other Christians of a later age, to whom these times *will* be unsealed, as those of Jeremiah were to Daniel himself, shortly before their close.

"The words of Christ, 'Of that day and that hour knoweth no man,

Digitized by Google

no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father,' are also viewed as a clear censure on all these inquiries. How far the spirit of this caution extends may require much spiritual wisdom to determine: but conclusions loosely and rashly drawn from it have nothing to sustain them. First, the assertion is strictly true *only of the time when our Saviour spoke;* for surely with regard to the Son of God, they must have ceased to be true when He was risen and ascended into glory. Our Lord Himself, since they were uttered, has received in His human nature immeasurable wisdom; and we may infer that His Church also, though in measures infinitely short of His own, will receive from age to age a like increase. Again, the words refer to the day and the hour, not to the *year*, much less to the *generation* in which that great event will occur. *Minute* conjectures on the time of the advent may still be forbidden us, and the spirit of the caution may extend itself beyond the strict letter; but still the spirit of the previous verse, 'When ye shall see these things begin to come to pass, *know that it is nigh, even at the doors*,' has a voice not less plain, and speaks with the same authority. The first generation of the Church there is made a precedent for the last, and leads us to expect that Christians, whenever that generation has come, will be able to ascertain it, and may know by clear signs that the Lord is really near at hand." [1]

2. The second obvious and easy objection which will be alleged against our exposition is *the repeated failures* which have attended previous attempts to demonstrate the limits of the prophetic periods and to indicate the probable date of the end of this age. A little consideration will show the baseless nature of this objection.

The frankly admitted fact that the study of chronologic prophecy has led to premature anticipations of the end, is no more an objection to its divinely intended use, than is the still more conspicuous fact that the general promises of Scripture as to the coming of the Lord have done the same. Not more than twenty generations have elapsed since the study of *chronologic* prophecy began to be pursued; while sixty generations at least have been exposed to erroneous anticipations based on non-chronologic predictions. If we are justified in declining investigation of the revealed "times and seasons," because such investigation has led to some false anticipations, we should also be justified in paying no attention to the general promises of Christ's speedy advent

[1] Rev. T. R. Birks: "Thoughts on the Times and Seasons of Sacred Prophecy."

Digitized by Google

which have thus led to tenfold more numerous disappointments. The fact is, that such disappointments are no argument against the value of either class of predictions, but are, on the contrary, *an intended and inevitable result* of both the one and the other.

It is perfectly evident from all the statements of the New Testament on the subject that the Lord desired all the generations of His Church to live in *continual expectation of His return*. It is equally certain that in the Divine councils a period of about nineteen centuries was appointed to elapse before that event should take place. What wonder then that promise and prophecy were so bestowed as to secure the maintenance of watchfulness through all the nineteen Christian centuries? That this is what has been done is evident from the objection that premature and mistaken expectations of the end have *always* prevailed in the Church. Such is the case, and there *are* instances on record in which these expectations have done temporary harm, by unsettling the minds of the weak and unstable, as in the Thessalonian Church for instance, in very early days, and among the Millerites and others in America in recent times. But such premature anticipations have *as a rule* had, as they were designed to have, a beneficial effect on the different sections of the Church in which they have prevailed. They have tended to cheer and strengthen those who have sincerely entertained them; to encourage separation from the world, study of Scripture, and practical earnestness in the work of evangelization. *These were the effects intended, and history testifies that these have generally been the effects produced.*

It must not be rashly and wrongly assumed that God has intentionally deceived His people on this point. He has simply withheld from them, and for a time, light which He might have given, but which it would have been injurious for them to have received too soon. Tender seedling plants cannot bear the blaze of the noonday sun, and a wise husbandman shields them from it until it will be beneficial rather than harmful; in due time it will be the best tonic they can have, and absolutely indispensable to the final ripening of the fruit. So as to this truth of the appointed length of the Christian dispensation. There was a time

Digitized by Google

when the infant Church would have withered and drooped under it; the fore-view of eighteen hundred years of apostasy and persecution would have destroyed its hope, and have been too severe a test of its faith. To the Church of these last days, on the other hand, light as to the limits of this age of long suffering with sin is not only good but indispensable. That such light should dawn on the Church, and brighten gradually as needed, was by Divine wisdom arranged for and secured by the use of *two sorts of predictions: general ones, adapted to earlier ages, and chronological ones, intended for the last days.* That the latter should not be prematurely understood was secured by the use of symbols for the periods of time, as well as for the events. Church history proves that this prevented premature discovery, and present experience proves that it has secured the right reading of the mysterious revelation by the light of its own fulfilment in these last days, when its comprehension is a needful aid to faith and hope.

Why should we deem it unlikely that God should on this subject allow the truth to be concealed for a time? How much scientific truth of immense practical value to mankind did He permit to remain unknown until this nineteenth century! It was reserved for this "time of the end" for the wise to understand many things. What if early attempts to understand chronologic prophecy were erroneous? Do we doubt and despise the conclusions of astronomy because the astrologers of other days had erroneous notions? Do we ridicule the early and clumsy attempts to adapt to each other steam-power and machinery because they did not immediately produce such power-looms and locomotives as those of our own day? Why then despise early and incorrect attempts to read the riddle of prophetic chronology?

As this point is one of considerable importance, we will give a further answer to the objection in the well-chosen words of the author previously quoted.

"These successive anticipations are just what it was reasonable to expect. Only by this gradual approach to a correct view of the times and seasons could the two main purposes have been fulfilled—growing knowledge of the prophecy, with a constant and unbroken expectation of

Digitized by Google

the Lord's coming. The fact therefore is so far from refuting the theory, that it might rather be viewed as a direct corollary from its truth. The objection, in reality, assumes that the Church must either be in total ignorance of the times, or vault at once nto the possession of exact and perfect knowledge. Either she must entirely renounce the use of the prophetic dates, as having no connexion with her past history, and float in a complete uncertainty concerning her own place in the stream of providence, or else may claim to decide with unerring exactness on the very year in which particular events shall be fulfilled. Now this is a monstrous alternative to propose; neither Scripture nor reason lend it the slightest warrant. . . .

"Let us now suppose that the year-day theory is the Divine instrument for conveying to the Church this partial light. Every exposition based on it must then partake of two opposite characters. Compared with the exciting prospect of the instant coming of Christ, as entertained in the Thessalonian Church, it would be a protraction; measured by the event, or by a full and perfect knowledge, it would be an anticipation. It would serve as ballast to those who were shaken in mind and troubled by a false impression of the imminent nearness of the judgment; and it would be a wholesome stimulus to the slothful servant who should say in his heart, 'My Lord delayeth His coming.' Now these, *which are the very marks of its practical worth*, form the two counts of the inconsistent indictment which has been laid against it. 'It interferes with the expectation of the advent.' That is to say in reality, it serves from age to age for a partial corrective of false anticipations, like that of the Thessalonians. 'It has repeatedly failed in its predictions, ministered occasion to the scoffers, and thrown discredit on the study of prophecy.' In other words, it has not prematurely revealed the whole interval while the end was still distant, nor given more light to earlier generations of the Church than was profitable for them to receive. It has ministered occasion to the scoffer, and in so doing has fulfilled the prediction that none of the wicked shall understand; while, by the gradual approaches to a just estimate of the times, it has fulfilled the contrasted promise, that knowledge shall be increased, and that the wise shall understand. The opposite objections urged against it are the very proof of its adaptation to the wants of the Church. . . .

"The successive failures, as they have been called, are no real failures in a practical sense. They are only waymarks in the progress of the Church from that entire ignorance of the times in which she was purposely left in the apostolic age to the full and certain knowledge that the Bridegroom is at hand, which shall prepare her, like the wise virgins, to enter in with her Lord to the marriage feast."

But we must go further than this, and remind those who object on the ground of *false* anticipations, that to the system here expounded may be traced many *true* anticipations of a very remarkable character—anticipations which can hardly

Digitized by Google

be accounted for save on the ground of the truth of the system which led to them. Some of these anticipations were absolutely correct; others correct within a year or two; and it should be remembered that the growth of light is always gradual, and that only within the last few years has astronomy lent its aid to chronological calculations. In the earliest ages of the Church chronologic prophecy was, as it was intended to be, *absolutely an enigma;* Bible students felt it to be so, and only occasionally hazarded remarks on the subject. Only in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries did any real light begin to *dawn*. A great step was made when the year-day principle of interpreting the periods was recognised; though for some centuries they were dated from altogether wrong starting-points, and attention was directed exclusively to the second half of the great week, the dates of the captivity era never being used as starting-points, nor the whole "seven times" taken into account.

The era of the Reformation witnessed a great advance in prophetic interpretation, as it was then that the true character of the Papal antichrist was first generally recognised. Aritius, an expositor who died in 1574, saw and taught the year-day theory, but dated the 1,260 years from Constantine's establishment of imperial Christianity, A.D. 312; he consequently expected the period to run out in his own days. David Chytræus, in 1571, suggested that the period might perhaps be measured from Alaric's destruction of Rome, A.D. 412, and so run out in A.D. 1692; he thought it more likely that it was dated from the edict of Phocas, 606, and hence that it would run out in 1866. Pareus, writing in 1608, fixes on the same date, as did also many later expositors; they were justified by the result, for the four years 1866–70 were, as we have shown, *critical and terminal* in the existence of the temporal power of the Papacy.

Robert Fleming, in his work on "The Rise and Fall of Rome Papal," *published in the year* 1701, anticipated the years 1794 and 1848 as great *crises* in the downfall of the Papacy, even as we know they proved to be; and he added, "Yet we are not to imagine these events will totally destroy the Papacy, for we find it is still in being and alive when the next vial is poured out." There were no signs

Digitized by Google

when Fleming wrote at the commencement of the eighteenth century, of the awful revolutionary crisis that was to arise ere its close, still less of the events of the revolutionary year 1848. He was led to select them *solely* by chronologic prophecy; and so were the *numerous* writers who, long before the years 1866–70, pointed out that those years were destined to be most critical ones in the downfall of despotic power and Papal usurpation, many of them definitely predicting the cessation of the temporal power. Similarly the date of the Greek insurrection, and of other stages in the fall of Turkey, have been foreseen and indicated beforehand by students of the prophetic word.

3. One objection likely to be raised against this whole exposition is, that it deals with so large a number of events and of dates, and that some of them do not seem to be of first rate importance. It will be said that with three scales of measurements, and a variety of points to measure from and to, it is easy to make out anything, and that the very multiplicity of coincidences decreases confidence in the worth of any of them. Now while such an impression may naturally arise from a first and perhaps superficial survey of the subject, yet closer study and more careful examination will turn it from an objection to a powerful corroboration. The best reply is a glance at the diagram, which shows

I. That the still unfulfilled chronological periods announced in Scripture, and here considered, are four, and four only.

i. The 2,520 years or "seven times," or great comprehensive *week* of the prophetic calendar.

ii. Its latter half, the 1,260 years, or three and a half times of the Papal and Mohammedan apostasies.

iii. The shortened form or the 2,300 years of the eastern sanctuary cycle dating from the Persian restoration era.

iv. The final time of Rev. x.

Hence there is no great multiplicity of periods. The other prophecies alluded to, such as the sixty-five years to the fall of Ephraim, the seventy years of Judah's captivity, and the 490 from the Persian restoration era to the Messianic era at the first advent, are all of course *fulfilled predictions*, and bear on the question of the end of this age mainly as

Digitized by Google

affording lessons as to the style of fulfilment to be expected at the close of the longer periods. It is from them we learn the two great principles: that all the different astronomic measures of the year are employed in chronologic prophecy; and that such predicted periods extend, not merely between specific years, but also between eras of wider extent.

II. A glance at the diagram shows also that the commencing and closing eras of these long periods, the briefest of which extends over more than three centuries, are, though actually long, *relatively very short*. To the periods themselves they bear just such a relation as infancy and old age generally bear to mature life, such a relation as the growth and the decay of an oak tree bear to its whole existence—in other words, a natural relation. National changes are as a rule slow. Vast empires are not consolidated in a year, and world-wide dominion does not suddenly collapse; the movements of history are as gradual as are the processes of nature. It is difficult to decide the year in which the youth stops growing, and "coming of age" has to be fixed at an arbitrary point. So the rise and fall of empires cannot be assigned to *exact dates*, but must needs occupy *eras* more or less prolonged.

On the other hand, it is no less certain that in such eras several dates will naturally stand out as critical, some more decidedly so than others; but many will mark *stages* of development and decay. Surely no objection should lie against an exposition because it takes into account facts so harmonious with the laws of nature! If it would be accepted as a proof of Divine inspiration that a predicted period should prove to have elapsed between any *two* given dates, is not the proof strengthened when it is demonstrated that the same period similarly extends between *all* the corresponding crises of the commencing and terminal eras? Not only did the seventy years of the Babylonish captivity elapse between Nebuchadnezzar's first invasion of Judah, B.C. 605, and the decree of Cyrus, B.C. 536, they also elapsed between the final destruction of Jerusalem, B.C. 587, and the fourth year of Darius, B.C. 517. Not only did seventy weeks extend from the edicts of Artaxerxes to the cutting off of "Messiah the Prince," but they also extended between

Digitized by Google

the *different* crises of the Persian restoration era and the Messianic era. This principle, *proved by history* to have governed the accomplishments of the *fulfilled* predictions, we have applied to the still partially unfulfilled predictions, and the result proves that it holds good so far, leading to the anticipation that it will do so to the close.

As to *the three astronomic scales*, we know that they are all employed both in human computations and in Divine predictions; that the two fulfilled predictions to which we have just alluded were, for instance, actually measured on both lunar and solar scales; hence we feel warranted in using all three, and the result shows that they are intended to be so applied.

As regards the *character of the events* which we have pointed out in the critical eras, it should be remembered that they are indicated only as *links in a chain;* they must not be considered as isolated events, but as units in a group, members of a series. Standing alone, some of them might seem comparatively unimportant, but collectively they make up *historical movements whose critical nature cannot be questioned.* Strike out half the dates if you will, you cannot strike out the historical movement as a whole; it is there, prominent in the records of history, conspicuous as a fulfilment of prophecy. Each of its stages derives its importance from its relation to all the rest. The abdication, for instance, of Charles X. and of Louis Philippe, and the fall of Napoleon III., may not have been occurrences of the first magnitude; but they were clearly links in the chain of events which overthrew Papal supremacy in Europe, and that overthrow *is* an event of supreme importance to the human race, and of vital connexion with the themes of prophecy. So as to Kainardje, Carlowitz, the Crimean War, and the Treaty of Berlin; looked at as standing alone, they may rank as comparatively unimportant in their influence on the history of the people of God; but looked at as stages of the overthrow of the once mighty and dreaded anti-Christian Turkish empire, as the first fatal blows to a power which still hinders the restoration of the Jews to Palestine, their important relation to the prophetic programme cannot be fairly denied.

Each of the events of a series, if taken singly and sepa-

Digitized by Google

rately, may lose entirely the character it bears when regarded in all its connexions. A destructive swarm of locusts, for instance, is no unusual occurrence in Egypt, and an objector might well refuse to regard it as any special Divine judgment. But when it occurs as one of ten plagues, which issue in a predicted result so remarkable as the exodus of Israel from Egypt, who can refuse to recognise its true character? So as to the various stages of the judgments under which the Papacy and Mohammedanism are perishing. They resemble the plagues of Egypt in this respect, that they are distinct and successive inflictions, from no one of which is there any real recovery, whose effects are consequently cumulative, though the end in view, the utter destruction of the adverse power, is not accomplished exclusively by them, but by direct Divine interference at last.

Moreover careful examination will show that these events, which fell out at the various closes of the prophetic periods, as measured from their successive starting-points, comprise really *all* the critical stages of the movement in question which have happened so far. Will any one indicate events having a vital connexion with the fall of the Papacy and Mohammedanism, other than those which sacred prophecy has thus indicated?

It may be said that we have not alluded to the Reformation, which was the most important factor in the decay and the fall of the Papacy. That is true; but the Reformation was a *spiritual*, and not a *political* movement. The periods of Daniel start from and lead to *political changes*. The Reformation changed the hearts of men and the creeds of Churches, and led in the end to political changes also, but not at the commencement. It does not fall within the chronological range of the "time of the end"; for it is removed as we have seen by a whole prophetic "time" of three hundred and sixty years from the close of the "times of the Gentiles"; and it is consequently made the subject of a separate chronological prediction.

4. Some again may object to the system here developed, on the ground that it is somewhat complicated, involving research and calculation, and lacking in that notable characteristic of all truth, simplicity. It will be alleged that it is

Digitized by Google

the glory of both the moral law and the gospel that children can understand and obey them, and that the ignorant and unlearned can appreciate them; while neither of these classes could follow the reasonings or grasp the conclusions of this investigation. The answer to this objection is that Scripture avowedly contains, not only milk for babes, but solid meat for those of mature intelligence; even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

It is the same with nature; the fundamental and essential laws on which existence depends lie on the surface, and commend themselves to the least developed intelligence. But has nature no precious secrets which she yields only to patient observation, earnest research, and continued meditation and reflection? And are these long-ignored causes and unperceived laws destitute therefore of practical importance? Let the discovery of steam and electricity in the nineteenth century be a reply!

Could the science of geology have been understood and turned to account by simply surveying the surface of the ground? Could the marvellously complex laws of chemistry have been grasped by considering merely the mechanical properties of matter? Can superficial and uncultivated readers appreciate, or even perceive, the literary excellence of Dante or Shakespeare? And are we to imagine that, while human compositions are adapted to the highest intelligence, that the book of God can be fathomed with facility by the weakest and most uncultivated minds? That were a conception altogether derogatory to the dignity of inspiration! Ought we not rather to expect in the oracles of God heights and depths of hidden wisdom which shall utter themselves only to those who earnestly seek wisdom, "watching daily at her gates, and waiting at the posts of her doors"? Simplicity of result in nature arises from arrangements of extreme complexity; as, for instance, the movements of the moon or the planets. To calculate the motions of only three bodies in space in accordance with the laws of gravitation and motion is, as is well known, a problem passing human intelligence.

The *result* of the chronological calculations and historical

Digitized by Google

adaptations which we have endeavoured to indicate is simple enough, and may be expressed in a sentence. It has pleased God to order the revolutions of history in harmony with that law of completion in weeks, by which He has ordered many of the revolutions of nature, and according to which He arranged the typical ritual service of the Jewish people. The Gentile dispensation of the four great empires, whose nature, course, and close is revealed in Daniel, *is a great week*, beginning with the rise of the *typical*, and ending with the fall of the *anti-typical* Babylon, and bisected by the rise of the Papal and Mohammedan powers. This great dispensational week and its sections are measured from the different crises of its commencing era on the different natural scales, the longest of which, the solar, alone is final. There is surely no great complexity in this *result*, though to establish it requires study and research. Herein however the parallel with nature is too exact to warrant objection.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVIII.

REVIEW OF THE HISTORY CONSIDERED.

At this point we feel inclined to put to ourselves and our readers the high priest's question to Stephen, "Are these things so?"

Is it really true that, more than twenty-five centuries ago, our Father in heaven unveiled in symbolic vision to His servant Daniel in Babylon the political future of this evil world? And is it really true that so far the events of all subsequent ages have slowly and perfectly fulfilled the predictions up to a point immediately preceding the close? Is this a fact that cannot be called in question, a fact that candour and common sense themselves are compelled to admit? Because if so, it is *a most astonishing fact*, and one that carries with it conclusions most momentous! It is indeed a fact so wonderful, that a little incredulity is excusable; yet when one returns involuntarily to re-examine the evidence by which it is established and proved, the most careful scrutiny fails to reveal a flaw. Let us consider.

Four great successive world-ruling Gentile empires were, according to the Divine programme, to intervene between Judah's fall and Judah's restoration. Babylon, brief and single; Medo-Persia, double in origin and longer in duration; Greece, one notable king, and then *four* kingdoms; Rome, one vast, terrible, all-subduing empire, and then *ten* separate kingdoms. In the midst of these last a strange, new kind of dominion was to spring up and last for 1,260 years—a wicked, blaspheming, idolatrous, persecuting power, which, after a long career of iniquity and cruelty, would be first gradually consumed towards the end, and then suddenly destroyed by the brightness of Christ's coming, and succeeded by the everlasting kingdom of the Son of man and the saints.

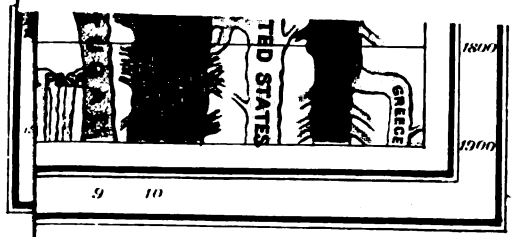
Digitized by Google

Such was the sketch presented in the far away days of ancient Babylon. Have events falsified or fulfilled it? Let us glance at this chronological chart, hanging on the college wall to teach students the course of history from the earliest times to our own day. It was originally published in Germany, and was designed with no idea of illustrating prophecy, but simply to convey the facts of history. It represents the successive kingdoms that have existed among men, as so many rivers of different hues running down across the centuries, now mingling their streams and then again dividing; numbers of them absorbed at times into great lake-like empires which swallowed up all their neighbours for a time, and broke up again into fragments when their day of dominion was over. The chart traces the course of all nations from the remotest times to the present day; but as the Daniel outline does not go beyond the days of Nebuchadnezzar, we present here, for convenience' sake, only that *chronological* section of it which dates from the eighth century before Christ, and which covers the twenty-five centuries of the "times of the Gentiles," and only that *geographical* portion of it which represents the sphere of the four great empires contemplated in prophecy. Is there any general correspondence to be noted between the facts of history as here presented and the foreview of Daniel in Babylon?

The first glance gives the reply; there *is* a most marked and unmistakable correspondence; We see the many rivers of divers nationalities traversing the centuries perpendicularly, and there are certain lake-like expansions crossing the chart horizontally, *in* which many of the rivers merge, and *from* which others again emerge. These represent the old-world empires which devoured the earth in their day of dominion; *how many* such does the chart present?

Four, and only four. BABYLON, comparatively small and very brief in duration, up there at the top of the chart, in the early ages of humanity, swallowing up however Syria, Assyria, Phœnicia, Judah, Israel, Egypt, the principal nations of the then known world; MEDO-PERSIA, larger and longer; GREECE, wider by far, but short and breaking up quickly into a few main divisions; and lastly, broad and long and all embracing beyond the rest, ROME, the most conspicuous empire

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

on the whole chart, as it is the most prominent subject in prophecy and history. Rome, the iron empire, that lorded it so long over the known world, far reaching, long lasting, mighty by its mental force as well as by its military power, its impress resting even to this day on the world it once governed, on the laws and literature of western Europe. The great *central subject* of Daniel's prophecy is beyond all question *the great central object* on the chart of history, as it appears to the eye of the mere secular historian; and as surely as Divine prediction said, "This shall be," so surely do historic records reply, "This has been." As to the first half of the prophetic programme, there can be no doubt that the historian, as he looked back, saw the very same succession of events which the prophet saw as he looked forward—four great successive Gentile empires.

And what as to the second half of the story, so curiously contrasted to the first in character? The rule of ROME was to endure to the end, but to undergo a strange transformation. No other world-wide Gentile empire was to replace Rome, as Rome had replaced its predecessors; the glorious kingdom of God was to arise on *its* fall, and Gentile empire to cease for ever. But long prior to this fall, the *one* empire of Rome was to become multiple, *tenfold*—a commonwealth of kingdoms, yet *a Roman world still.* It was to break up, not into two, nor into four, but into *ten* independent co-existing kingdoms, which were to last for over twelve centuries; varying contiuually in number, extent, and mutual relation; never again coalescing into one, never subdividing into forty or fifty fragments, never forming into one great federation like the United States, but continuing in isolated independence, to average ten in number right on the end, *owning all the time a voluntary submission to Rome under a new aspect.*

This was a very singular prediction, and it may well have suggested to students perplexing and insoluble questions before it was interpreted by events. Again we earnestly scan the chart, to see how to the eye of the mere historian, who knows nothing of Daniel's predictions, the story of western Europe during the last twelve or thirteen centuries presents itself. We observe that the lower half of the chart is occupied by ten or twelve constantly changing, oft mingling

Digitized by Google

and afresh dividing streams, which never merge into one common lake as before, but preserve their separate courses. We see that by confluence these streams are sometimes reduced to less than ten, and by separation sometimes divided into more than the normal number, but that *on an average* that number is strictly maintained throughout the whole twelve centuries. Prominent among all these Gothic kingdoms of western Europe, and carrying on the dominion of old Rome after the deadly wound of Gothic conquest, we note *the scarlet line of the Roman Papacy*, which, though just one among the rest of the ten kingdoms as to its secular power, and a small one as to its territorial extent, was yet, as we know, for long ages *the ruler over all the rest;* was, as we know, through its blasphemous spiritual pretensions, the acknowledged *head* of Latin Christendom, *the bond of union in the Roman Catholic world all through the middle ages.*

Further. The prophecy affixes chronological limits to the secular dominion of this last ruling power of the Roman world; it was to *cease* to exist as a horn, or temporal power, after 1,260 years, in this "time of the end." We run the eye down to the bottom of the chart, and, lo! we see the line of the Papal dominion turned aside, and merging, as Tuscany and Naples had previously done, in the broad, newborn stream of a united Italy. We see it disappearing from among the secular powers of Europe, obliterated, absorbed, defunct! We run the eye back to the origin of the stream, and see it emerging from the Gothic flood in the sixth century, and running onward with steady flow through twelve and a half centuries of time; then vanishing and disappearing altogether. Could prediction and fulfilment agree more closely? The future was sketched in words by the prophet; the past is here, sketched in form and colour by the historian; and the two absolutely agree together. *The recent unification of the German empire and of the Italian kingdom have brought back the number of the states occupying the sphere of old Rome to the normal ten.* Were Hanover, Bavaria, Würtemburg, and Saxony separate kingdoms, as not long since, or were Belgium and Holland one united kingdom of the Netherlands as formerly, the number of states in Roman Christendom would not be ten. Were Bohemia and Hungary separate

Digitized by Google

from Austria, as once, or were Switzerland part of that empire, as it was for centuries, the number again would not be ten. At the foot of the chart we see the actually existing state of things, and no calculation can make either more or less than *ten* kingdoms, the divisions of *the Roman world* at the present day; the German empire, the Austrian empire, Belgium, Holland, Switzerland, France, Italy, Spain, Portugal, and Great Britain. If only those streams which can be traced back into the old Roman empire be counted, it will be seen at once that this has been the average number of the kingdoms of Latin Christendom through the last twelve centuries.[1]

We hesitate not to assert that it is impossible for a candid reader acquainted with the book of Daniel to let the eye drink in the meaning of this historical chart, carrying the mind back as it does over the complex history of countless millions of mankind in different lands and ages for two and a half millenniums, without being impressed, first, by the contrast between its upper and lower portions, the earlier and later sections of the history; and secondly, by the correspondence of both halves with the outline revealed two thousand five hundred years ago to Daniel. The two agree together, and utter with one voice the same programme: *first, four empires; then ten kingdoms.*

Now in the nature of the case there seems no reason why these two stages should have occurred in this order, why they should thus have been *distinct* and *successive;* no reason why Charlemagne or Napoleon should have so signally failed to reunite the broken fragments of the territory of old

[1] The northern nations, Norway, Sweden, Denmark, and Russia, and the eastern nations, which territorially belong to the Greek and not to the Roman empire, (though subject to it in its golden days,) do not of course enter into the calculation of the kingdoms occupying the territory of Rome proper. There is as permanent a distinction between *the geographical spheres* of the four empires, as between their chronological period. Neither overlap each other: *i.e.*, the body of each "beast" is distinct from his dominion for a time over other "beasts." Each empire actually governed *all* in its day of dominion, but it had, nevertheless, its own proper sphere, Dan. vii. 12. "They had their *dominion* taken away, yet their *lives* were prolonged." Persia remains distinct from Greece, and Greece from Rome.

Digitized by Google

Rome; no reason why for twelve centuries every effort to do this should have proved utterly futile; no reason why *ten* instead of twenty or thirty should have been the average number of the kingdoms of Latin Christendom: no reason why the power of the Papacy should have lasted twelve and a half centuries. These things cannot have been brought to pass by human *will*, any more than they could have been *foreseen by human intelligence* in the days of Daniel. They are far too great, too complex, too unmanageable to have been manipulated by man, and far too manifold to have been merely imagined. Did any mere man ever venture or even pretend to predict the political and chronological features of history for thousands of years in advance? The only credible and rational account of the matter is the true one: that these revelations were inspired by God, to whom there is neither past nor future, but an eternal present; that holy men of old spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

But the more profoundly reflection impresses this fact on the mind, the more firm and broad and immovable becomes the foundation for the further and inexpressibly glorious conclusion. The long series of events condensed into Daniel's brief but pregnant sentences *has all but reached its end*, and as surely as Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome pagan and papal followed each other in a sorrowful succession of God-ignoring and man-oppressing empires, filling the earth like wild beasts with war, rapine, bloodshed, misery and death, ruling in unrighteousness and rioting in iniquity, to the confusion and despair of humanity,—*so surely* shall they be followed, and that right speedily, by the kingdom of the Son of man and of the saints—the blessed, peaceful, glorious, long foretold, long prayed for, and long expected KINGDOM OF GOD.

This is no fantastic fiction of dreamy philosophers, no vague imagination of mystic or theorist; it is simply the inevitable inference from the unquestionable facts of the case. If a long and complex series of events, comprising the history of scores of nations for over thousands of years, has fallen out in entire harmony with biblical prediction so far, would it not be madness to doubt that the brief remainder will do the same? The outline given was clear and com-

Digitized by Google

prehensive; there was nothing hazy or obscure about its commencing, central, or closing events. It did not consist of generalities that might mean anything or nothing: four great Gentile empires, and four only, were to rule over the people of God; and the fourth was to be broken into ten, and to last in that broken condition to the end. In the midst of the fragments was to be developed a strange, new, and evil politico-religious power, which would exalt itself against God, oppose the truth, destroy the saints, and after 1,260 years bring down Divine judgment on itself and its confederates. Such a power and such a state of things had never existed in Daniel's day, and they must have been well-nigh inconceivable to his mind; yet he foretold them, and we know that *they came*. Succeeding centuries, as they have rolled over the world, have only fitted the events of history into this framework of chronologic prophecy. His chronology is marked by features which link it in entire harmony with much that we know of the works and of the word of God, and leaves us no room to doubt that the end of the present phase of God's providential government of the world is close at hand, and that the Jewish people, the Gentile nations, and the Christian Church are all three about to enter on entirely new experiences.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIX.

THE PROSPECT BEFORE US.

PREMILLENNIAL EVIDENCE.

WHAT is to succeed these "times of the Gentiles"? Scripture clearly states that they are to be followed by the manifested kingdom of God on earth—immediately by its first section, the blessed, glorious millennial reign of Christ, "whom the heaven must receive until THE TIMES OF RESTITUTION OF ALL THINGS, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began." No fifth Gentile monarchy is to succeed that of Rome, but rather that blessed state of things for which the Church has prayed for the last 1,800 years, saying, "Thy kingdom come."

All Christians are agreed that such is the Divine programme, but some expect this millennium to be a spiritual reign of Christ, lasting for a thousand years *before* His second advent—a reign similar in character to His present reign in the hearts and lives of His people, though more complete and universal; while others hold that Scripture teaches rather that there is to be a *manifested* reign, lasting for a thousand years *after* His second coming, prior to His eternal kingdom. Whichever view of the nature of the coming kingdom be the true one, the evidence of its proximity, which we have here arranged in order, is equally applicable, and should be equally welcome to both the above classes. Whatever be its character, surely a well-grounded conviction that the dawn of the millennial day is at last so near that one or other of the now living generations will witness it, is an inexpressibly blessed and glorious one! Whatever view be taken of the nature of the coming kingdom of God, it is and ought to be the object of strong desire to all His children. All agree

Digitized by Google

that the millennial reign of Christ is to be universal in its extent, unspeakable in its privileges, a thousand years at least in duration before it merges into the eternal kingdom, and most blessed and glorious in its character. Can any renewed heart in which the love of God is shed abroad fail to beat high with hope and desire at the thought of the near approach of such a kingdom? It is true we cannot picture to ourselves its exact features, true that our minds are baffled in the attempt to imagine the universal prevalence on earth of true religion and righteousness, of perfect peace and unbroken prosperity, for a thousand years continuously; but that is no reason why we should doubt the reiterated promises of God that such a dispensation is coming. So clear and so strong is the testimony of Scripture on the subject, that nearly all Bible students and commentators, however different their views in other respects, are agreed in this, that our weary, sin cursed world is destined, according to the inspired programme of the future, yet to enjoy a sabbatic millenary of joy and peace, of rest and worship.

Our venerable and valued friend, Dr. David Brown, of Aberdeen, the recognised champion of post-millennial views, describes this manifested kingdom of God on earth under the following heads:

1. It will be characterized by the universal diffusion of revealed truth.

2. It will be marked by the universal reception of the true religion, and unlimited subjection to the sceptre of Christ.

3. It will be a time of universal peace.

4. It will be distinguished by much spiritual power and glory.

5. It will be signalised by the restoration of all Israel.

6. It will be distinguished by the ascendency of truth and righteousness in human affairs.

7. It will be characterized by great temporal prosperity.

Pre-millennialists can most heartily agree with this statement as far as it goes, though they differ from Dr. Brown as to the way in which this blessed state of things is to be brought about. Hence we may say that the entire Church is expecting these "times of refreshing from the presence of

Digitized by Google

the Lord," this true golden age of humanity; expecting that the petition, "Thy kingdom come," put into her lips eighteen hundred years ago by the Saviour Himself, and since offered day by day incessantly, by successive generations, in all lands and ages, will at last be answered beyond all we ask or think —answered, not according to our imperfect conceptions, but according to God's riches in glory by Christ Jesus. Now whatever be the exact nature of this coming kingdom, it must, even to those who in their thoughts dissociate *its* advent and the second advent of Christ, be a *blessed hope*— the breaking of the morning without clouds, the end of the groaning and travailing of creation, the beginning of the glorious liberty of the sons of God, and of that dispensation which is to close His redeeming work, and to be followed, after a little season, by paradise restored, and by the unbroken and eternal fellowship of man with God in the new heavens and new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

Yet while a blessed hope in any case, there can be no question that the view which postpones the second advent of Christ until the close of the millennium deprives it of its *most* blessed and glorious feature, as well as of its most solemn and sanctifying effects. For what is the coming of the kingdom to the coming of the KING? What is the blessing of nations on earth to the rapture of the marriage-supper of the Lamb? What is the peace and prosperity of the human race to the blessedness of the blood-bought bride of Christ when He comes to receive her to Himself, that she may be for ever with Him, the sharer of His glory and joy, as she has been the sharer of His sufferings, the partner of His crown, as she has been the partner of His cross? What *earthly* bliss can equal the being presented faultless before the throne of God's glory with exceeding joy? What earthly paradise can rival the many mansions of the Father's house, which our Lord has gone to prepare for His people? Glorious as is the prospect of a millennial sabbath, even when it stands alone, it exceeds in glory when it is conceived of as introduced by that coming of the Lord which is the only true hope of the Church, because it alone will bring her peculiar portion—full union with her Lord in His manifested glory. A millennium without Christ would be a mere prolongation

Digitized by Google

of the present life of faith, a continuance of separation from an unseen Saviour, instead of that perfect union and association for which we long, and which the resurrection and rapture, the marriage of the Lamb, will bring. A millennium without a previous advent, with its accompanying resurrection of those that are Christ's at His coming, might indeed be a blessed time to those who live during its course, but what to those who have fallen asleep, what to the vast majority of the saints?

That would be but a poor millennium in which the apostles, and the martyrs, and all the loved and lost who have gone before did not share. It might be, and undoubtedly would be, a better state of things than the present, but it would be infinitely inferior to the "blessed hope" set before us in a hundred passages of Scripture. The Church is not merely a company of saints, it is a body of which Christ is the Head; and just as every living creature has a certain standard of maturity, and never rests satisfied until it has attained that standard, so the Church as a whole, and each individual who forms part of it, can never be *satisfied* till it awakes in the likeness of Christ in resurrection. Neither individually nor collectively can our hopes stop short in a millennium which leaves the majority of the saints resting from their labours, and "present with the Lord" as to their spirits, *in their graves* as to the body—unclothed, imperfect, unable to take any part in the ministries of the kingdom, still waiting for the redemption of the body. The yearnings and longings of the Church after her own mature and perfect destiny cannot be satisfied by a millennium which can be enjoyed only by one generation at a time, severed by death from all the rest, and separated even as now from the Head. This is not the blessed hope of the Church, and such a millennium, however glorious, would be to her only a continuation of the time of waiting and watching for Christ.

The post-millennial view deprives the doctrine, not only of its sweetest and brightest, but also of its most solemn and sanctifying features. If this world is calmly and surely gliding on into days of millennial blessedness, if the spread of education, civilization, scientific knowledge, and the gospel are destined to bring about and introduce the kingdom of

Digitized by Google

God on earth, then it is clear that the present state of things, like a hopeful bud tending to expand into a glorious flower, must be good in itself, and certain to become better. We may rest satisfied as to its present, and be hopeful as to its future. There is no ground for apprehending its destruction by terrible Divine judgments, no need to warn the world and worldly Churches that ere long "the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of His power, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, . . . in that day." There is no need to remind men that "the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night," and that "when they shall say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction cometh upon them." If all is working on according to the plan and purpose of God, and will continue to do so until this Gentile age merges into the millennium, then there is no need to warn the wicked of impending judgment, for none is to be apprehended for at least a thousand years! If a thousand years of peace and prosperity, such as the world has never known, do indeed lie before it prior to the coming of Christ in judgment, then the siren song of peace and safety is right and reasonable, and its exceeding popularity is no cause of regret.

And further, if this millennial kingdom is to intervene between us and our blessed hope, the coming of our Lord, it is impossible to use the hope of that coming, as Scripture uses it, as the great present incentive to every grace—to watchfulness, to sobriety, to fidelity, to courage, to unworldliness, to moderation, to patience, to mortification of fleshly lusts, to sincerity, to entire sanctification, to ministerial faithfulness, to obedience to apostolic injunctions, to diligence, to purity, to the endurance of temptations, trials persecutions, and sufferings, to holy conversation and godliness, to brotherly love, and to separation from the world. The thought of the coming of the Lord is employed in the New Testament to enforce every exhortation, to strengthen every appeal, to confirm every argument; and it is evident

Digitized by Google

that the Church was designed to be kept in a state of constant watching and waiting for His appearing. But if a thousand years, even of millennial blessedness, is clearly revealed to intervene between us and our hope, *its practical power is destroyed.*

So serious and so evil are the results of severing the coming of the kingdom from the coming of the King, that we cannot close without earnestly urging those who still adhere to post-millennial views to reconsider their position. It were greatly to be desired that in these last days broad differences of opinion as to the meaning of Scripture prophecy, and especially this fundamental difference, should cease to exist; that at any rate on so simple a question as the chronological relation of the kingdom of God on earth to the second advent of Christ from heaven, *unanimity should be attained* by the study of Scripture, so that a clear and harmonious testimony might be borne by the Church to the world as to the doom lying before it.

What is and must be the effect on the ungodly of the discordant and contradictory witness on this subject at present borne by the Church? One section of interpreters assure them that peace and safety, prosperity and blessing, lie ahead, and that a thousand years and more will elapse ere any crisis of judgment or of supernatural intervention in human affairs need be apprehended; while others warn them with all earnestness that the days in which we live are like the days of Noah and the days of Lot, days immediately preceding a tremendous crisis of judgment. The one testimony is so completely weakened by the other, *that neither is practically believed.* The wicked not unnaturally think that no real revelation on the subject exists, as revelation could not be self-contradictory. What, on the other hand, might not be the blessed effect, if week by week from every pulpit in this and other lands, the Church, with one heart and one voice, were exhorting men to prepare for the inevitable, and warning them that the "sure word of prophecy" leaves no room to doubt, not only that the kingdom of God is at hand, but that it will be introduced by the second coming of Christ, "to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their

Digitized by Google

Such was the sketch presented in the far away days of ancient Babylon. Have events falsified or fulfilled it? Let us glance at this chronological chart, hanging on the college wall to teach students the course of history from the earliest times to our own day. It was originally published in Germany, and was designed with no idea of illustrating prophecy, but simply to convey the facts of history. It represents the successive kingdoms that have existed among men, as so many rivers of different hues running down across the centuries, now mingling their streams and then again dividing; numbers of them absorbed at times into great lake-like empires which swallowed up all their neighbours for a time, and broke up again into fragments when their day of dominion was over. The chart traces the course of all nations from the remotest times to the present day; but as the Daniel outline does not go beyond the days of Nebuchadnezzar, we present here, for convenience' sake, only that *chronological* section of it which dates from the eighth century before Christ, and which covers the twenty-five centuries of the "times of the Gentiles," and only that *geographical* portion of it which represents the sphere of the four great empires contemplated in prophecy. Is there any general correspondence to be noted between the facts of history as here presented and the foreview of Daniel in Babylon?

The first glance gives the reply; there *is* a most marked and unmistakable correspondence; We see the many rivers of divers nationalities traversing the centuries perpendicularly, and there are certain lake-like expansions crossing the chart horizontally, *in* which many of the rivers merge, and *from* which others again emerge. These represent the old-world empires which devoured the earth in their day of dominion; *how many* such does the chart present?

Four, and only four. BABYLON, comparatively small and very brief in duration, up there at the top of the chart, in the early ages of humanity, swallowing up however Syria, Assyria, Phœnicia, Judah, Israel, Egypt, the principal nations of the then known world; MEDO-PERSIA, larger and longer; GREECE, wider by far, but short and breaking up quickly into a few main divisions; and lastly, broad and long and all embracing beyond the rest, ROME, the most conspicuous empire

Digitized by Google

on the whole chart, as it is the most prominent subject in prophecy and history. Rome, the iron empire, that lorded it so long over the known world, far reaching, long lasting, mighty by its mental force as well as by its military power, its impress resting even to this day on the world it once governed, on the laws and literature of western Europe. The great *central subject* of Daniel's prophecy is beyond all question *the great central object* on the chart of history, as it appears to the eye of the mere secular historian; and as surely as Divine prediction said, "This shall be," so surely do historic records reply, "This has been." As to the first half of the prophetic programme, there can be no doubt that the historian, as he looked back, saw the very same succession of events which the prophet saw as he looked forward—four great successive Gentile empires.

And what as to the second half of the story, so curiously contrasted to the first in character? The rule of ROME was to endure to the end, but to undergo a strange transformation. No other world-wide Gentile empire was to replace Rome, as Rome had replaced its predecessors; the glorious kingdom of God was to arise on *its* fall, and Gentile empire to cease for ever. But long prior to this fall, the *one* empire of Rome was to become multiple, *tenfold*—a commonwealth of kingdoms, yet *a Roman world still.* It was to break up, not into two, nor into four, but into *ten* independent co-existing kingdoms, which were to last for over twelve centuries; varying continually in number, extent, and mutual relation; never again coalescing into one, never subdividing into forty or fifty fragments, never forming into one great federation like the United States, but continuing in isolated independence, to average ten in number right on the end, *owning all the time a voluntary submission to Rome under a new aspect.*

This was a very singular prediction, and it may well have suggested to students perplexing and insoluble questions before it was interpreted by events. Again we earnestly scan the chart, to see how to the eye of the mere historian, who knows nothing of Daniel's predictions, the story of western Europe during the last twelve or thirteen centuries presents itself. We observe that the lower half of the chart is occupied by ten or twelve constantly changing, oft mingling

Digitized by Google

and afresh dividing streams, which never merge into one common lake as before, but preserve their separate courses. We see that by confluence these streams are sometimes reduced to less than ten, and by separation sometimes divided into more than the normal number, but that *on an average* that number is strictly maintained throughout the whole twelve centuries. Prominent among all these Gothic kingdoms of western Europe, and carrying on the dominion of old Rome after the deadly wound of Gothic conquest, we note *the scarlet line of the Roman Papacy*, which, though just one among the rest of the ten kingdoms as to its secular power, and a small one as to its territorial extent, was yet, as we know, for long ages *the ruler over all the rest;* was, as we know, through its blasphemous spiritual pretensions, the acknowledged *head* of Latin Christendom, *the bond of union in the Roman Catholic world all through the middle ages.*

Further. The prophecy affixes chronological limits to the secular dominion of this last ruling power of the Roman world; it was to *cease* to exist as a horn, or temporal power, after 1,260 years, in this "time of the end." We run the eye down to the bottom of the chart, and, lo! we see the line of the Papal dominion turned aside, and merging, as Tuscany and Naples had previously done, in the broad, newborn stream of a united Italy. We see it disappearing from among the secular powers of Europe, obliterated, absorbed, defunct! We run the eye back to the origin of the stream, and see it emerging from the Gothic flood in the sixth century, and running onward with steady flow through twelve and a half centuries of time; then vanishing and disappearing altogether. Could prediction and fulfilment agree more closely? The future was sketched in words by the prophet; the past is here, sketched in form and colour by the historian; and the two absolutely agree together. *The recent unification of the German empire and of the Italian kingdom have brought back the number of the states occupying the sphere of old Rome to the normal ten.* Were Hanover, Bavaria, Würtemburg, and Saxony separate kingdoms, as not long since, or were Belgium and Holland one united kingdom of the Netherlands as formerly, the number of states in Roman Christendom would not be ten. Were Bohemia and Hungary separate

Digitized by Google

from Austria, as once, or were Switzerland part of that empire, as it was for centuries, the number again would not be ten. At the foot of the chart we see the actually existing state of things, and no calculation can make either more or less than *ten* kingdoms, the divisions of *the Roman world* at the present day; the German empire, the Austrian empire, Belgium, Holland, Switzerland, France, Italy, Spain, Portugal, and Great Britain. If only those streams which can be traced back into the old Roman empire be counted, it will be seen at once that this has been the average number of the kingdoms of Latin Christendom through the last twelve centuries.[1]

We hesitate not to assert that it is impossible for a candid reader acquainted with the book of Daniel to let the eye drink in the meaning of this historical chart, carrying the mind back as it does over the complex history of countless millions of mankind in different lands and ages for two and a half millenniums, without being impressed, first, by the contrast between its upper and lower portions, the earlier and later sections of the history; and secondly, by the correspondence of both halves with the outline revealed two thousand five hundred years ago to Daniel. The two agree together, and utter with one voice the same programme: *first, four empires; then ten kingdoms.*

Now in the nature of the case there seems no reason why these two stages should have occurred in this order, why they should thus have been *distinct* and *successive;* no reason why Charlemagne or Napoleon should have so signally failed to reunite the broken fragments of the territory of old

[1] The northern nations, Norway, Sweden, Denmark, and Russia, and the eastern nations, which territorially belong to the Greek and not to the Roman empire, (though subject to it in its golden days,) do not of course enter into the calculation of the kingdoms occupying the territory of Rome proper. There is as permanent a distinction between *the geographical spheres* of the four empires, as between their chronological period. Neither overlap each other: *i.e.*, the body of each "beast" is distinct from his dominion for a time over other "beasts." Each empire actually governed *all* in its day of dominion, but it had, nevertheless, its own proper sphere, Dan. vii. 12. "They had their *dominion* taken away, yet their *lives* were prolonged." Persia remains distinct from Greece, and Greece from Rome.

Digitized by Google

Rome; no reason why for twelve centuries every effort to do this should have proved utterly futile; no reason why *ten* instead of twenty or thirty should have been the average number of the kingdoms of Latin Christendom: no reason why the power of the Papacy should have lasted twelve and a half centuries. These things cannot have been brought to pass by human *will*, any more than they could have been *foreseen by human intelligence* in the days of Daniel. They are far too great, too complex, too unmanageable to have been manipulated by man, and far too manifold to have been merely imagined. Did any mere man ever venture or even pretend to predict the political and chronological features of history for thousands of years in advance? The only credible and rational account of the matter is the true one: that these revelations were inspired by God, to whom there is neither past nor future, but an eternal present; that holy men of old spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

But the more profoundly reflection impresses this fact on the mind, the more firm and broad and immovable becomes the foundation for the further and inexpressibly glorious conclusion. The long series of events condensed into Daniel's brief but pregnant sentences *has all but reached its end*, and as surely as Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome pagan and papal followed each other in a sorrowful succession of God-ignoring and man-oppressing empires, filling the earth like wild beasts with war, rapine, bloodshed, misery and death, ruling in unrighteousness and rioting in iniquity, to the confusion and despair of humanity,—*so surely* shall they be followed, and that right speedily, by the kingdom of the Son of man and of the saints—the blessed, peaceful, glorious, long foretold, long prayed for, and long expected KINGDOM OF GOD.

This is no fantastic fiction of dreamy philosophers, no vague imagination of mystic or theorist; it is simply the inevitable inference from the unquestionable facts of the case. If a long and complex series of events, comprising the history of scores of nations for over thousands of years, has fallen out in entire harmony with biblical prediction so far, would it not be madness to doubt that the brief remainder will do the same? The outline given was clear and com-

Digitized by Google

prehensive; there was nothing hazy or obscure about its commencing, central, or closing events. It did not consist of generalities that might mean anything or nothing: four great Gentile empires, and four only, were to rule over the people of God; and the fourth was to be broken into ten, and to last in that broken condition to the end. In the midst of the fragments was to be developed a strange, new, and evil politico-religious power, which would exalt itself against God, oppose the truth, destroy the saints, and after 1,260 years bring down Divine judgment on itself and its confederates. Such a power and such a state of things had never existed in Daniel's day, and they must have been well-nigh inconceivable to his mind; yet he foretold them, and we know that *they came*. Succeeding centuries, as they have rolled over the world, have only fitted the events of history into this framework of chronologic prophecy. His chronology is marked by features which link it in entire harmony with much that we know of the works and of the word of God, and leaves us no room to doubt that the end of the present phase of God's providential government of the world is close at hand, and that the Jewish people, the Gentile nations, and the Christian Church are all three about to enter on entirely new experiences.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIX.

THE PROSPECT BEFORE US.

PREMILLENNIAL EVIDENCE.

WHAT is to succeed these "times of the Gentiles"? Scripture clearly states that they are to be followed by the manifested kingdom of God on earth—immediately by its first section, the blessed, glorious millennial reign of Christ, "whom the heaven must receive until THE TIMES OF RESTITUTION OF ALL THINGS, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began." No fifth Gentile monarchy is to succeed that of Rome, but rather that blessed state of things for which the Church has prayed for the last 1,800 years, saying, "Thy kingdom come."

All Christians are agreed that such is the Divine programme, but some expect this millennium to be a spiritual reign of Christ, lasting for a thousand years *before* His second advent—a reign similar in character to His present reign in the hearts and lives of His people, though more complete and universal; while others hold that Scripture teaches rather that there is to be a *manifested* reign, lasting for a thousand years *after* His second coming, prior to His eternal kingdom. Whichever view of the nature of the coming kingdom be the true one, the evidence of its proximity, which we have here arranged in order, is equally applicable, and should be equally welcome to both the above classes. Whatever be its character, surely a well-grounded conviction that the dawn of the millennial day is at last so near that one or other of the now living generations will witness it, is an inexpressibly blessed and glorious one! Whatever view be taken of the nature of the coming kingdom of God, it is and ought to be the object of strong desire to all His children. All agree

Digitized by Google

that the millennial reign of Christ is to be universal in its extent, unspeakable in its privileges, a thousand years at least in duration before it merges into the eternal kingdom, and most blessed and glorious in its character. Can any renewed heart in which the love of God is shed abroad fail to beat high with hope and desire at the thought of the near approach of such a kingdom? It is true we cannot picture to ourselves its exact features, true that our minds are baffled in the attempt to imagine the universal prevalence on earth of true religion and righteousness, of perfect peace and unbroken prosperity, for a thousand years continuously; but that is no reason why we should doubt the reiterated promises of God that such a dispensation is coming. So clear and so strong is the testimony of Scripture on the subject, that nearly all Bible students and commentators, however different their views in other respects, are agreed in this, that our weary, sin cursed world is destined, according to the inspired programme of the future, yet to enjoy a sabbatic millenary of joy and peace, of rest and worship.

Our venerable and valued friend, Dr. David Brown, of Aberdeen, the recognised champion of post-millennial views, describes this manifested kingdom of God on earth under the following heads:

1. It will be characterized by the universal diffusion of revealed truth.

2. It will be marked by the universal reception of the true religion, and unlimited subjection to the sceptre of Christ.

3. It will be a time of universal peace.

4. It will be distinguished by much spiritual power and glory.

5. It will be signalised by the restoration of all Israel.

6. It will be distinguished by the ascendency of truth and righteousness in human affairs.

7. It will be characterized by great temporal prosperity.

Pre-millennialists can most heartily agree with this statement as far as it goes, though they differ from Dr. Brown as to the way in which this blessed state of things is to be brought about. Hence we may say that the entire Church is expecting these "times of refreshing from the presence of

Digitized by Google

the Lord," this true golden age of humanity; expecting that the petition, "Thy kingdom come," put into her lips eighteen hundred years ago by the Saviour Himself, and since offered day by day incessantly, by successive generations, in all lands and ages, will at last be answered beyond all we ask or think —answered, not according to our imperfect conceptions, but according to God's riches in glory by Christ Jesus. Now whatever be the exact nature of this coming kingdom, it must, even to those who in their thoughts dissociate *its* advent and the second advent of Christ, be a *blessed hope*— the breaking of the morning without clouds, the end of the groaning and travailing of creation, the beginning of the glorious liberty of the sons of God, and of that dispensation which is to close His redeeming work, and to be followed, after a little season, by paradise restored, and by the unbroken and eternal fellowship of man with God in the new heavens and new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

Yet while a blessed hope in any case, there can be no question that the view which postpones the second advent of Christ until the close of the millennium deprives it of its *most* blessed and glorious feature, as well as of its most solemn and sanctifying effects. For what is the coming of the kingdom to the coming of the KING? What is the blessing of nations on earth to the rapture of the marriage-supper of the Lamb? What is the peace and prosperity of the human race to the blessedness of the blood-bought bride of Christ when He comes to receive her to Himself, that she may be for ever with Him, the sharer of His glory and joy, as she has been the sharer of His sufferings, the partner of His crown, as she has been the partner of His cross? What *earthly* bliss can equal the being presented faultless before the throne of God's glory with exceeding joy? What earthly paradise can rival the many mansions of the Father's house, which our Lord has gone to prepare for His people? Glorious as is the prospect of a millennial sabbath, even when it stands alone, it exceeds in glory when it is conceived of as introduced by that coming of the Lord which is the only true hope of the Church, because it alone will bring her peculiar portion—full union with her Lord in His manifested glory. A millennium without Christ would be a mere prolongation

Digitized by Google

of the present life of faith, a continuance of separation from an unseen Saviour, instead of that perfect union and association for which we long, and which the resurrection and rapture, the marriage of the Lamb, will bring. A millennium without a previous advent, with its accompanying resurrection of those that are Christ's at His coming, might indeed be a blessed time to those who live during its course, but what to those who have fallen asleep, what to the vast majority of the saints?

That would be but a poor millennium in which the apostles, and the martyrs, and all the loved and lost who have gone before did not share. It might be, and undoubtedly would be, a better state of things than the present, but it would be infinitely inferior to the "blessed hope" set before us in a hundred passages of Scripture. The Church is not merely a company of saints, it is a body of which Christ is the Head; and just as every living creature has a certain standard of maturity, and never rests satisfied until it has attained that standard, so the Church as a whole, and each individual who forms part of it, can never be *satisfied* till it awakes in the likeness of Christ in resurrection. Neither individually nor collectively can our hopes stop short in a millennium which leaves the majority of the saints resting from their labours, and "present with the Lord" as to their spirits, *in their graves* as to the body—unclothed, imperfect, unable to take any part in the ministries of the kingdom, still waiting for the redemption of the body. The yearnings and longings of the Church after her own mature and perfect destiny cannot be satisfied by a millennium which can be enjoyed only by one generation at a time, severed by death from all the rest, and separated even as now from the Head. This is not the blessed hope of the Church, and such a millennium, however glorious, would be to her only a continuation of the time of waiting and watching for Christ.

The post-millennial view deprives the doctrine, not only of its sweetest and brightest, but also of its most solemn and sanctifying features. If this world is calmly and surely gliding on into days of millennial blessedness, if the spread of education, civilization, scientific knowledge, and the gospel are destined to bring about and introduce the kingdom of

Digitized by Google

God on earth, then it is clear that the present state of things, like a hopeful bud tending to expand into a glorious flower, must be good in itself, and certain to become better. We may rest satisfied as to its present, and be hopeful as to its future. There is no ground for apprehending its destruction by terrible Divine judgments, no need to warn the world and worldly Churches that ere long "the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of His power, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints, . . . in that day." There is no need to remind men that "the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night," and that "when they shall say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction cometh upon them." If all is working on according to the plan and purpose of God, and will continue to do so until this Gentile age merges into the millennium, then there is no need to warn the wicked of impending judgment, for none is to be apprehended for at least a thousand years! If a thousand years of peace and prosperity, such as the world has never known, do indeed lie before it prior to the coming of Christ in judgment, then the siren song of peace and safety is right and reasonable, and its exceeding popularity is no cause of regret.

And further, if this millennial kingdom is to intervene between us and our blessed hope, the coming of our Lord, it is impossible to use the hope of that coming, as Scripture uses it, as the great present incentive to every grace—to watchfulness, to sobriety, to fidelity, to courage, to unworldliness, to moderation, to patience, to mortification of fleshly lusts, to sincerity, to entire sanctification, to ministerial faithfulness, to obedience to apostolic injunctions, to diligence, to purity, to the endurance of temptations, trials persecutions, and sufferings, to holy conversation and godliness, to brotherly love, and to separation from the world. The thought of the coming of the Lord is employed in the New Testament to enforce every exhortation, to strengthen every appeal, to confirm every argument; and it is evident

Digitized by Google

that the Church was designed to be kept in a state of constant watching and waiting for His appearing. But if a thousand years, even of millennial blessedness, is clearly revealed to intervene between us and our hope, *its practical power is destroyed.*

So serious and so evil are the results of severing the coming of the kingdom from the coming of the King, that we cannot close without earnestly urging those who still adhere to post-millennial views to reconsider their position. It were greatly to be desired that in these last days broad differences of opinion as to the meaning of Scripture prophecy, and especially this fundamental difference, should cease to exist; that at any rate on so simple a question as the chronological relation of the kingdom of God on earth to the second advent of Christ from heaven, *unanimity should be attained* by the study of Scripture, so that a clear and harmonious testimony might be borne by the Church to the world as to the doom lying before it.

What is and must be the effect on the ungodly of the discordant and contradictory witness on this subject at present borne by the Church? One section of interpreters assure them that peace and safety, prosperity and blessing, lie ahead, and that a thousand years and more will elapse ere any crisis of judgment or of supernatural intervention in human affairs need be apprehended; while others warn them with all earnestness that the days in which we live are like the days of Noah and the days of Lot, days immediately preceding a tremendous crisis of judgment. The one testimony is so completely weakened by the other, *that neither is practically believed.* The wicked not unnaturally think that no real revelation on the subject exists, as revelation could not be self-contradictory. What, on the other hand, might not be the blessed effect, if week by week from every pulpit in this and other lands, the Church, with one heart and one voice, were exhorting men to prepare for the inevitable, and warning them that the "sure word of prophecy" leaves no room to doubt, not only that the kingdom of God is at hand, but that it will be introduced by the second coming of Christ, "to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their

Digitized by Google

ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him"!

We do not and cannot believe that the attainment of unanimity on this important point is impossible. Truth on scientific and other subjects is reached at last, though often only after centuries of controversy. Why not truth on prophetic subjects? Controversy has lasted long enough; light is promised in these last times; and this should be an encouragement to seek it afresh and with increased earnestness in these days.

This is not the place to enter into a full argument in defence of the truth of pre-millennial doctrine; but we may present a few reasons why post-millennialists—at any rate, those among them who are in the position of teachers of the truth—should feel responsible to review their creed, and see if in the light of Scripture and of facts it be honestly tenable.

1. The doctrine that a still future millennium will precede the second advent of Christ was never broached in the Church for 1,600 years, not indeed until the seventeenth century.

"The commonly received opinion of a spiritual millennium, consisting in a universal triumph of the gospel and of all nations for a thousand years before the coming of Christ, is a novel doctrine, unknown to the Church for the space of 1,600 years. So far as we have been able to investigate its history, it was first advanced by the Rev. Dr. Whitby, the commentator, and afterwards advocated by Hammond, Hopkins, Scott, Bougue, and others, and has been received without careful examination by the majority of evangelical divines in the present day; but we may safely challenge its advocates to produce one distinguished writer in its favour who lived before the commencement of the eighteenth century." [1]

The acknowledged originator of the doctrine of the post-millennial advent, Dr. Whitby (1638–1726), himself speaks of it as "a new hypothesis," and admits that the opposite view

"passed among the best of Christians for 250 years as a tradition apostolical, and as such is delivered by many Fathers of the second and

[1] Bishop Henshaw on the second advent.

Digitized by Google

third century, who speak of it as the tradition of our Lord and His apostles, and of all the ancients that lived before them, and tell us the very words in which it was delivered, the Scriptures which were then so interpreted, and say that it was held by all orthodox Christians. It was received, not only in the eastern parts of the Church, but in Palestine, in Gaul, in Egypt, in the West and South; by Tertullian in Africa, Cyprian in Germany, Lactantius in Italy, and Severus, and by the first Nicene Council. These men taught this doctrine, not as doctors only, but as witnesses of the tradition which they had received from Christ and His apostles, and which was taught them by the elders, the apostles of Christ. They ground it upon numerous and manifest testimonies both of the Old and New Testaments, and speak of them as texts which would admit of no other meaning."

"The earliest creeds, and all creeds of all denomination in Christendom, from the apostles to this day, recognise no other millennium than that of a glorious one on the renovated earth *at the coming of the Lord and resurrection of the dead*, whether Greek or Roman, apostate or reformed, Lutheran, Episcopal, Presbyterian, Independent, Congregational, or by whatsoever name a Church may be called. It must be confessed by intelligent divines that the now popular doctrine of the millennium is a modern one, totally unknown to the primitive and martyr Church; so modern that it has never a place in the formula of the faith of *any* Church, whether Greek, Roman, or Protestant, but all their creeds involve the contrary. . . . This I boldly say, and challenge contradiction, that Dr. Whitby's honourable name is the first and earliest that I have seen quoted in support of the doctrine; and he gives credit to no other man for the discovery, but puts it roundly forth as his own opinion singly. And now so firmly planted has this new faith become in all the Churches of America, that no religious newspaper of high standing will admit into its columns an article questioning it. This state of things calls for mourning and indignation, that in so short a time an innovation, so complete in departure from the primitive faith and confessions of all Churches, should have entrenched itself in the heart of all denominations following the Reformation, which innovation this very Reformation expressly condemned as opposed to the Holy Scriptures."[1]

A volume was published a few years ago by Messrs. Bagster & Sons, to whom the Church is indebted for so much help in biblical investigation, by Daniel T. Taylor, an American writer, entitled, "The Reign of Christ on Earth; or, The Voice of the Church in all Ages concerning the Coming and Kingdom of the Redeemer." This book con-

[1] Henry Dana Ward: "History and Doctrine of Millenarianism," pp. 58, 59.

Digitized by Google

tains the views on this great subject of 400 writers, who have lived at intervals all through the Christian centuries. It echoes "the voice of the Church of the living God, the light of the world for 1,700 years, through some 400 of its most ancient, eminent, learned, eloquent, and steadfast men —martyrs, confessors, preachers, teachers, expounders, reformers, orators, and poets—representing the Church during the whole period of its existence, and including all its branches and departments." And what does this voice say? This voice utters its solemn protest against the prevailing doctrine of the world's conversion, the delusion of those who say "peace and safety," while sudden destruction draweth nigh. These 400 witnesses include the apostolic Fathers, and the bright lights of the early Church. The line goes back through "the noble army of the martyrs," to the "goodly fellowship of the apostles. The records of the Church do not furnish 400 other names so famed as these, and these men have uttered in no uncertain tones the voice of the Church upon this important theme. Were they all mistaken in their understanding of Scripture statements for many hundreds of years? Was it reserved for modern divines to correct the faith of those who listened to apostolic teaching?"

The testimonies include those of the Fathers of the early Church—Clement and Barnabas, companions of St. Paul, Ignatius and Polycarp, Papias and Justin Martyr, Irenæus, the Churches of Vienne and Lyons, Hippolytus, Melito, Tertullian, Cyprian, and others, together with the Montanists, and Clement of Alexandria, Methodius, and others who flourished in the latter half of the third century. Up to this time no writer of repute and orthodoxy opposed the doctrine of Christ's premillennial advent, or of His literal personal reign on earth.

Origen (A.D. 250) was the first to reject the doctrine of the millennium. He was however "a poor divine and a sorry philosopher," and, as Martin Luther wrote, his interpretations are to be avoided. According to his system, the sacred writings may be made to say everything, anything, or nothing, according to the fancy, peculiar creed, or caprice of the interpreter. He taught many false doctrines, as that

Digitized by Google

magic is a true and lawful science; that human souls existed previous to conception, and are condemned to animate mortal bodies in order to expiate evils committed in a pre-existent state; the universal restoration of the lost after a limited punishment, etc.; and, above all, that the Scriptures are of little use if we understand them as they are written, and that the words in many parts of the Bible convey no meaning at all. This man was the first opponent of pre-millennial doctrine, and Augustine, Jerome, and a multitude of the subsequent Fathers followed his teachings. But yet Origen was not a *post*-millennialist. He admits a first and second resurrection, and writes, "Let us lay the Scripture to heart, that we may be *raised up with the saints*, and have our lot with Jesus Christ." He seems simply to have confounded the millennial reign of Christ with the eternal age commencing after the final judgment. The majority of Christians however continued to maintain the millenarian view for some time after Origen. The Council of Nice, in A.D. 325, clearly avowed their millenarian faith: "At the appearing of the great God and of our Saviour Jesus Christ, as Daniel says, the saints of the Most High shall take their kingdom, and there shall be a pure and holy earth, a land of the living, and not of the dead." But this blessed truth, which received their sanction, was crushed at last under the iron heel of antichrist. As the apostasy of the middle ages darkened down over Christendom, millennial truth was in measure lost sight of, but *post*-millennial views, let it be noted, were *not* substituted. The Fathers of the fourth and fifth centuries were anti-millenarian, but not post-millennialists. Jerome, in whose works the seeds of almost every Popish error may be found, was a bitter opponent of this doctrine; as Dr. Duffield observes, "He teems with abuse and ridicule in relation to the millennium; but by his general character for fierceness, acrimony, and ribaldry toward all who differ from him, he has forfeited all claims upon our respect." Yet he makes significant admissions; as, for instance, that the Roman empire will be destroyed on account of antichrist's blasphemies at "the triumphant advent of the great God, and we are perfectly sure that after the second advent of our Lord nothing will be base,

Digitized by Google

nothing terrestrial, but that then will be the celestial kingdom promised in the gospel." He thus gives no support to post-millennial doctrine, and he admits that the majority of the Christians of his day held millenarian views. It was through the influence of Jerome that the doctrine first began to fall into disrepute and dwindle away, until almost lost sight of in the dark ages. Augustine speaks of the conversion of the Jews, and remarks on the Lord's Prayer: "His kingdom will come when the resurrection of the dead shall have taken place, for then He will come Himself. This is what we wish and pray for when we say, Thy kingdom come."

During the period which elapsed between Augustine and Luther, while the apostasy was creeping on and during its culmination, all truth was obscured by papal superstition, and this among the rest. Millenarian views, once a mark of orthodoxy, came at last to be considered as heresy, and as the Apocalypse so distinctly taught them, its canonicity was doubted, and even attempts were made to exclude it from the canon. The true Church had believed and taught the doctrine, but the apostate Church crushed it. The awful centuries of Rome's supremacy form a chasm in the history of millenarian doctrine, though not a few chosen witnesses held and taught it even then, like the Waldenses in their "noble lesson." As soon as the light of the Reformation began to dawn, this doctrine was revived. Wycliffe, in the fourteenth century, regarded the Redeemer's appearing as the object of hope and expectation to the Church, and looked for no intervening period of millennial blessedness. Columbus, the illustrious discoverer of America, was a Christian man and a Bible student. In 1498 he prepared a paper on the prophecies of a very able character. He was no believer in the world's conversion before the coming of Christ, but thought "that the ends of the earth would soon be brought together under the sway of the Redeemer, Mount Zion and Jerusalem be rescued from the Turks and rebuilt by the Christians, the nations know and revere the Cross, and the gospel, in fulfilment of our Lord's words, be proclaimed in all the world; and then, without further delay, the end would come. This faith made him a discoverer."

Digitized by Google

In writing to Ferdinand and Isabella in 1503, after saying that he must hasten to finish up his work of Divine inspiration, namely, the opening up of the whole earth to the spirit of Christianity, preparatory to the coming of the Lord, Columbus adds, "According to my calculations, there remain now but 150 years to the end." So that the great discoverer of the western hemisphere felt impelled to his task, and performed it enthusiastically, under a solemn conviction that the coming of the Lord was imminent. And no sooner were the ages of darkness past than the early reformers came back decidedly to that important point, the looking for a speedy revelation in glory of the Lord Jesus Christ. They expected no golden age, to be brought about by human agency. Luther, Melanchthon, Calvin, and Knox individually, and the Confession of Augsburg, representing the Reformation corporately, all deny the modern doctrine of the world's entire conversion before the return of Christ. A medal was in use in 1546, representing Christ as come down to judgment and the dead arising, and it bore the legend, "Watch; for ye know not at what hour the Lord cometh." It was struck just after Luther's death, and shows the then general apprehension among Protestants that the judgment was at hand. Tyndal expounded Revelation xx. as a literal first resurrection, and expected it to synchronise with the second advent: "Christ and His apostles warned us to look for His coming again every hour." He waited for the kingdom of God to be introduced by the return of the Saviour; so Latimer and Ridley; so the catechism of Edward VI., published in 1550; so Bale, Bishop of Ossory, who writes: "Unto kings has not God given to subdue these wild beasts. This is reserved to the victory of His living Word; only shall the breath of His mouth destroy them." So Fox, author of the "Book of Martyrs," who thought the day of the Lord to be near; and so Brightman, who died at the beginning of the seventeenth century, and Pareus, who argued against the notion of the conversion of the world before the coming of Christ. Mede, who flourished in the seventeenth century, has been called the prince of millenarians, and with his disciples Twiss, Usher, and Bunyan, did battle for the truth in their day.

Digitized by Google

Mede was a profoundly pious and learned man, and his works constitute an era in prophetic exposition. The divines of the Westminster Assembly in 1643, who compiled the celebrated Confession of Faith, and Longer and Shorter Catechisms, and signed the Solemn League and Covenant, were many of them millenarians. The Baptist confession of faith, presented to Charles II. in 1660, shows the coming of the Lord and the establishment of the kingdom of God on earth in their right order; and the 20,000 elders, deacons, and brethren in whose name it was signed say, "We are not only resolved to suffer persecution, but to lose life itself rather than decline from this confession." The famous early New England pastors insisted strongly on the doctrine of Christ's glorious kingdom on earth to take place after the conversion of the Jews, and when the fulness of the Gentiles shall have come in. For 100 years the large mass of New England Christians knew nothing of a post-millennial advent. In 1667 a volume was published by Samuel Hutchinson, entitled "Declaration of a Future glorious Estate of the Church to be here upon Earth at Christ's Personal Appearance for the Restitution of all Things." Scores of names of American pastors and teachers might be mentioned who equally held this faith. Holmes, one of the early Baptists of America, who suffered severely for his faith, gives it as the thirty-third article of his creed: "I believe the promise of the future concerning the return of Israel and Judah, and the coming of the Lord to raise up the dead in Christ, and to change them that are alive that they may reign with Him a thousand years according to the Scriptures. In this faith and profession I stand, and have sealed the same with my blood in Boston, New England." (He had been scourged with thirty lashes of a three-corded whip.)

The eighteenth century was for the most part a worldly one. Bengel calls it a frigid, slumbering age, that needed an awakener. Such was the complaint both in England and on the continent, and one of its causes may have been the spread of Whitby's "new hypothesis," which postponed the hope of the Church for a thousand years. This naturally helped to stifle hope and encourage worldliness. Premillennial truth was unpopular, and spiritual life decayed

Digitized by Google

with it. The birth of missionary enterprise in a subsequent revival also indirectly fostered this tendency; for the right and praiseworthy desire to see the heathen converted suggested and encouraged the false anticipation of the conversion of the world, to the obscuring of the scriptural doctrine that the gospel is to be "preached among all nations for a witness unto them, and then shall the end come." The doctrine of the coming of Christ was lost sight of in the Church, and replaced by the dream of a golden age, to be enjoyed in His absence.[1] To sum up—

"The fact is, that three leading theories in succession have prevailed in the Church on this subject. Throughout the three first centuries the great majority of Christians looked for the first coming of Christ to be followed at once by the millennium. As the apostasy came on after the establishment of imperial Christianity in the days of Constantine, this original and apostolic view was gradually expelled by a very different one, one which all would now agree in regarding as erroneous. The Church, triumphant, prosperous, wealthy, and honoured in the world, began to fancy that the millennium had already arrived. The coming of the Lord was still for a while looked for as at hand, but the millennium was dated from the first advent, and expounded of a thousand years, or a shorter period to elapse before the coming of antichrist. Modifications of this creed prevailed in the apostate Church during the dark ages, and right down to the dawn of the Reformation, though some few held fast the truth. The Reformers revived sound doctrines on this as on other subjects. Within the last two hundred years, however, a third opinion, distinct from both the former, has obtained currency in the various branches of the Protestant Church. The millennium is viewed as still future, but as placed before the second advent. Many pious Christians, little versed in history, have even come to imagine this to have been the general and constant faith of the Church from the beginning. *A greater mistake as to a question of fact was never committed; this hypothesis is of all the three the most recent in its birth, and has had by far the shortest continuance, and has also never obtained so decisive a prevalence as the two others.*"[2]

2. A millennium previous to the coming of Christ is nowhere mentioned in Scripture; nowhere, either in the Old or New Testament, can these two events, the millennium and the second advent, be found in this order. They are very

[1] See for full particulars Taylor's "Reign of Christ on Earth." London: Bagster & Sons, Paternoster Row, E.C.

[2] Birks: "First Two Visions of Daniel," p. 347.

Digitized by Google

frequently mentioned together, but always in the reverse order, first the advent, then the millennium. In the twentieth chapter of Revelation—the passage where the millennium is revealed, with its character as a reign of Christ and His saints, and its duration—it is immedately preceded, and we may say introduced, by a full and distinct description of the marriage of the Lamb (or the first resurrection), and of the second advent of Christ with His saints in heavenly glory to judge and destroy the confederate hosts of evil. On the other hand, no account of an advent for the Church *follows* the millennial vision, but instead the resurrection of the wicked and "the second death," the final judgment of the great white throne, and then the new heaven and new earth. This alone seems decisive. Unless we are to explain away the advent, which is described in the context as preceding the millennium, and introduce elsewhere another such advent, of which it gives no hint whatever, we cannot deny that the revealed order is first the *advent*, and secondly the *reign*, of Christ, and not the reverse. The visions of Daniel give the same order; the wild-beast monarchies of earth continue to exist until "one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and there was given to Him a kingdom that shall not be destroyed," and with Him to "the people of the saints of the Most High" (Dan. vii. 14, 27).

The second coming of Christ is mentioned over a hundred times in the New Testament, and not once in connexion with a previous millennium. Now had such a glorious age been destined to intervene between apostolic days and the advent, it surely would have been put before the Church as an object of hope. This it never is; while the Old Testament is full of the millennium, the New Testament mentions it but little, but alludes to the advent which introduces it in every thirtieth verse on an average. The blessed hope for which the Church has so long waited, and still waits, is not the millennium, though it includes it; it is the coming of Him who will introduce it. The silence of Scripture as to any golden age before the second advent proves that there will be none.

But further. The descriptions of the earthly future of the Church prior to her Lord's return given in the New

Digitized by Google

Testament are very full, and every single experience foretold is distinctly and unmistakably of an unmillennial character. The Church is to be a little flock, like sheep among wolves, to the end. If any man will live godly in Christ Jesus, he is to suffer persecution. His disciples are to be hated and rejected like their Master, and are warned that the disciple is not above his Lord, and that therefore their testimony will be no more received than was that of their Lord. It was foretold that the greater part of the Church would become apostate, and continue so to the end of the age, and that rest and peace would be the portion of Christians only when the Lord Jesus Christ shall be revealed from heaven, with His mighty angels, to judge the apostates and reward the faithful. The entire interval is filled up with events which altogether preclude the possibility of a millennium.

3. The predictions of antichrist prove the same order. It is evident that antichrist is to be destroyed by the coming of Christ, as is distinctly stated in 2 Thessalonians ii. and elsewhere. Now St. Paul says in that same passage that the mystery of iniquity which would eventuate in the production of antichrist was already working in his own day, and would continue to do so until it culminated in his revelation and reign, while he would be *destroyed* only at the epiphany: hence the *entire interval* from apostolic times to the second advent of Christ is filled up by the growth, culmination, and decay of the great apostasy which is headed by the Roman antichrist.[1]

Now as the existence of this apostasy cannot be reconciled with a millennial condition of things, it is clear that there can be no millennium until after Christ comes to destroy it.

4. It will be contrary to every analogy of the past, in the entire history of the human race, if this Christian age were to go from good to better until it blossomed into a millennium. All previous ages have gone from good to bad, and

[1] No ingenuity can get over the conclusive argument for a pre-millennial advent derived from this fact.

Daniel, Paul, and John, all three distinctly associate antichrist with the fourth or Roman Empire, while stating at the same time that he will be destroyed only at the Epiphany. Hence the advent and kingdom of Christ immediately succeed the existing apostate and antichristian state of Latin Christendom.

Digitized by Google

ended in abounding iniquity, which brought down judgment, and was followed by a fresh departure. Eden did so; the antediluvian world did so; the patriarchal age beginning with the Noaic generation sank into idolatry, necessitating the selection of a peculiar people to preserve the light of revealed religion on earth; the earliest Gentile kingdom, Egypt, fell from the glory of Joseph's days to the judgments of the plagues and the Red Sea; the people of Israel did so, lapsing from the law given on Sinai to the gross idolatry and vice of Manasseh's reign, and bringing on themselves national extinction. The restored remnant of Judah did the same, and by their rejection of Christ brought upon themselves the destruction of Jerusalem and their present dispersion. The early Church left its first love; the martyr Church sank into many superstitions; imperial Christianity ran rapidly downhill into utter worldliness and carnal strife, into error and superstition. The Papal Church developed the great apostasy, and the Greek, Coptic, Armenian, and other Eastern Churches have all had their candlesticks removed. The very heathen have so fallen from the light of nature, as in many cases to have sunk lower than brutes, and perished in their own corruption. Even the reformed Churches have all grown impure and worldly; nothing that exists, or ever has existed since the fall, has held fast its perfection or progressed from a lower to a higher platform, and if the present state of things were to improve into the millennium, it would form an abrupt and startling contrast to every analogy of the past.

It is no reply to assert that post-millennialists teach that an outpouring of the Spirit will cause the anticipated triumph of the gospel. Only *one* great outpouring of the Spirit is predicted in the Scriptures, and Peter's quotation from Joel in Acts ii. shows that it took place at Pentecost. The departure of Christ was followed by the advent of the Comforter He promised, and that Comforter has abode with the Church ever since, and will do so until Christ's return. There have been spiritual revivals at certain epochs and places, reformations and glad seasons of ingathering under the power of this Holy Spirit, and there will doubtless be such increasingly to the end. But none of these have ex-

Digitized by Google

cluded declension; the evil heart of unbelief, prone to depart from the living God, has ever led to fresh apostasy, nor is there the slightest ground to suppose that it will ever be otherwise. No second Pentecost is to occur in the history of the Church, and even Pentecost itself did not convert the world.

5. The present state of things in the world confirms in the strongest way the conviction that the millennium will never be introduced by existing agencies prior to the coming of the Lord.

"If the gospel were to convert the world, we should have seen tokens of it ere this. But where are such omens to be found? Shall we look to missionaries, who sometimes labour for years before one sinner yields to the claims of the gospel? Shall we look to the dense darkness of the heathen world? Shall we look at the formalism of the professed Church? Shall we look at the wide extension of infidelity? Shall we look at the abounding of iniquity and the waxing cold of love? Shall we look at a world where eighteen hundred years of toil and tears has not brought one-twentieth part of mankind even to a profession of true Christianity, and where not more than one-fifth claim for themselves the dubious title of Christian nations? Shall we look over a world in which we cannot find one nation of Christians, nor one tribe of Christians, nor one city of Christians, nor one town of Christians, nor one village of Christians, nor one hamlet of Christians, save here and there where a questionable faith has led a few, with hypocrites even then among them, to withdraw themselves from the world, and cherish the untried virtues of a secluded life? Surely, after eighteen hundred years of experiment with a system designed to convert the world, men might point to some country, to some province, to some nation, and say, 'Behold the commencement of a converted world'!

"Where shall we look to find the tokens of the speedy dawning of the hoped for day of peace? Shall we look at Christendom, where for every missionary sent forth to convert the heathen a thousand soldiers are trained and supported that they may cut each other's throats? Shall we look at the dense masses of godless, hopeless toilers, who journey on in darkness to perdition, in the chief cities of boasted Christian lands? Shall we look to those nations which claim to be mentally and morally in advance of all the inhabitants of the globe, but who spend more money for strong drink than they do for bread, and whose yearly expenditure for all religious and secular instruction, and for all purposes of Christian charity, would not pay for the cost of the intoxicating drinks consumed by them in a single month?

"Shall we look to the centres of Christian civilization, where squalor crowds on splendour, and where Lazarus still lies, licked by the dogs, hard by the rich man's gate; where in the midst of lavished wealth and

Digitized by Google

wasted treasure thousands of helpless women make their dire election between hunger and shame, starvation and damnation? Shall we explore the great cities of Christendom, where, surrounded by sky-piercing steeples and sweetly chiming bells, poor motherless, friendless outcasts wander, wet and weary, through the midnight hours, scorned by Simon the pharisee and his proud wife and silk-robed daughters, finding no way to draw near to Him who calls the heavy laden to come and rest, no place in the rich man's house to bathe His feet with penitential tears, no path open but the downward way, no gate ajar but the broad gate that leadeth to destruction? Shall we visit the gorgeous temples erected to Him, who, more homeless than the foxes and the birds, was cradled in the wayside manger, and was buried in a stranger's tomb, but the price of whose blood bought a potter's field where strangers might be buried? We shall find by the smell of mint, and anise, and cummin that the tithes are promptly paid by the proud pharisee, whose 'God, I thank Thee' echoes through the sounding aisles; but shall we not also find Fraud and Greed sitting side by side in the chief seats of the synagogue, and unclean reptiles swarming like frogs of Egypt, while the tables of the money-changers still stand right side up, and no scourge of small cords drives the buyers and the sellers from the sacred place?

"Shall we look to China, in whose provinces a few mission stations twinkle like tapers in the midst of darkness, wide-reaching and almost impenetrable? While we rejoice at the salvation of some in the far-off land of Sinim, let us not forget that every passing day witnesses the horrible death of not less than one thousand Chinamen, diseased, debauched, degraded, murdered, damned by the use of that opium which is raised and sold by the British Government, and forced on the unwilling heathen by Christian England at the cannon's mouth and at the bayonet's point; and that while the British and Foreign Bible Society reports an income of one million of dollars per year for the diffusion of the word of God, the Christian Government of Great Britain derives the annual income of forty-five millions of dollars from the opium trade.

"Shall we turn to India, with its myriad populations, where the rulers of this same Christian nation long barred the way against the gospel of Christ, which has at last effected an entrance, but where intemperance and dissipation have made such havoc that, to use the words of Archdeacon Jefferies, a missionary there, 'For one really converted Christian as a fruit of missionary labour, the drinking practices of the English have made fully a thousand drunkards in India.'

"Shall we look at the far off islands of the Southern Seas, where heathenism has been banished by the light of gospel truth, and barbarism has given place to an enlightened civilization? We shall find that those races which lived in health and strength in spite of barbarism and cannibalism are now slowly dying out, from unreportable diseases and vices, unknown in the barbarous condition, but which have been brought to their shores by sailors from Christian lands, and which, spreading like the gangrene of hell, are eating out the sources of national life.

Digitized by Google

"Where shall we go to find the evidence of this glad era of universal peace and blessing, which is proclaimed as so sure to come and so near at hand?"

"If the world is not converted, will not the gospel then prove a failure? That depends upon what is to be expected of it. If the lifeboat was intended to keep the ship from sinking, then it proves a failure if it only save the crew. If the gospel was to effect the eternal salvation of all mankind, then failing to accomplish that work is a failure of the gospel. If the gospel was to convert the world, it will prove a failure if that is not done. But if the gospel was preached 'to take OUT OF the Gentiles a people for His name,' then it is not a failure. If it was given that God might in infinite mercy and love 'save SOME,' then it is not a failure. If it was given that every repentant sinner might have eternal life, and that every good soldier might receive a crown of glory, then it is not a failure. If it was given that an innumerable company might be redeemed 'OUT OF every kindred and tongue and nation and people,' then it is not a failure. If it was given that the vales and hills of paradise restored might teem with a holy throng, who shall be 'equal unto the angels, the children of God, being the children of the resurrection,' then it is not a failure. If it was given that the elect might be brought into one great family of holy ones, then it is not a failure." [1]

To recapitulate our objections to the doctrine of a millennium before the second advent of Christ we may say in the words of another:

"Our reasons for rejecting it are summarily as follows:

1. The doctrine is not taught by either Christ or His apostles.

2. The uniform teaching of the New Testament respecting the condition of the Church and of the world during the present dispensation forbids the expectation of such a millennium.

3. The advent itself, not the millennium, is prominently presented in the New Testament as the blessed hope of the Church, and is uniformly presented as an event ever imminent.

4. The Saviour's repeated command to watch for His coming, because we know not the hour, is inconsistent with the new idea of a millennium intervening.

5. The New Testament teaches that the manifestation of the Messianic kingdom is to occur at, and not before the advent.

6. The apostolic Church was pre-millenarian.

7. The Church for two centuries immediately succeeding the apostles was pre-millenarian.

8. The doctrine of a millennial era before the advent is a novelty in the history of the Church, proposed but little more than one hundred and fifty years ago, avowedly as 'a new hypothesis.'

The summary of Christian faith and practice given by an inspired

[1] TAYLOR: "Reign of Christ on Earth." Preface, pp. xi.–xiv., xv.

Digitized by Google

apostle is, 'The grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; *looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ.*'"[1]

We conclude then with all confidence, from the clear testimony of Scripture, and from the united witness of the early Church, and of a multitude of Christian interpreters of all ages, that the second advent of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ will introduce His millennial reign on earth; and we proceed next to collect the scattered rays of light in Scripture as to the nature of the coming kingdom of God and "times of restitution of all things, spoken of by all His holy prophets since the world began."

[1] J. T. DUFFIELD, D.D.: "Pre-millennial Essays," pp. 426, 427.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XX.

THE COMING KINGDOM.

THE drama which has been unrolled before our eyes in the events of the "times of the Gentiles" has been a dark and tragic one, presenting little on which the spiritual mind can rest with pleasure or complacency. How could the ravages of wild beasts be a pleasant spectacle to rational men? How could the triumphs of Satan, the wars and bloodshed of mutually antagonistic nations, the great systematic organizations of evil, the oppressions and persecutions of the people of God, the oppositions and blasphemies of the apostasy, form anything but a painful subject of contemplation to those who have the love of God shed abroad in their hearts, and who enjoy the peace which passeth all understanding? With a sense of relief we turn from the history of the past to the Bible pictures of the future, from the now nearly finished "times of the Gentiles" to the blessed "times of refreshing from the presence of the Lord" which are to follow! The stormy and painful past can only safely be studied in the light of the calm, glad future. Only when the glory of a perfected redemption is allowed to irradiate the dark enigmas of Divine Providence does their meaning become clear. Then we perceive "the end of the Lord," that He is very pitiful and of tender mercy, and that though the bud may have a bitter taste, yet sweet will be the flower. Even a human plan cannot be criticised until it is complete. If prophecy does not enable us to understand fully the complete plan of Providence in the creation and redemption of mankind, yet it puts us at any rate in a better position to judge of it than we can be without its help. There remains much that is mysterious, and we must wait for the explanation of many difficulties, suggested by its very

Digitized by Google

revelations. "The secret things belong to God, but those that are revealed to us and to our children." The entire scheme of Providence is not unveiled to us as yet, and we must not reason about it as if we understood the whole; but nothing should deter us from receiving and holding for certain truth the plain predictions of Scripture as to the future. We must neither over-estimate our knowledge, on the one hand, nor under-estimate the amount of revealed truth, on the other; neither neglect or ignore any single plain prediction of prophecy, nor indulge in baseless speculation where Scripture gives no light.

We have considered the kingdoms of Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome; it remains to consider that of the Son of man and of the saints. What are the peculiarities by which this future kingdom of God is distinguished from His present kingdom, the "kingdom of heaven," of which our Lord so frequently speaks in the Gospels? It is important that its distinctive features should be recognised, lest difficulties should arise from confusion of thought.

It is the kingdom for whose advent Christ taught us to pray, saying, "Thy kingdom come"—one consequently which was not then present, and which is not yet so, seeing that this prayer is still offered by the Church. Now there *is* a dominion or rule of God which cannot *come*, because it is always in existence; in the broadest sense His kingdom is from everlasting to everlasting, for His essential rule over all began with the first act of creation, and must endure for ever. This essential dominion comprises two parts; an acknowledged and manifested rule over the unfallen, and a secret control over the fallen—an over-ruling of their evil for good, exercised even during the period of their open rebellion against His authority. His dominion or kingdom has never ceased or been interrupted in the case of the holy angels, but it has been thrown off completely in the case of fallen angels and in that of sinful men. The kingdom of God for which we pray, as still to come, consequently is *the manifested restoration of His authority over His fallen and rebellious creatures on earth;* it is that state of things in which His will shall again be done *on earth* as it is in heaven; that is, perfectly and universally. This double aspect of the

Digitized by Google

kingdom of God is recognised in the Lord's prayer; as to His essential and eternal rule over the whole creation we are taught to say, "Thine *is* the kingdom and the power and the glory for ever and ever"; while as to His manifestly restored authority in this rebellious world we are directed to pray, "Thy kingdom *come*."

The redeeming work of Christ has already restored the authority of God in the hearts and lives of His people; it is willingly acknowledged by them in theory even now, though imperfectly owned in practice; the laws of God are to some extent written in their hearts and minds. But *this* kingdom of God is a spiritual one, a hidden and not a manifested one; it is the kingdom of God in a mystery. The *future* dominion of Christ is to be an open, manifest reign over the nations of the earth; a reign in which the King Himself will be visibly present among men, in which His righteous will shall be fully and clearly made known, and His just authority rigorously and constantly enforced, by the punishment of all rebels, and by the open reward of the faithful: a kingdom in which all enemies will be subdued under His feet.

This kingdom is represented in Daniel as destined *immediately to succeed the four universal monarchies*, whose conjoint existence occupies the "times of the Gentiles,"—as immediately following the fall of Rome, the fourth and last. In the earlier vision of the image we read that on its destruction the stone that smote it "became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth"; and, in the interpretation of the symbol, that at the close of the tenfold condition of Rome "the God of heaven shall set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever." In the later vision of the four beasts the same truth is reiterated, and it is stated that on the overthrow of Rome "behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought Him near before Him. And there was given Him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve Him: His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed." And

Digitized by Google

again in the close of the interpretation we read, "But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his (*i.e.* Rome's) dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end. And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him."

This is all that is revealed in Daniel about the kingdom of the Son of man and of the saints; twenty-five centuries full of events of momentous interest had to intervene before the close of the "times of the Gentiles," and the light of the earlier prophecies was made to fall on that long *interval*, rather than on its *close*. The broad fact was presented that at last the wild-beast empires should come to an end; that the persecutions and blasphemies of the "little horn" should cease for ever, and be followed by the glorious reign of Christ and His saints. But of this final kingdom *no* particulars were given, save that it should *last for ever*, and never be succeeded or replaced by any *other* dominion. Unlike the previous empires, which each in turn fell, and made room for its successor, this kingdom was to be everlasting, "it shall stand for ever." According to the plan consistently pursued in sacred prophecy however, fuller light on this subject was given later on; progressive revelations, as to the distinctive features of this future kingdom of God, were made by Christ Himself and His apostles; and in the closing visions of the Apocalypse given to John in Patmos, the nature and divisions, the blessings and the glories of it, were unfolded, as well as *the order of events connected with its introduction.* There it is clearly revealed that, as might have been expected, a period of time and a series of events which together constitute what we may call THE SECOND ADVENT ERA, will intervene between the end of old Rome and the full establishment of the eternal kingdom of God on earth. It is shown that the coming kingdom is to be divided chronologically into two parts: a first, or opening section, which is to last for a thousand years; and a second, or main portion, which is to last for ever. We speak of the first, in consequence of its predicted duration, as the MILLENNIUM, and of the second, because of its endlessness, as THE ETERNAL KINGDOM. These two sections

Digitized by Google

bear to each other the relation of a portico to a building, or of birth to life, *the one being merely a brief introduction to the other.* The millennial reign of Christ is an introductory time of putting down all rule and authority and power, of bringing everything into subjection to Divine authority, of giving men one last supreme season of probation under the righteous government of Christ Himself. It is *the final stage in the work of redemption* prior to the introduction of its eternal *results.* It closes by the destruction of the last enemy, death, together with the final expulsion and punishment of its author; and the eternal kingdom dates from this close and completion of the redeeming work of Christ.

The statements of Scripture leave no room whatever to question that the millennial reign of Christ is distinctly a part of the mediatorial work, by which the human race is redeemed and placed in a better position than that which Adam lost. The progress of that redemption has already been divided into three well-marked stages, and the millennial reign is simply a fourth. Each age has been like a higher form in a school, an advance on the previous one, both in the revelation which it has made of God—His will, His character, His purposes,—and in the degree of saving blessing which it has brought to mankind. The patriarchal age revealed the power of God to create and (in the flood) to destroy; but from Adam to Moses there was no law, no moral law, to make known the Divine holiness, no ceremonial law to typify the great salvation to be revealed in its season. Judaism brought both of these, and then Christianity brought the great salvation itself. Thus the creative power, the perfect holiness, and the wondrous grace of God our Saviour have been all duly illustrated in succession; but the governmental power, the righteousness and justice of God, blended with infinite love, are yet to be fully manifested on earth, and *the millennial reign of Christ is the age in which this last manifestation is to take place.* The Christian dispensation has been one of forbearance with sin and of *grace* to sinners, but one in which God's power and justice have been almost as much concealed in His dealings with the world at large—as His glory. But the millennial age is fully to exhibit these attributes; it is to be a reign of righteousness, a time of reward-

Digitized by Google

ing His saints and servants, a time of destroying those that destroy the earth, of ruling all nations with a rod of iron,—that is, in inflexible justice and resistless strength. "He that overcometh, and keepeth My works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of My Father."[1] "Behold, a King shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment." "He shall judge Thy people with righteousness, and Thy poor with judgment; He shall break in pieces the oppressor. In His days shall the righteous flourish." "The glory of the Lord shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together." It is the age of the manifestation of the power, righteousness, and glory of God in Christ.

But just as all the previous ages or dispensations of Providence, which have afforded so many stages of probation to mankind, have ended in apostasy and judgment, so, according to the teachings of Scripture, will even this millennial age, although so supremely blessed and glorious during its course. It is not only introduced by an era of judgment (Rev. xix. 19–23) but, like all previous dispensations, *it closes with a similar era* (Rev. xx. 7–15). The opening era witnesses the destruction of the Roman beast, with his false prophet and worshippers, the kings of the earth and their armies, together with the binding of Satan for a thousand years; while the closing era witnesses the final destruction of Satan, and of the rebel hosts gathered through his deceptions, as well as the destruction of the last enemy, death and hades being cast into the lake of fire (Rev. xx. 10, 13). Then—the work of redeeming the race of the first Adam having been fully accomplished by the second Adam, the woman's Seed having crushed the serpent's head,—the mediatorial kingdom of Christ passes into His eternal kingdom, as it is written: "Then cometh the end, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For He must reign, till He *hath* put all enemies under His feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. . . . And when

[1] Rev. ii. 26, 27.

Digitized by Google

all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him, that God may be all in all."

As Mediator, He delivers up the kingdom to God, even the Father, while as God and Man He continues to reign for ever and ever, for the eternal throne is "the throne of God and of the Lamb."

"Christ is perfect God and perfect Man, in two distinct natures and in one Person for ever. As very God of very God, He is one with the eternal Father; and as Man, He is one with His redeemed people. But He is also a mediator between God and a fallen world. In the fulfilment of this office He veiled for a time His Divine glory, and though truly God, 'made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant.' Therefore He will also hereafter, as Mediator, exercise for a season a peculiar dominion, till all enemies shall be subdued under His feet. The era of this peculiar sovereignty will be the millennium, or the day of future judgment. As God, He will share *for ever* in the supreme worship and dominion rendered to God the Father. The throne which is surrounded with eternal adoration is the throne 'of God and of the Lamb.' As Man, He will also enjoy an everlasting dominion, to be shared with His people. But the peculiar dominion which He holds as Mediator will cease. When death, the last enemy, shall be destroyed, its purpose will have been completely attained. The God-Man will then resign that *special* dominion which He has held during the time of judgment. Thenceforth, as the Lamb in the midst of the throne, He will share in His Father's glory; and, as the Son of man, He will never cease to exercise visible sovereignty over a ransomed universe." [1]

Later Scriptures about the kingdom thus amplify the brief, condensed, early predictions of Daniel. Similarly, in the earliest prophecies of the coming of Christ, His first and second advents were so blended, that they could not be distinguished apart; while in later ones there were intimations that the advent must be doubled, for Messiah was to be "cut off," on the one hand, and to reign for ever, on the other. It was not until the time of the first advent itself that it was made clear to the minds of His disciples that the sufferings of Christ must by a considerable interval precede "the glories that should follow"; and even they never understood *how long* an interval was to elapse between His advent to suffer and His advent to reign. So, as regards

[1] Rev. J. R. Birks: "The First Two Visions of Daniel," p. 372.

Digitized by Google

this kingdom. As foretold by Daniel, it seemed to be *one;* as more distinctly predicted in the New Testament, it is evidently *twofold*, like a star that to the naked eye may appear single, while under the telescope it shows itself to be double. It is important that this peculiarity of prophecy should be borne in mind, so that the fuller particulars of subsequent visions may be welcomed as giving additional light. The latest prophecy of the kingdom,—which is that in Revelation xix.-xxii.,—should be allowed to cast its final rays back over all the earlier predictions on the subject, and its consecutive visions should be employed to bind together in their proper order the separate links of previous prophecies.

It must be carefully noted that while, as regards *its subjects*, the millennium is only a final stage of probation to mankind, and no part of the eternal state, yet as regards *its rulers*, the Son of man and the saints, *their* eternal state has already commenced before it is inaugurated. This is involved in the fact of the pre-millennial advent. The Lord Jesus Christ, as Son of man, has already risen from the dead; death has no more dominion over Him; He is already clothed with a spiritual body, and His saints are to be raised and changed into His likeness, at His coming. "Christ the first-fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming." "When He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is." Raised from the dead, or changed, if living, at the voice of the archangel and the trump of God, clad in the twinkling of an eye in glorious, incorruptible, immortal, spiritual bodies, His saints are "to meet the Lord in the air," and thenceforth *their* eternal state is begun; the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His Church is for ever united to Christ in resurrection glory. It is *as risen and glorified* that "the people of the saints of the Most High take the kingdom and possess it for ever." Those who live and reign with Christ are those who have suffered with Him, including especially the martyrs, who laid down their lives for His sake, and the apostles, to whom their Master said: "Ye are they which have continued with Me in My temptations. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as My Father hath appointed unto Me; that ye may eat and drink at My

Digitized by Google

table in My kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel." [1]

To the already risen and glorified, to those already clad in spiritual bodies like our Lord's own body after His resurrection, earthly changes make no difference, their eternal state has already begun. Not in the thousand years of the millennium alone are His saints to live and reign with Christ, but as Daniel distinctly says, "for ever, even for ever and ever." So far then as the Church of which we are members is concerned, *our* eternal state commences at the first resurrection, before the millennium. Nothing that takes place during its course or subsequently can in any wise alter or affect the condition of the Church, "which is His body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all." This is clear, for the utmost perfection of creature existence must consist in full union to God, and the marriage of the Lamb brings *this* to His blood-bought Church. Even now we know what it is to be one with Christ in spirit, for "he that is joined to the Lord is one spirit." But this is regarded in Scripture merely as betrothal; in resurrection there will be that fuller and more perfect union symbolised by marriage. The latter as contrasted with the former is not a passing, but a *permanent condition.*

"'The husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the Church. . . . Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it; that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, *even as the Lord the Church; for we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones.* . . . This is a great mystery; but I speak concerning Christ and the Church."

The first resurrection or marriage of the Lamb introduces the eternal future of the Church.

But the Church is not *all* that Christ has redeemed by His atoning death; on the contrary, it is only as the "first fruits" of a great harvest. The whole "*Church of the first born*" of all lands and ages, though "a great multitude

[1] Luke xxii. 28-30.

Digitized by Google

which no man can number," bears the same relation to the entire number of the redeemed as the "*first fruits*" presented of old before God to the entire harvest of the country. This is distinctly stated in Scripture: "Of His own will begat He us with the word of truth, that we should be *a kind of first fruits of His creatures.*"[1]

In order then to obtain clear conceptions of the teachings of Scripture as to the future kingdom of Christ, it is needful to bear in mind

1. That the kingdom of the Son of man and of the saints, which is to succeed that of Rome, is *an everlasting kingdom*, never to be succeeded by any other—the *last* form of government which this earth is ever to know—the eternal, manifested kingdom of God over the redeemed race of man.

2. That the millennium is only the first thousand years of this never-ending reign.

3. That this introductory section is distinguished by its being the closing age or dispensation of this *old* world, prior to the creation of "the new heavens and the new earth"; that it is part of the *work* of redemption, and not a part of its perfected *results*.

4. That during the course of the millennium redeemed *humanity* has not entered on its eternal state, though the saints who rise in the first resurrection and who live and reign with Christ, "the Church of the first born," have done so.

5. That to Daniel in Old Testament times, the historical position of this kingdom alone was revealed, without any detail as to its character and course; and that to John in Patmos, six hundred years later, after the first advent, much fuller particulars were made known, so that the Apocalypse gives in detail the *order* of the events destined to occur both in the pre-millennial advent era, and in the post-millennial transition from the introductory thousand years to the eternal portion of the kingdom of God.

The order of events which it reveals in its closing chapters (xviii.–xxi.) must not be changed or reversed. It is the final programme of the future. It puts first the fall of Babylon, followed immediately by the marriage of the Lamb, in-

[1] Jas. i. 18.

Digitized by Google

volving the "first resurrection," or resurrection of saints. Then the glorious epiphany of Christ and His saints for the final Armageddon conflict and victory. Next the binding of Satan, and the millennial reign of Christ and His saints, followed by the loosing of Satan for a little season, the post-millennial apostasy, and the judgment on it, the final destruction of Satan, the judgment of the dead, the second death, and then the descent of the New Jerusalem and the eternal kingdom of God.

This is the *order* in which the Divine visions follow each other in the closing chapters of the Apocalypse, and there is *no warrant whatever for any transposition of the events symbolised.* Here is the detailed Divine programme of what we may call THE SECOND ADVENT ERA, the period between the fall of Babylon, or final end of Rome Papal, and the full establishment of the *eternal* kingdom of God on earth. The "times of the Gentiles," lasting twenty-five centuries, were introduced, as we have seen, by the captivity era,—a transition period of one hundred and sixty years in length, during which Jewish power was declining, and Gentile power rising triumphant over it. The nineteen centuries of the Christian dispensation were introduced, as we have seen, by a Messianic and apostolic era of a century in length. Similarly the 1,260 years of the apostasy were introduced by the bisection era of the rise of the apostasies, of over a century in length. What wonder if the era of transition between the six thousand years of the dominion of *Satan* over this world, and the ETERNAL KINGDOM OF GOD be a period of a thousand years!

We are now living in "the time of the end" of the *Gentile age.* The millennium itself, with its introductory and closing events, may be regarded as "the time of the end" of the *entire story* of man's redemption and restoration to full fellowship with God; for we must repeat that though the Church has reached *her* full perfection prior to its commencement, *the rest of the redeemed do not do so until its close.* To mankind at large the millennial reign is indeed the Sabbath of its long week of sin and sorrow, toil and suffering, a bright *earnest* of the full blessedness which awaits it in the "new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness." But it is nevertheless widely different from that perfected condition;

Digitized by Google

for not until it is over, not until after the final judgment of the wicked, and the destruction of Satan and of death, is it said *of the state of things which is to succeed the millennium and last for ever*, "that there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away," and "all things" made "new."

Even the glorious millennial reign is closed by a fresh outbreak of rebellion and apostasy, bringing down fresh judgments and destructions; but in the new heavens and in the new earth such experiences are for ever excluded. The blessedness of the nations of the saved is never again to be disturbed by sin and Satan, by death and judgment: in the eternal kingdom there shall be "*no more curse*," but unbroken peace and joy in perfect fellowship with God, in paradise restored in the new earth.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXI.

THE RULERS IN THE COMING KINGDOM.

In the glorious predictions as to the coming kingdom of God on earth, much is revealed, but more is left in obscurity and involved in utmost mystery. When we have focussed on these predictions the light that streams from many other parts of Scripture, we yet feel that only the salient features become visible, and that the detail lies buried still in deep shadow. Eager imagination with her ready wings will fly unbidden forward, seeking some twig on which to alight, but she finds only a sea of mystery, and the fogs of ignorance soon drive her back to the shore of revelation, where faith may find firm foothold. That a multitude of difficulties should confront us when we try to conceive in detail the condition of society and of the earth during this millennial reign of Christ is only what might be expected. Could the Jews of the Old Testament conceive the state of things now existing in the gospel dispensation: God dwelling in the hearts of men instead of a temple made with hands; national distinctions abolished, and Gentiles more highly privileged than Jews; religion independent of external observances, and the law replaced by the gospel? Could they conceive how Messianic prophecy would be fulfilled? With what apparent contradictions it must to their minds have abounded! How could the everlasting Father, the mighty God, be *born as a child* and given as a son? How was the throne and government of David to be ordered and established with judgment and with justice for ever as predicted, when it was foretold elsewhere that restored Jerusalem was to be destroyed by "the people of a prince that should

Digitized by Google

come" against it, and made desolate on account of its sins? How could David's Son be David's Lord, or a virgin conceive and bear a child? Above all, how could the Messiah, the elect Servant of God, be exalted and extolled and very high, and at the same time despised and rejected, wounded and bruised, stricken, smitten, and laid in a grave? That these difficulties could not be explained beforehand was however no reason why the predictions which suggested them should not be received and believed. And similarly—that we cannot conceive *how* the Divine predictions about the coming kingdom can be accomplished, is no good ground for our hesitating to believe that accomplished they will be. Messianic prophecy is all fulfilled, and the facts of gospel history shed back upon the ancient predictions such clear light, that to *our* minds they present little or no perplexity. So shall future fulfilments explain all that seems dark and difficult in millennial prediction. Its difficulties are not as great as those involved in the doctrine of the resurrection, which is assuredly held by all Christians, for none such think of making the difficulties attending a belief of this doctrine a reason for rejecting it; why then should the slighter difficulties attending the statements of Scripture as to the future kingdom make us hesitate to receive them?

Fully recognising therefore the existence of difficulties which are for the present insoluble, let us seek to gather up the light that *is* afforded, both by the Old and New Testaments, as to that kingdom, for whose coming we daily pray.

The best and brightest characteristic of this glorious period is, that during its course the Son of man will again be personally manifested on earth. We do not say that His presence will be *confined to earth as in the days of His flesh;* He that liveth and was dead is now alive for evermore, incarnate still, though not in flesh and blood, but in a spiritual resurrection body, a glorified humanity. He can never again of course be subject to the conditions of time and space and material existence, as formerly, and therefore the statement that He will reign on this earth does not exclude His presence elsewhere. Even in the days of His flesh, and while on earth, He spoke of Himself as "the Son of man who is in heaven." How impossible then to limit

Digitized by Google

His presence to any one sphere now or in the future! In the forty days which elapsed after His resurrection we have proof that the powers of the spiritual body transcend all our conceptions; on the first day of His resurrection our Lord spoke to the woman in the morning, ascended to His Father and our Father, to His God and our God, in the day, and was present the same evening in the upper chamber in Jerusalem in the midst of His disciples. His personal reign on earth must be understood as affirming nothing further than that *He will be visibly manifested on earth during that period as He is not now;* in what way and to what extent it is not for us to say, because it is not revealed. He is now seated on His Father's throne in heaven; He is then to ascend His own throne on the earth He has redeemed—the throne of His father David in Jerusalem; and hence it is said, "The name of the city from that day shall be, The Lord is there." If he is not to be personally manifested on earth, why does the millennial vision represent Him as *coming from heaven to earth* at its commencement? and why do all the passages which speak of it associate it with His personal epiphany? "Behold, He cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see Him," can refer only to a personal advent. "Sing and rejoice, O daughter of Zion: for, lo, I come and will dwell in the midst of thee, saith the Lord." "Cry out and shout, thou inhabitant of Zion: for great is the Holy One of Israel in the midst of thee." "The Lord God will give unto Him the throne of His father David," said the angel to Mary before the birth of Jesus; "and He shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of His kingdom there shall be no end." "I saw in the night visions," says Daniel, "and, behold, one like unto the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven. . . . And there was given Him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all peoples, nations, and languages, should serve Him: His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed."

Our Lord likens Himself to a nobleman who went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom (that is, the investiture of a kingdom as from a higher court), and *to return*, to reward the faithful, punish the unfaithful, destroy

Digitized by Google

the rebellious, and establish His dominion. After the ascension the angels assured the disciples, whose minds were full of the Messianic kingdom, about the time of which they had just been inquiring—a kingdom which, as they well knew, was yet to be established on earth—that this same Jesus who had just ascended to heaven in the clouds in their sight would in like manner, *i.e.*, visibly and personally, return. The hope of *the kingdom* on earth was not lost, only postponed by the intervening age of gospel grace to the Gentile world. When "the times of the restitution of all things arrive," the heavens which received the risen Son of man will retain Him no longer; He returns to reign on the earth, where He was despised and rejected, to be crowned where He was crucified, to set up His throne where Pilate set up the cross, and inscribed over it, "This is the King of the Jews."

And he returns not alone. Scripture constantly states that in His train are to be, not only His mighty angels, but His risen and transformed saints. "When the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels"; "Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints"; or, as Zechariah expresses it, "The Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with thee. . . . And every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even come up from year to year to worship the King, the Lord of hosts."

The share which His saints are to have in His coming kingdom was often alluded to by our Lord when on earth, and is perhaps too little dwelt upon in the joyous anticipations of His people. Its definiteness, its tangible character, remove this hope widely from the vague and shadowy anticipations of "heaven," which constitute the main idea entertained by many of their future portion. Heavenly rest is not *all* that will be brought to us at the coming of the Lord, but blessed and active ministry, high and holy service. "To you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven," means, as the context shows, rest from persecution, not an inglorious and uninteresting repose, but a glorious living and reigning with Christ. His risen saints are to share with Him the active administration of His kingdom, the actual government of the world.

Digitized by Google

"Ye are they who have continued with Me in My temptations," said our Lord to His apostles, "and I appoint unto you a kingdom, as My Father hath appointed unto Me, that ye may eat and drink with Me at My table in My kingdom, and sit on twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel." In Isaiah xxxii. we read not only that "a King shall reign in righteousness," but that "princes shall rule in judgment," or in the figurative language of Psalm lxxii., that "the mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills by righteousness." "Let the saints be joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their resting-places. Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand; to execute upon the nations the judgment written: this honour have all His saints."[1]

As a king or great minister calls to his cabinet his specially trusted and valued friends, and appoints to the most responsible posts those of the most approved fidelity and ability, both for their reward and for the benefit of the kingdom, so as regards Christ and His saints. The holy martyrs are to be enthroned beside the faithful and true Witness: those who have suffered are to reign with Him. We must not regard this as a figure of speech, but as the description of an actual reality. The supreme and distinctive feature of the millennium, the personal government of Christ and His saints, must not be explained away because of certain difficulties which it presents. This reign of the risen Christ and His risen saints over the nations of the millennial earth is the very *essence* of all the predictions of Scripture on the subject, and it is reasonable and harmonious with all we know of the Divine counsels and dispensations. To make it a spiritual kingdom is to miss its character altogether. For first, as we must again recall, this kingdom is *one of a series of earthly monarchies*, standing fifth after four preceding ones. This shows that in the main it must resemble them in its nature, although having many points of total contrast. Now if the millennial reign were spiritual, it would have no resemblance whatever in its nature to Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome. This present spiritual kingdom of God does not consequently appear at all in Daniel's fore-view of

[1] Ps. cxlix. 5-9.

Digitized by Google

earthly empires; it is a thing apart, not of this world, not established by wars and victories, not maintained by military power, nor administered by laws having the sanction of present rewards and penalties. It exists, and has existed from its birth, alongside of the great Roman dominion, interfering with it as little as did Christ when on earth with Cæsar. The saints have suffered from Rome, but have never even sought to overthrow its power. The growth of the true Church has not troubled the kingdoms of this world. It has been and is distinct and wholly alien from them in nature. It is no part of the image; it is a part rather of that mysterious "stone cut out without hands" which ultimately destroys the image. The spiritual dominion of Christ in His true Church, and the temporal dominion of kings and rulers on earth are, both in their intrinsic nature and in their outward manifestation, sundered wide as the poles.

The apostate Church with its temporal dominion tried to unite them, but succeeded only in producing Babel-confusion —"Babylon the Great"; but the millennial kingdom of Christ and His saints is in no sense a continuation of this present spiritual kingdom, of this Church age of mystery and forbearance. It is a new thing in the earth, a new dispensation, wholly unlike the present. It is a manifest kingdom, as earthly as any of the previous four in its sphere, only more universal in its extent. Each one of the previous four has been larger than its predecessor, and this embraces the entire world. The stone which destroyed the image of Gentile power takes its place, succeeds it, becomes a mountain, and *fills the whole earth.* This clearly symbolises a visible, outward, earthly kingdom, universal in its extent, towering in its proportions, permanent in its duration, firm and immutable in its foundations. It is an empire which rests not on the narrow, fragile, unstable basis of clay and iron feet, easily fractured and overthrown, but on a foundation broad and stable as that of a mountain. To conceive of it as a spiritual reign of an absent and invisible monarch is to miss the entire point of the prophecy. It is not a universal *church*, but a universal *kingdom.* True, its King is also "the Head of" the Church, which is His body, the fulness

Digitized by Google

of Him that filleth all in all; true, the Church is the Eve of the second Adam, the bride of the Lamb, long betrothed as a chaste virgin to Christ, and united to Him for ever in resurrection. But His relation to *her* must never be confounded with His relation to the world. The risen saints are the associates of His glory, the sharers of His throne, the joint administrators of the kingdom, not its subjects.

In considering therefore the future of the inhabitants of the millennial earth, we who are Christians, members of "the Church of the first born," are not considering our own future, but that of others, that of those over whom it is our destiny to reign with Christ. Our own future is to be "*for ever with the Lord*," *wherever He may be*. He said, "I will come again, and RECEIVE YOU UNTO MYSELF, that where I am, there ye may be also"; and again, "Where I am, there shall also My servant be."

Unless therefore we are to limit the Christ to one spot in His universe during the coming eternity, we must not so limit ourselves. By His infinite grace we are destined to be sharers of His glory, and of His Father's peculiar love;[1] and sharers also of His work of reigning for ever and ever over the ransomed earth, and redeemed race of man. This is the revealed future of the Saints of the true Christian Church of this dispensation, and all we know of the nature of the spiritual bodies with which we are to be clothed at the resurrection, makes this wonderful and unspeakably glorious prospect seem a possible one. To bodies of flesh and blood it were of course impossible, but spiritual bodies are independent of time and space and material conditions; their motion swift as the glance of the mind, their appearance various as that of the angels, or as that of the Lord Himself after His resurrection; their constitution immaterial as that of the form that entered through closed doors, and was taken up and lost to sight in the clouds of heaven. To beings clothed in the likeness of the risen Lord, it can be no impossibility to rest in heaven and reign on earth at one and the same time. "We shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is"; we shall bear the image of the heavenly, as we

[1] "The glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them. . . . Thou hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me" (John xvii. 22, 23).

Digitized by Google

have borne the image of the earthy. Why we should have been elected to such peculiar honour is as little to be explained as why it has pleased God to redeem men rather than fallen angels. Not unto us be the glory, but unto Him who "raiseth up the poor out of the dust, and lifteth up the beggar from the dunghill: to set them among princes, and to make them inherit the throne of glory."

But it is objected that this doctrine involves the inconceivable anomaly of intercourse between men in the flesh and those who are already clad in spiritual bodies, risen and glorified. On what basis does this supposed objection rest? Is there any inherent impossibility of intercourse between heaven and earth—between God who is a spirit and His creature man? Have not revelations from the unseen world been more or less the portion of our race from the beginning? and without them would not all knowledge of God have been impossible to us? Those revelations would doubtless have been fuller and freer, more frequent and more prolonged, but for sin. Incarnation closely linked heaven and earth for a time, for the Christ belonged to both; and even death and resurrection did not sever that link, for our Lord walked and talked and ate and drank with His people for forty days subsequently. He afterwards withdrew from earth for "a little while," because it was expedient for His Church that He should do so; but it was only to send the Holy Spirit to take His place and abide in the Church till His return. Communion between earth and heaven has been widening and deepening daily ever since that day; and though it is a spiritual communion during this age of mystery, this time of the Church's walk by faith, and of God's long suffering with a sinful world, yet there seems no reason in the nature of things, either from Scripture, or from analogy, why personal intercourse between the risen Christ and men on earth and in the flesh should not be resumed. If the *risen Saviour* could so veil and lay aside His glory when occasion required it, as *to walk with the two disciples to Emmaus, and sit with them at their evening meal*, why should not both He and His risen and glorified saints do the same in the future, when occasion requires?

It is quite true that flesh and blood cannot in its own

Digitized by Google

strength stand before the full effulgence of the heavenly glory, as we learn from its overpowering effect on Isaiah, on Daniel, on the disciples on the mount of transfiguration, and on John in Patmos; but men can be strengthened to endure, on the one hand, and the glory can be veiled, on the other, as these instances prove. Are we in respect of heavenly intercourse with higher beings to limit the portion of mankind in the millennium, under the direct reign of Christ, to that of this present evil world under the direct rule of Satan? Are we to assume that because the privilege of constant communion with beings clad in spiritual bodies is denied to men *now*, that it must equally be denied in these days of heaven upon earth?

As to the risen saints, on the other hand, is there anything contrary to the most perfect spirituality and to the highest enjoyments of heavenly bliss, in the thought of ministering to, instructing, guiding, and governing beings here on earth in a lower state than that which will then be ours? Are not angels and the Lord of angels evermore doing the same even now? Would not such service be Christ-like? Is it not more blessed to give than to receive, to minister than to be ministered unto? Is not government the highest and noblest work to which intelligent beings can aspire? In its most majestic form is it not God's own work—the government of the universe? Besides, does not Scripture expressly state that apostles and saints are to do this very thing? Is not the millennial reign of Christ on earth to be *exercised through His people?* "Have thou authority over five cities, over ten cities."

We may banish the notion that this reign over the earth implies such a perpetual presence of the rulers among the ruled *as to involve exile from heaven, or exclusion from the place which the Lord Jesus is gone to prepare for us.* There is no need to imagine that the children of the resurrection will be *confined* to this earth because they *reign over it*, or that they will be limited to any one of the "many mansions" of the Father's house. They may have a special home of their own, without occupying it all the time. The countless stars of the midnight sky show us how numerous and how glorious those many mansions are. Shall we not visit them all by

Digitized by Google

degrees as well as reign over this one, and enjoy our own prepared place? Surely the Lord never intended to imply that because He is gone to prepare a special residence for His bride, therefore she was to be to all eternity confined to it alone!

All difficulties as to the conditions of existence during the millennium and during the Eternal Kingdom of God which follows, will be found on reflection to arise from our ignorance merely, and not from any inherent impossibility. Now we know in part only—revelation is only partial. Then shall we know as we are known.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXII.

THE SUBJECTS IN THE COMING KINGDOM.

THE coming kingdom is then to be *administered* by Christ and His risen saints. But who are to be *the subjects* of the kingdom?

Of the eternal section of it we will speak later; but of the first millennial stage of it we reply, all the human race who outlive the pre-millennial judgments, and their descendants for a thousand years, that is to say for between thirty and forty generations; and especially the restored nation of Israel, which is to "blossom and bud and fill the face of the earth with fruit."

The pre-millennial judgments are apparently to be of limited extent, and confined chiefly to the "body" of the fourth beast; that is to say, to the sphere of papal Christendom. So we read in Daniel,—

"I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spake: I beheld even till the (fourth or Roman) beast was slain, and *his body destroyed*, and given to the burning flame. As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet *their lives were prolonged* for a season and time."[1]

Here it is distinctly stated that while the dominion is taken away from all the beasts alike, the body of the fourth alone is "destroyed and given to the burning flame." Very solemn and awful is the prediction conveyed by this symbol; for the *body* of the beast, as contrasted with its *dominion*, would seem to represent its territory and population, its armies and navies, its towns and cities, and its wealth. The future must unveil the meaning of this very terrible prophecy as to Papal Christendom. It should be compared with the statements

[1] Dan. vii. 11, 12.

Digitized by Google

in 2 Thessalonians i. 11, about the doom of apostate Christendom as a whole, as well as with the description of the last conflict with "the beast, and the false prophet, and the kings of the earth, and their armies," in Revelation xix., and with Jude's description of the persons on whom the advent judgments will fall.

But whatever be the extent of these pre-millennial judgments, whether they fall on the leaders of apostasy, or on all involved in it, in either case it seems probable that *the vast majority of the human race will be left on earth to be blessed by the reign of the Son of man and of the saints.* Out of the world's present population of twelve or fourteen hundred millions, probably less than two hundred millions are involved in the apostasy of Rome; and even they are not all resident in the territory which forms the body of the fourth beast. After the destruction of the false Church, and the rapture of the true, there may therefore still remain many many millions of mankind to be saved and blessed under the new dispensation.

The millions of China and India; the numerous tribes of Central Asia, the Thibetans, the Mongols, and the Japanese; the Arabs, the Berbers, the Egyptians, and the Foulahs of North Africa; the hundred millions of the benighted Bantu races of Central Africa; the great Zulu and Kafir nations of South Africa; the Indians of both the Americas, and the rest of the earth's inhabitants,—all will apparently remain to share in the rich benedictions of the millennial reign of Christ.

The oppressed Christian races of Turkey envy the Englishman his privileges of living under a comparatively good government, and well they may! The best earthly governments seek to defend their people from all external foes and domestic evil doers, and to secure for them all possible advantages. What will the government of Christ do for this long-oppressed world? His very first act is to deliver mankind from its greatest enemy by the binding of Satan, and who can conceive the further blessings which His righteous rule will secure to men?

Over all the spared nations of the millennial earth the beneficent sway of the kingly Christ will be established, to

Digitized by Google

their infinite and unspeakable good. By far the greater part of them will never have heard of Him and His great salvation; for the conversion of the heathen is hardly begun as yet, and this age is now near its end. The gospel has been preached during its course "in all the world, for a witness unto all nations," as our Lord predicted that it should be, adding, "and then shall the end come." Some have been gathered out of every nation and kindred and people and tongue, to form part of the Christian Church; but the converts from existing heathenism do not as yet number more than *one* million out of the thousand millions of idolaters. The blessed task of teaching the remainder to know the Lord is reserved for restored and converted Israel [1] in the glad millennial days, when it will proceed at a wondrously different rate, and with wondrously different results, to the missionary work of this age; so that ere long "the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea." To the missionaries of these last days of the Christian age it is given, in obedience to their Lord's command, "to call out from among the heathen a people for His name," by the proclamation of the gospel of His *grace;* but when the Church is removed from earth, "THE GLORY of the Lord shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together." When "THY JUDGMENTS are in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness." "Who shall not fear Thee, O Lord, and glorify Thy name? for Thou only art holy: for ALL NATIONS SHALL COME AND WORSHIP BEFORE THEE; FOR THY JUDGMENTS ARE MADE MANIFEST." [2]

[1] "For, behold, *the Lord will come with fire*, and with His chariots like a whirlwind, to render His anger with fury, and His rebuke with flames of fire. For by fire and by His sword will the Lord plead with all flesh: and the slain of the Lord shall be many. . . . It shall come, that *I will gather all nations and tongues;* and they shall come, and *see My glory*. And I will set a sign among them, and *I will send those that escape of them* (*i.e.* of Israel) *unto the nations*, to Tarshish, Pul, and Lud, that draw the bow, to Tubal, and Javan, *to the isles afar off, that have not heard My fame, neither have seen My glory; and they shall declare My glory among the Gentiles*. . . . And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one Sabbath to another, *shall all flesh come to worship before Me, saith the Lord*" (Isa. lxvi. 15-23).

[2] Rev. xv. 4.

Digitized by Google

From the call of Abraham onwards the goodness of God has been continually widening the sphere of its operation in this ruined earth. It embraced, first, a single human family, the family of Abraham; then it extended to all the tribes of Israel, and subsequently to the Jewish nation; then it reached out to the Gentiles, and formed a Church of men and women, chosen out of every nation and kindred and people and tongue. In millennial days it is *to embrace the wide world.* "In Thee, and in Thy seed, shall *all nations* of the earth be blessed."

First and highest among the nations of the millennial earth is to rank restored and converted Israel, "to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises; whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is God over all, blessed for ever:[1] Israel, to whom it is now said, "Ye are not My people," but to whom it shall then be said, "Ye are the children of the living God": Israel, who has now stumbled over the incarnation of Christ as over a stumbling-stone, and who, seeking righteousness by the works of the law, has failed to obtain it, but of whom a remnant shall yet be converted and saved: Israel, whose fall has been the riches of the world, but whose recovery shall be to it as life from the dead: Israel, so long like a branch broken off from the olive tree of promise, but who, when they cast away their unbelief, shall be grafted in again as natural branches to their own olive tree: Israel, to whom blindness in part has happened, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in, when "all Israel shall be saved": Israel, who is still beloved for the fathers' sakes, is destined yet to stand first among the nations of the earth.

Christ, when He assumes the throne of His father David, "shall *reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of His kingdom there shall be no end.*" Of Him who is the Saviour of the world Zacharias says:

"Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for He hath visited and redeemed His people, and hath raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of His servant David; as He spake by the mouth of His holy prophets, which have been since the world began: that *we should be saved from our*

[1] Rom. ix. 4, 5.

Digitized by Google

enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; to perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and *to remember His holy covenant;* the oath which He sware to our father Abraham, that He would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might *serve Him without fear, in holiness and righteousness before Him, all the days of our life.*"

The Old Testament is full of the glorious future which lies before that nation of Israel on their repentance and conversion at the coming of Christ. The gifts and calling of God are without repentance, and He who has long been "a Light to lighten the Gentiles" is then to become also "the glory of His people Israel." The detailed descriptions of millennial bliss which abound in the prophets, were given *to the Jews* as predictions of *the kingdom of their Messiah.* Isaiah alone has twenty-five distinct prophecies of Israel's glorious future under Messiah the Prince. Ezekiel is full of the return of the glory of God to Jerusalem and to the temple; and from Daniel and Zechariah also we learn much of their millennial blessedness, as well as of that of the Gentile nations of those days.

From Isaiah we learn that in the last days the mountain of the Lord's house is to be established in the top of the mountains, and exalted above the hills, that all nations are to flow unto it.

"Many people shall say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem. And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plough-shares, and their spears into pruning-hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more."

That this prophecy applies to millennial days, and not to the present dispensation, is clear, because of the latter our Lord says, that during its whole course "nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom"; adding as to the Jews, "they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and be led away captive into all nations"; and as to their temple, that not one stone of it shall be left upon another: and as to Jerusalem, that it shall be "trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles shall be fulfilled."

Digitized by Google

In Isaiah xi. and xii. we have a prophecy of the time when the Rod out of the stem of Jesse, and the Branch out of his roots, shall arise, the Spirit of the Lord resting upon Him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord. He is to judge the poor with righteousness, and to reprove with equity for the meek of the earth; to smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips to slay the wicked. Righteousness is to be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His reins; and the condition of the earth is described in that familiar and most poetic passage commencing, "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb," and closing with the statement, "They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea."

This is clearly the millennium, and it *follows* the second restoration of Israel: "In that day the Lord shall set His hand again the second time to restore the remnant of His people" from all lands. He shall "assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth." Ephraim and Judah are to be reconciled and form one nation again; and as regards the Gentile nations, it is added that this Root of Jesse shall stand "for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek, and His rest shall be glorious." The twenty-fourth and the following chapters of Isaiah are similarly full of Israel's millennial experiences. The prophecy commences with a description of the judgments of God on Israel and on the earth, leading up to the climax of the binding of Satan; and then immediately following we find the striking prediction of the glorious reign of Christ. "Then the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of hosts shall reign in Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before His ancients gloriously." "In this mountain shall the Lord of hosts make unto all people a feast, . . . and destroy the face of the covering cast over all people, and the veil that is spread over all nations. *He will swallow up death in victory;* and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of His people shall He take away from off all the earth. . . . In that day shall this song

Digitized by Google

be sung in the land of Judah: We have a strong city; salvation will God appoint for walls and bulwarks." Then follows Israel's song of praise, in which, recalling their past experiences, they say,

"O Lord our God, other lords beside Thee have had dominion over us. They are dead, they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise: Thou hast visited and destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish. Thou hast increased the nation, O Lord, Thou hast increased the nation: Thou art glorified: Thou hadst removed it far unto all the ends of the earth. Lord, in trouble have they visited Thee, they poured out a prayer when Thy chastening was upon them. . . . In that day shall the Lord of hosts be for a crown of glory, and for a diadem of beauty unto the residue of His people."

The thirty-second chapter of Isaiah is another of the magnificent millennial prophecies of the book. "Behold, a King shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment. And a man shall be as a hiding-place from the wind, and a covert from the tempest; as rivers of water in a dry place, as the shadow of a great rock in a weary land." Then follows a description of the present judgments of Israel, and a statement that they shall last

"until the Spirit be poured upon us from on high, and the wilderness be a fruitful field, and the fruitful field be counted for a forest. Then judgment shall dwell in the wilderness, and righteousness remain in the fruitful field. And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever. And My people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings, and in quiet resting places.

And again:

"Thine eyes shall see Jerusalem a quiet habitation, a tabernacle that shall not be taken down; not one of the stakes thereof shall ever be removed, neither shall any of the cords thereof be broken. But there the glorious Lord will be unto us a place of broad rivers and streams; wherein shall go no galley with oars, neither shall gallant ship pass thereby. For the Lord is our judge, the Lord is our lawgiver, the Lord is our king; He will save us. . . . And the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick; the people that dwell therein shall be forgiven their iniquity."

The blessing brought to the remainder of the earth by the restoration of Israel is further enlarged upon in the thirty-fifth chapter.

Digitized by Google

"The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose. It shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing. The glory of Lebanon shall be given unto it, the excellency of Carmel and Sharon, they shall see the glory of the Lord, and the excellency of our God. Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees. Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompense; He will come and save you. Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as a hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. . . . No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there; and the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."

In the fifty-first chapter of this book again is another touching and beautiful picture of Divine grace and Jewish restoration.

"Therefore the redeemed of the Lord shall return, and come with singing unto Zion; and everlasting joy shall be upon their head: they shall obtain gladness and joy; and sorrow and sighing shall flee away. I, even I, am He that comforteth you: who art thou, that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass; and forgettest the Lord thy Maker, that hath stretched forth the heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth; and hast feared continually every day because of the fury of the oppressor, as if he were ready to destroy? and where is the fury of the oppressor? The captive exile hasteneth that he may be loosed, and that he should not die in the pit, nor that his bread should fail. But I am the Lord thy God, that divided the sea, whose waves roared. The Lord of hosts is His name. And I have put My words in thy mouth, and I have covered thee in the shadow of Mine hand, that I may plant the heavens, and lay the foundations of the earth, and say unto Zion, Thou art My people. . . . Behold, I have taken out of thine hand the cup of trembling, even the dregs of the cup of My fury; thou shalt no more drink it again: but I will put it into the hand of them that afflict thee; which have said to thy soul, Bow down, that we may go over: and thou hast laid thy body as the ground, and as the street to them that went over. Awake, awake; put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into thee the uncircumcised and the unclean. Shake thyself from the dust; arise, and sit down, O Jerusalem: loose thyself from the bands of the neck, O captive daughter of Zion. For thus saith the Lord,

Digitized by Google

Ye have sold yourselves for nought; and ye shall be redeemed without money."

But of all the glorious pictures of millennial blessedness contained in the Bible, none exceeds in fulness and distinctness the long prophecy commencing in the sixtieth chapter: "Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee." It follows immediately an account of the pre-millennial judgments of Christ, when He clothes Himself in garments of vengeance, and recompenses His enemies according to their deeds; when the nations learn in consequence to fear His name from the west, and His glory from the rising of the sun; when the enemy having come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord lifts up a standard against him, and the Redeemer comes to Zion and turns away ungodliness from Jacob. Then we read:

"The Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising. . . . The sons also of them that afflicted thee shall come bending unto thee; and all they that despised thee shall bow themselves down at the soles of thy feet; and they shall call thee, The city of the Lord, The Zion of the Holy One of Israel.

"Whereas thou hast been forsaken and hated, so that no man went through thee, I will make thee an eternal excellency, a joy of many generations. . . . Thou shalt know that I the Lord am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, the mighty One of Jacob. . . . And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your ploughmen and your vinedressers. But ye shall be named the priests of the Lord: men shall call you the ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves. . . . And their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and their offspring among the people: all that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed which the Lord hath blessed. . . . And the Gentiles shall see thy righteousness, and all kings thy glory; and thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the Lord shall name. Thou shalt also be a crown of glory in the hand of the Lord, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy God. Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate; but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the Lord delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married. . . . And they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the Lord: and thou shalt be called Sought out, A city not forsaken." [1]

[1] "The introduction of this happy state is marked in the prophecy by two main events. First, the travailing of Zion, from which she is

Digitized by Google

Time would fail us to quote all the similar passages in Jeremiah and the later prophets, describing the blessedness of the Jewish people in the land of Canaan, the metropolitan glory of the city of Jerusalem, and the blessed portion of the Gentile nations, under the righteous sceptre of the Son of David. As regards Israel, it is expressly declared that all this blessedness is to be theirs, not for the few generations of the millennium only, but *for ever;* no words can be stronger than those used to describe the perpetuity of Israel's glory.

"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in My people: and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying. There shall be no more thence an infant of days, nor an old man that hath not filled his days: for the child shall die a hundred years old; but the sinner being a hundred years old shall be accursed. And they shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them. They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant, and another eat; for as the days of a tree are the days of My people, and Mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed of the Lord, and their offspring with them. And it shall come to pass, that before they call I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear. The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, saith the Lord."

No candid student, after a careful study of these passages,

suddenly delivered, when a nation is brought forth in a day, and the long sorrows of Jerusalem are to be followed by full and lasting joy; secondly, the coming of the Lord, to plead with all flesh by fire and sword, when the slain of the Lord shall be many, and He will gather all nations and tongues, and they shall come and see His glory. It is plain how exactly this agrees with the description in Rev. xix. 11-21, where the Son of God is said to appear with fiery judgment, and the host of rebels from all nations are slain by the sword which proceeds out of His mouth. The prophecy sets before us three main events, as if they were all simultaneous: a glorious advent of the Lord for judgment; the restoration and the glory of Israel; and the introduction of the new heavens and new earth, in which Jerusalem shall be a rejoicing, and her people a joy."—"*Outlines of Unfulfilled Prophecy*," p. 250.

Digitized by Google

and the numerous similar ones that might be quoted from Isaiah, can question the political restoration, the spiritual conversion, and the exceeding blessedness of the seed of Abraham in the coming kingdom of Christ. Jeremiah gives precisely the same view. Gentile "strangers shall no more serve themselves of Israel." Those that spoil them shall be spoiled; the Jewish people themselves will be obedient; "they shall serve the Lord their God, and David their king." They shall be greatly multiplied: "I will multiply them, and they shall not be few; I will glorify them, and they shall not be small." They shall be "satisfied with the goodness of the Lord." They shall come and sing on the height of Zion, and not sorrow any more at all. They shall "come again from the land of the enemy"; and the assurances given of the certainty and perpetuity of all these blessings seem expressly intended to combat the Gentile unbelief, now so prevalent, as to the possibility of such Jewish restoration.

"Thus saith the Lord: If ye can break My covenant of the day, and My covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season; then may also My covenant be broken with David My servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon his throne; and with the Levites the priests, My ministers. As the host of heaven cannot be numbered, neither the sand of the sea measured: so will I multiply the seed of David My servant, and the Levites that minister unto Me. Moreover the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah, saying, Considerest thou not what this people have spoken, saying, The two families which the Lord hath chosen, He hath cast them off? thus they have despised My people, that they should be no more a nation before them. Thus saith the Lord: If My covenant be not with day and night, and if I have not appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth; then will I cast away the seed of Jacob, and David My servant, so that I will not take any of his seed to be rulers over the seed of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob: for I will cause their captivity to return, and have mercy on them."

Ezekiel confirms the testimony, and dwells on the spiritual change which will take place in Israel.

"I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land. Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you. And I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh. And I will put My Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in My statutes, and ye shall

Digitized by Google

keep My judgments, and do them. And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be My people, and I will be your God. I will also save you from all your uncleannesses: and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you. And I will multiply the fruit of the tree, and the increase of the field, that ye shall receive no more reproach of famine among the heathen. . . . Thus saith the Lord God: In the day that I shall have cleansed you from all your iniquities I will also cause you to dwell in the cities, and the wastes shall be builded. And the desolate land shall be tilled, whereas it lay desolate in the sight of all them that passed by. And they shall say, This land that was desolate is become like the garden of Eden; and the waste and desolate and ruined cities are become fenced, and are inhabited. Then the heathen that are left round about you shall know that I the Lord build the ruined places and plant that that was desolate: I the Lord have spoken it, and I will do it."

And again in the following chapter.

"Thus saith the Lord God: Behold, O My people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. And ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I have opened your graves, O My people, and brought you up out of your graves, and shall put My Spirit in you, and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the Lord have spoken it, and performed it, saith the Lord. . . . Thus saith the Lord God: Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land: and I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwelling places, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be My people, and I will be their God. *And David My servant shall be king over them;* and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in My judgments, and observe My statutes, and do them. And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob My servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even *they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and My servant David shall be their prince for ever.* Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, and will set My sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore. My tabernacle also shall be with them: yea, I will be their God, and they shall be My people. And the heathen shall know that I the Lord do sanctify Israel, when My sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore."

Nothing can be clearer than the combined testimony of

Digitized by Google

all these passages to the facts, first, that Christ is to reign here on earth over the house of Israel, reunited, restored to their own land, converted, cleansed from all their unrighteousness, and exalted to supreme position on the earth; secondly, that during this state of things there will be Gentile nations who will learn through and from Israel the glory of the Lord, and be brought into subjection to Him, and into blessing under His dominion; thirdly, that at this time righteousness, peace, and universal prosperity will characterize the condition of the whole world; fourthly, that as regards Israel at any rate, this condition is never again to be disturbed, but to merge into an eternal enjoyment of the same privileges in the new earth; lastly, a study of the context of most of these passages will show that this condition of millennial glory follows an era of judgment and resurrection, identical in its features with those of the second advent era, described in the Apocalypse as preceding the reign of Christ.

One reason why so little *detail* is given of the millennial reign of Christ in the twentieth chapter of Revelation, or indeed in the New Testament generally, is, that its glories and blessings had been fully developed in the Old Testament. What was needed in the last prophecy therefore was *not* such details, but a clear indication of its chronological relation to the "times of the Gentiles," on the one hand, and to the eternal state, on the other. The revelation of the peculiar glory of the Gentile Church, as living and reigning with Christ at His coming, is moreover the *main* object of New Testament prophecy. It is pre-supposed that the particulars of the kingdom were already familiar; the peculiar privileges of the Gentile Church were therefore made the central subject of revelation in connexion with the millennium. "They lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years."

And not Israel only, but Israel's old neighbours, Egypt and Assyria, are to be blessed under this reign of Christ. "In that day shall Israel be the third with Egypt and Assyria, even a blessing in the midst of the land, when the Lord of hosts shall bless, saying, "Blessed be Egypt My people, and Assyria the work of My hands, and Israel Mine inheritance."

Nor Egypt and Assyria alone, but along with them all the Gentile nations of the earth who have out-lived the pre-

Digitized by Google

millenial judgments, will become the happy subjects of Messiah's kingdom; for it is written that "all peoples, nations and languages shall serve Him"; that "the kings of Tarshish and of the isles shall bring presents: the kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts: yea, *all kings shall fall down before Him: all nations shall serve Him:* . . . and men shall be blessed in Him: all nations shall call Him blessed."

We speak of Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome as of universal monarchies, because to a large extent they conquered each in turn the known world of their day. But these broad statements about the millennial kingdom are made by the inspiring Spirit, to whom the entire globe is fully known; and they imply a dominion that is *literally* world-wide. The pre-millennial judgments will have removed from the scene all the leaders of active rebellion against God, all organized opposition to the truth and to righteousness, and left it clear for the establishment of the kingdom of God on earth. But we must guard against any notion that these judgments will have depopulated the world, or even Christendom. In describing the British conquest of India we enumerate the different native princes overthrown, and the successive destruction of native governments and armies; but this by no means implies the destruction of the people, and the depopulation of the country. On the contrary, the British conquest brought to the masses of the Hindu people the blessings of peace and protection under a comparatively righteous government, and the improvement of their country and the development of its resources by the superior energy, wisdom, and wealth of England. This process may convey perhaps some idea of what the transition from the Roman to the millennial empire will be to the nations of the earth.

Pre-millennial judgments will extinguish all wild-beast *governments* as such, not all their subjects; it will put an end to Gentile *monarchy*, but not necessarily to Gentile nations; it will put an end to antichrist and to his hosts, and to all that opposes and exalts itself against God; it will put an end to all Satanic organizations of evil, and there are solemn statements that look as if even the *nations* of apostate Roman Christendom were destined to destruction.

Digitized by Google

But whatever may be the extent and sweep of the pre-millennial judgments, it is clear that an empire more vast and universal by far than any that has ever yet existed on earth is immediately to ensue, for on the destruction of the image *the stone becomes a great mountain, and fills the whole earth.* Now the might and the glory of an empire depend not mainly on its geographical extent, but on the number of its subjects; the kingdom of the Son of man and of the saints is, even in its first, millennial stage, to exceed almost infinitely the empire of the Cæsars at its widest extent; indeed, in examining a map of that empire in its palmiest days of dominion, who can fail to be struck with the comparatively small portion of the earth which it comprised? What vast regions lay outside the bounds of its sway! what multitudes of mankind never even knew of its existence! Christ shall reign, on the contrary, over a ransomed earth, and His kingdom shall be in the truest sense universal. "The Lord shall be King over *all the earth;* there shall be one Lord, and His name one." No rival monarch shall claim the allegiance of men; there will be no "prince of this world," no self-styled vicegerent of Christ, no need for armed forces to defend one part of mankind against another, no barrier of any kind between nation and nation, no diversity of laws or of religious observance; one King, one Lord over all the families of the earth, blending into one harmonious whole all the varied descendants of Shem, Ham, and Japhet.

"Oh what a bright and blessed world
This groaning earth of ours shall be,
When from his throne the Tempter hurled,
Shall leave it all, O Lord, to Thee!"

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE SECOND ADVENT ERA.

INTRODUCING THE ETERNAL KINGDOM.

WE have seen that, as the "times of the Gentiles" were introduced by the captivity era, and the long reign of the apostasies by the bisection era of their rise after the break up of the old Roman empire, so this present "time of the end" passes into a SECOND ADVENT ERA, which introduces the eternal kingdom of God. We have seen that the events of this second advent era *include* the millennium, that comparatively brief opening section of the manifested kingdom of God on earth, with its introductory and closing judgments. Its events are narrated in an orderly sequence of prophetic visions in the five closing chapters of Scripture (Rev. xviii.–xxii.). This series consists of *twelve distinct and successive visions*, extending from the close of the sixth vial—the vial of the decay of Turkish power, under which we now live—up to the full establishment of the eternal kingdom of God.

The following are the twelve visions:—

I. The fall of Babylon.[1]

II. The first resurrection—the resurrection of the saints, symbolised as "the marriage of the Lamb."[2]

III. The glorious epiphany of Christ and His saints.[3]

IV. The final Armageddon conflict and victory.[4]

V. The binding of Satan.[5]

VI. THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST AND HIS SAINTS.[6]

VII. The loosing of Satan for a little season.[7]

VIII. The post-millennial apostasy, and the judgment on it.[8]

[1] Rev. xviii. [2] xix. 6–9. [3] xix. 11. [4] xix. 17–21. [5] xx. 1–3. [6] xx. 4–6. [7] xx. 7, 8. [8] xx. 9.

Digitized by Google

IX. The final destruction of Satan.[1]
X. The judgment of the dead, small and great.[2]
XI. The destruction of the last enemy.[3]
XII. THE ETERNAL KINGDOM OF GOD.[4]

To consider each of these visions in full, comparing Scripture with Scripture, so as to condense all the light thrown on each point by the word of God, would be to write a volume on eschatology, which is beyond our present scope; but after having dwelt so long on the episodes of past history, we must not pass by this second advent era without some notice of the events which introduce the eternal kingdom that is to *succeed* all earth's changing, fleeting empires, and bless mankind for ever. We must therefore briefly consider these predicted episodes in their order.

I. THE FALL OF BABYLON.—We have in earlier chapters dwelt fully on the various stages of the fall of the antitypical Babylon, or rather, to speak more accurately, of the consuming and spoiling process which precedes that fall. The fall itself may be regarded as the *introductory* event of the second advent era. It is fully described in Revelation xviii., together with its causes and results, as also its antecedent events, and those which immediately follow it. As the true Church is doubly prefigured in Revelation as a woman and as a city—the white-robed bride of Christ, and the glorious heavenly Jerusalem,—so the false apostate Church is also doubly symbolised as a woman and as a city —the foul, scarlet-clothed, blood-drunken woman who sits on the beast, and the city which in John's day ruled over the kings of the earth, that is, ROME. This contrast settles the meaning of the symbol of "Babylon the Great"; it is *not* the Papacy as a temporal power and ruling dynasty at Rome, but the *Church* of Rome as an ecclesiastical system, long submitted to by the Roman world, and in these days, according to the prophecy, hated and despised by its ten kingdoms. Ever since the French Revolution, these "ten horns" have, as was predicted, been making her desolate and naked, eating her flesh and burning her with fire. All through "the time of the end" this process has been going

[1] Rev. xx. 10. [2] xx. 12, 13. [3] xx. 14. [4] xxi. xxii. 5.

Digitized by Google

on, and it will continue at an accelerated ratio until the final fall comes. Then God remembers Rome's iniquities, and the sorceries by which she deceived all nations; then He avenges His slaughtered saints, and destroys her who has corrupted the earth. The voice of much people in heaven is heard to proclaim, "True and righteous are His judgments: for He hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of His servants at her hand." Babylon falls completely, and for ever at last; but some memorial of her guilt and of her doom remains, for "her smoke" rises up for ever and ever.

The judgment had been fully merited. The greatest enemy to the spread of the true knowledge of God in the world has always been *a false profession of His name*. If His supposed witnesses belie His character, who shall make it known in the world? Israel's inconsistency caused the name of God to be blasphemed among the Gentiles of old, and the corruptions of the Church, and especially of the Church of Rome, have had a similar effect in this age. Its repression of the truth in unrighteousness, its perversions of sound doctrine, its persecutions of the saints of God, its guilty alliance with the world, its utter lack of the spirit of Christ, its mercenary character and conduct, have hindered instead of helped mankind, and made it a curse rather than a blessing in the earth, according to the principle, "If the light in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!" The very first step consequently towards the establishment of the kingdom of God is *the removal of this fatal hindrance*, by the destruction of the apostate and idolatrous Church. Babylon the Great is said to be "the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth"; that is, the mother of other worldly Churches, and of other idolatrous systems. How far they are to be involved in her fall is not distinctly specified; but where the moral and spiritual resemblance is close, the doom is not likely widely to differ. All who *having* the gospel fail to *obey* it *seem* to be involved in the judgment, that is, false professors of Christianity (2 Thess. i.).

Some of God's children are found in Babylon, even towards the close of her dark and dreadful history; for her fall is preceded by a loud call to them to come out of her,

Digitized by Google

lest they be partakers of her sins and of her plagues. This call has been sounding through the earth more or less ever since the days of Martin Luther, and if the true Church were faithful, it would sound now louder than ever. As in the sudden destruction of Sodom by fire from heaven, a call to come out of her, lest he should be involved in the ruin of the guilty city, was sent to Lot; and as when the tents of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram were about to be destroyed, Moses urged the people to depart from the neighbourhood of those wicked men, lest they should perish along with them, so in this case (Rev. xviii. 4, 5).

Time would fail us to dwell on the point in detail; we can only call attention to one or two features of the description given of the fall of Babylon. The final catastrophe is to be *sudden, not* gradual, like the previous stages of the "consumption" which we have considered. As some old building, long tottering and undermined, falls at last with a sudden crash, so shall the vast and ancient ecclesiastical system of Rome fall. It is not slowly to be taken down piecemeal from some external scaffolding, so as to *avoid* a shock, as is the case with the Ottoman empire, but with a sudden, startling collapse, like that of a millstone thrown into the sea, the soul-destroying system is to sink out of sight for ever. Alford renders verse 21, "Thus *with a rush* shall be thrown down Babylon, the great city, and shall never be found any more." Thrice over it is reiterated that this judgment is to come "in one hour" (*vv.* 10, 17, and 19). For 1,260 years this system has trodden under foot the sanctuary of God, persecuted His witnesses, made war against the saints, and driven the true Church into the desert; for 300 years and more her gradual consumption has been going on, and at last, "in one hour," her destruction shall come. And her fall is not only sudden, but *final.* The sounds of musicians shall never be heard in it again; artisans shall never more work there; lights shall never shine there again, nor the voice of human rejoicing be heard in it.

The *agency* employed is symbolised by fire producing the smoke which rises up for ever. Now fire is a common symbol in Scripture for *any consuming judgment*, but it has also not unfrequently been the actual agent employed, as in

Digitized by Google

the case of Sodom. As the earlier judgments on the Papacy are prefigured in this prophecy, *not* by fire, but by outpoured vials producing various effects, and as in other Scriptures fire is distinctly mentioned as employed in the destruction of the apostasy (2 Thess. i. 8), some have thought that a volcanic destruction of the Roman city and state—an event which, from the geological formation of southern Italy, is in itself far from unlikely—will probably form a feature, at any rate, of the final judgment. This seems to have been the view of the early Fathers.[1]

The holy apostles and prophets, and the dwellers in heaven are called upon to rejoice over the fall of Babylon, and immediately there is presented another and a sweeter occasion of joy, in the companion yet contrasted scene of—

II. THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB.—This second crisis of the second advent era, as presented in Revelation, is the one of all others most attractive to the heart of the true Christian.

"I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God."

This is of course *the* event of the entire series in which the spirit of the saint exults. It is the crown of all our hopes, the rich fulfilment of all our desires, leaving nothing further as regards our own portion to be longed for or looked for.

[1] Gibbon, in giving a summary of their views, says: "Intestine discord, the invasion of the fiercest barbarians, from the unknown regions of the North, pestilence and famine, comets and eclipses, earthquakes and inundations, were only so many preparatory and alarming signs of the *great* catastrophe of Rome, when the country of the Scipios and the Cæsars should be consumed by a flame from heaven, and the city of the seven hills, with her palaces, her temples, and her triumphal arches, should be buried in a vast lake of fire and brimstone." He also speaks of this country as one physically prepared for such a catastrophe, as, by the testimony of travellers and geologists, it assuredly is. (See footnotes, Elliott, vol. iv., pp., 43–45.)

Digitized by Google

Of it we say with David, "As for me, I will behold Thy face in righteousness: I shall be *satisfied*, when I awake, with Thy likeness."

This event is distinctively the hope of the Church; it is "the coming of the Lord," as distinguished from "the day of the Lord." This latter expression covers the whole era of judgment, including the millennium itself, as is abundantly illustrated by its use in the Old Testament.[1] It suggests that aspect of the second coming of Christ which is terrible to His foes, the same aspect that is presented by the illustration of the thief in the night, unexpectedness and surprise, perils and loss—the most total contrast conceivable to the aspect of "the coming of the Lord" to the Church of this dispensation. To her that coming is a sublime and simple hope, as He intended it to be, not a subject of fear and dread. "If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to Myself"; "we serve the living and true God, and *wait for His Son from heaven*"; "looking for *that blessed hope*"; "our citizenship is in heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ."

This marriage of the Lamb, or rapture of the Church, is not symbolised by any special *vision* in the book of Revelation. It is *announced as taking place at this point in the series of visions*, but it is not represented. It has sometimes been asked why this is the case, why there is no open vision of the glorious translation of the Church. The answer is probably that it is an event too brief and too rapid to be dramatised like the historic episodes foretold in this book, since it takes place "in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye." It could not be represented as taking place in the Roman earth —the stage on which most of the symbolic drama of the Apocalypse is enacted—for the first resurrection will take place all the world over; nor could it be represented as taking place in the symbolic heavens, in which part of the action of the drama transpires, for it has nothing to do with the governmental sphere; nor could it have been shown in the upper and true heavens above these latter, for "the Lord

[1] Isa. ii. 12–17; xxxiv. 1–8. Jer. xlvi. 10. Ezek. xxx. 2, 3. Joel i. 15; ii. 1, 2, 30, 31; iii. 2–16. Amos v. 18–20. Obad. xv. Zeph. i. 14–16. Zech. xiv. 1–5. Mal. iv. 1–5.

Digitized by Google

Himself shall *descend from heaven*" when He comes to receive His people, and they are caught up to meet Him *in the air*. It is not in fact a *material* event at all; for the bodies in which we are to rise are *spiritual* bodies, and the union which is to take place is a *spiritual* union. Hence it is represented by an emblem which avoids all that would be inaccurate, and comprises all that is essential. The emblem of a nuptial union recalls our Lord's own teachings about the marriage supper of the king's son, as well as many of the Old Testament types of the union between Christ and the Gentile Church: such as the marriage of Joseph to a Gentile bride in Egypt, prior to his reconciliation to his brethren; and that of Moses to another Gentile bride, prior to his appearance as the deliverer of Israel; and that of Solomon to the daughter of Pharaoh, with its typical memorial in the Song of Solomon.

This figure clearly *includes* the first resurrection, for it is said "His wife hath made herself ready." This expression could not apply to a time when the vast majority of the saints were slumbering in their graves. The spiritual body is surely a part of this bridal attire, though the white robes are said to symbolise spotless righteousness; the marriage is the full union of Christ and that Church which in resurrection He presents to Himself "a glorious Church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing, but holy and without blemish," "faultless before the throne of His glory, with exceeding joy." What symbol could be equally expressive? what other reality could answer to this symbol? The destruction of the false Church is thus appropriately followed by the contrasted espousal of the true. The one is first stripped and insulted by her guilty paramours, and then destroyed by the direct judgment of God. The other goes in with the Lamb to the marriage supper, amid the glad hallelujahs of heaven. We lose sight of the harlot amid the gloom and darkness of the smoke that rises up for ever and ever; we lose sight of the bride amid the effulgence of heavenly glory and nuptial joy. The angel says to John, "Write, Blessed are they who are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb"; there is evidently an intentional connexion between this statement and the one in the following

Digitized by Google

chapter, "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection." It connects the first resurrection with the marriage. The bride in this marriage is, as Alford remarks, "The sum of the guests who are called to the marriage."

Clearly this blessed hope of the Church contains in it no thought of judgment, but only the rapturous prospect of perfect and eternal union with Christ. It is the coming of the Lord *for* His saints, which precedes His coming *with* them, answering exactly to 1 Thessalonians iv.

III. THE EPIPHANY.—The third crisis in the second advent era is the epiphany, or glorious manifestation of Christ and His saints.

"And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on His head were many crowns; and He had a name written that no man knew, but He Himself. And He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood; and His name is called The Word of God. And the armies which were in Heaven followed Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of His mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it He should smite the nations: and He shall rule them with a rod of iron: and He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. And He hath on His vesture and on His thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS."

He who had previously come for His people now comes with them; not that there are two future comings of Christ, but only one. That coming, however, has not only two aspects, but two stages. The first brings the rapture of the Church described in 1 Thessalonians iv., when His saints, raised and changed, are caught up to meet Him in the air; but this incident transpires before He comes to the earth. It is, as it were, a halt on the journey, a pause in the royal progress of Christ from heaven to earth. What the length of the interval between the first stage of His coming and the second will be, is not mentioned in Scripture, and it is useless to speculate on the subject. *The very common assertion that it is to be three and a half years has no foundation whatever in the Bible;* it is based on the "futurist" assumption that the division of the Roman earth into ten kingdoms, and the contemporaneous reign of antichrist for "time, times, and a half" are still future, and that his reign will

Digitized by Google

occupy this period after the rapture of the Church. But the true scale of the chronology of prophecy has been demonstrated, not by theory, but by facts, in the foregoing investigation of the subject. That scale is a day for a year, and the three and a half times of the reign of the Roman antichrist terminated in 1870. It affords no clue whatever consequently to the length of the interval (if interval there is to be) between the rapture of the Church to meet her Lord in the air and the epiphany in glory here described. It is impossible either to affirm or to deny an interval at all, and still more so to determine its length.

The *order* of the two stages cannot, however, be reversed; for the rapture must precede the epiphany. When Christ appears in glory it is, as numerous Scriptures plainly declare, *accompanied by all His saints.* "The Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with Him."[1] They come with Him to take part in the judgment which follows. Do we not know that the saints shall judge the world? In this vision the saints, who in the previous one were represented as the bride, appear consequently under a different and characteristic emblem, as the "armies which were in heaven"; yet their identity is indicated by the fine linen in which they are clothed, "fine linen, white, and clean,"—the raiment of the bride.

The coming of Christ with ten thousand of His saints to execute judgment on the ungodly had been predicted even in the days of Enoch, though its exact relation to the rapture of the Church is clearly revealed only in this last prophecy. It is maintained by some that the coming here predicted and described is merely a spiritual or providential one; if so, there is no vision in the whole Apocalypse of the real personal advent, for there is no other which can by any possibility be supposed to be an advent vision. There is a judgment vision, a vision of the great white throne, but it has no accompanying advent of Christ with myriads of His saints; and besides, the judgment scene immediately succeeding this vision *requires a previous advent.*

"In short, a personal advent of Christ is the theme, the main theme,

[1] See also 1 Thess. iii. 13, iv. 14; Col. iii. 5.

Digitized by Google

of the whole Bible. The past advent did not accomplish the full results predicted. Since *it* became history, a second advent has been the dominant note in every prophetic strain, and in the Apocalypse it becomes more prominent than ever. From the "behold, He cometh with clouds" of the first chapter, to the "behold, I come quickly" of the last, this theme pervades the book. The Apocalypse is a grand drama, the epiphany is its climax. "Hold fast till I come," is Christ's own word to Smyrna; "Behold, I come quickly," His encouragement to Philadelphia; the redeemed in heaven rejoice in the prospect, "We shall reign on the earth"; on the sounding of the seventh trumpet, the elders fall down in worship before God, because the moment is at last come when He is to take His great power and reign on earth. Under the sixth vial the Lord repeats the warning note, 'Behold, I come as a thief'; and the Apocalypse, yea, the Bible itself, ends with the same promise, 'Surely, I come quickly.'"

Now the present vision is the passage, and the only passage, where such a glorious advent of our Lord is distinctly described. Till then He is seen in spirit, as the Lamb in the heavenly places, as the Priest at the heavenly altar, as the mighty Angel, the mysterious Messenger of the covenant, while the hour of mystery still continues, and still repeats the warning, "Behold, I come." Here, in the vision, the heaven is opened, and He is seen to come in manifest glory as the Word of God. After this He is spoken of as already come. In the very scene where the powers of evil have just been overthrown, and from which Satan has just been banished, His people "reign with Christ a thousand years." When the white throne is seen, He is *already present* to occupy it; and not a word is given to indicate a fresh arrival of Him who sits to execute the judgment. All converges on the advent before this vision, all centres on a personal advent of the Word in the vision itself, all implies a previous advent in the visions which follow. *And hence the internal evidence that the real advent is here described is complete.*" [1]

Suppose, for a moment, that the place occupied by it were left a blank, that the prophecy passed at once from the marriage of the Lamb to the destruction of the anti-Christian host. Other Scriptures would force us to place the second coming of Christ between those two scenes. The destruction of the beast and the false prophet demand a previous epiphany, according to 2 Thessalonians ii.; and the rapturous marriage of the Lamb in heaven, the meeting in the air of Christ and His saints, requires a subsequent manifestation, according to 2 Thessalonians i. 10.

IV. The War of Armageddon.—The fourth great crisis

[1] Birks: "Outlines of Unfulfilled Prophecy," p. 83.

Digitized by Google

of the second advent era, as presented in the Apocalypse, is the final conflict with and overthrow of the confederate hosts of evil, represented under the symbols of "the beast and the false prophet, and the kings of the earth, and their armies." The *gathering* of these God-opposing hosts immediately *precedes* the advent, and the instruments of it are symbolised as "three unclean spirits, like frogs," issuing out of the mouth of the beast, the dragon, and the false prophet. These are, we are told, the spirits of devils, which go forth to gather the kings of the earth "to the battle of the great day of God Almighty." What is intended by this symbol of frogs? It is not the first time we meet them in Scripture. These small, multitudinous, noisy, croaking creatures constituted one of the plagues of the typical Egypt in its day of judgment. They swarmed alike into the houses of the king and of his servants; they entered into the bed-chambers, and polluted the very beds; they were found in the ovens, and even in the kneading troughs. To understand the force of the emblem one must have heard the frightful noise made by frogs in southern Europe and other hot countries. They are a singularly suitable type of vain, loquacious talkers and agitators, deluding and seducing the minds of men; and such agitation can be carried on by the press as well as from the platform. The symbol would seem to denote the rapid and universal diffusion of God-opposing doctrines and theories inspired by the dragon, Satan himself, or by his great agent "the beast," or by his false priesthood. Does not the symbol point to the modern wide circulation by platform and by press of infidel, ultramontane, and tractarian doctrines; and especially to the multitudinous foul and blaspheming *publications* of this and other countries of Europe; to the *ni Dieu ni maître* style of periodical so abundant in France; to the loathsome illustrated and other prints sold by thousands in the streets and parks of London on Sundays and holidays, exhibited in shops on the public thoroughfares, dropped into the letter boxes, or slipped under the doors of private residences, penetrating everywhere, and poisoning alike the minds of old and young, rich and poor; invading the meal times of the masses, and defiling the very bed-chambers of the people; found alike in

Digitized by Google

the workshop and in the club, in the reading-room and in the home, and doing day by day their devilish work of undermining the foundations of the faith and fear of God, and encouraging men to deny His existence and defy His power? Does not the symbol include all the myriad publications of a rationalistic, or superstitious and soul-defiling character, that flow in a continuous stream of almost incredible proportions from the anti-Christian and socialistic press of these days—publications which are colouring and forming opinion all the time, which have already overthrown reverence for things Divine in the hearts and minds of multitudes, and influenced to a large extent even the councils of nations?

Whatever be the exact agency intended, there is no mistaking the result of its operation; it issues in a federated opposition, not of Judaism, nor of heathenism, but of Christendom and its kings and armies against Christ. Whether this opposition is to take the form of literal war, or, as is far more probable, of intellectual, social, and moral rebellion against the gospel and the faith of the saints, whatever may be its *form*, the fourth crisis of the advent era sees it fully and for ever crushed. A needful preliminary to the establishment of any kingdom is the conquest of adversaries and the subjection of rebels; and as the destruction of Babylon preceded the marriage of the bride, so the *destruction of antichrist and his hosts precedes the enthronement of Christ as King.* "Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against His Anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall He speak unto them in His wrath, and vex them in His sore displeasure. Yet have I set My King upon Zion, the hill of My holiness."

This Armageddon conflict is mentioned in many passages of the Old Testament, as, for instance, in Isaiah lxvi. 15–18: "For, behold, the Lord will come with fire, and with His chariots like a whirlwind, to render His anger with fury, and His rebuke with flames of fire. For by fire and by His sword will the Lord plead with all flesh: and the slain of

Digitized by Google

the Lord shall be many. . . . I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come, and see My glory."

This is the judgment of the quick or living, as distinguished from that of "the dead, small and great," which occurs at a later stage of the millennial day of judgment. It is the "sudden destruction" which is coming on the ungodly professors of Christianity—a judgment of whose *imminence* they should be earnestly and incessantly warned while yet there is time. It comes all suddenly, when men are saying peace and safety, and dwelling carelessly, as in the days of Noah and of Lot.

V. THE BINDING OF SATAN.—The destruction of the anti-Christian hosts at the second advent is followed by the binding of Satan. An angel descends from heaven, lays hold on the dragon, the old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and binds him for a thousand years, casts him into the bottomless pit, shuts him up and sets a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years should be fulfilled. This binding and imprisonment of Satan are mentioned elsewhere in Scripture. In Isaiah xxiv. we read: "It shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall punish *the host of the high ones that are on high*, and the kings of the earth upon the earth. And they shall be gathered together as prisoners are gathered in the pit, and shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days shall they be visited." This predicted action of Christ at the commencement of His kingdom is in striking harmony with His character and office as Redeemer of the human race. The first promise and prophecy respecting Him was that the woman's Seed should bruise the serpent's head; and St. John states that "for this purpose was the Son of God manifested, for He should destroy the works of the devil." In Hebrews ii. we read that by His death He destroyed (καταργήσῃ) "him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;" and delivered "them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage." In Revelation xii. Satan is seen as expelled from the symbolic heavens; here he is seen expelled from the earth also for a thousand years.

Next to the personal presence of Christ and His risen

Digitized by Google

saints, this absence of Satan, the great enemy of God and man, is perhaps the most remarkable feature of the millennium. Men have never since the fall enjoyed such a respite before, for Satan has not been present merely, but regnant in their midst; not only has he been the tempter of every individual, but to him must be attributed the conception and the execution of all the great organized schemes of evil which the world has ever known. Paganism was his first great masterpiece, and through it he secured for himself the worship and service of the entire ancient heathen world; for, as the apostle distinctly states, "the things that the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God." In the early martyr age he roamed the earth as a roaring lion, seeking whom he might devour; and he devoured millions of saints, who were willing to fight with beasts in Roman amphitheatres, to be burned as torches to light the gardens of Nero, to suffer a hundred cruel forms of death by Roman executioners. But the blood of the martyrs proved the seed of the Church; they overcame Satan "by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony, and they loved not their lives unto death."

Satan was wrath when he beheld Christianity triumph over devil-worship, beheld himself cast out of his high place; and thenceforth he adopted new tactics, "gave his power and his seat and his great authority" to "the beast," or Roman Papacy, and clothing himself as an angel of light, he claimed the worship of the world thenceforth not in his own name, but in the name of Christ. Twice over it is said of the Roman antichrist that "the dragon gave him his power," and verily without satanic assistance it is hard to conceive how the politico-religious system and despotism of the Papacy could ever have obtained the marvellous ascendency over mankind which it actually enjoyed for ages. Macaulay says: "It is impossible to deny that the polity of the Church of Rome is the *very masterpiece of human wisdom.* In truth, nothing but such a polity could, against such assaults, have borne up such doctrines. The experience of twelve hundred eventful years, the ingenuity and patient care of forty generations of statesmen, have improved that polity to such perfection, that *among the contrivances which have been devised*

Digitized by Google

for deceiving and oppressing mankind, it occupies the highest place. The stronger our conviction that reason and Scripture were decidedly on the side of Protestantism, the greater is the reluctant admiration with which we regard that system of tactics against which reason and Scripture were employed in vain." This wonderful policy of the Papacy should, according to Scripture, be considered as an expression of *satanic* genius, rather than as a fruit of *human* genius. Regarded as "the working of Satan," it is in perfect harmony with all the other workings of him who has been a liar and a murderer from the beginning. It has been by means of counterfeit Christianity that Satan has, through the Papacy, resisted the spread of true Christianity. The Papacy has its counterfeit high priest, the pope; its counterfeit sacrifice, the mass; its counterfeit Bible, tradition; its counterfeit mediators, the virgin, the saints, and angels. The forms have been copied, the realities set aside. After the fall of heathenism, Satan inaugurated and developed a system—not antagonistic to Christianity, but a counterfeit of it; and *as* Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses (*i.e.*, by imitation), so he withstood Christ and His Spirit.[1]

When the beast and the false prophet are slain, and their armies destroyed, then the author of this long-enduring mystery and masterpiece of iniquity, and of all other evil, is not cast down merely as before, but seized, bound, imprisoned for a thousand years, and sealed up in the abyss. Personal restraint is laid upon him, and he is rendered powerless for mischief as long as the bright millennial day shall last. Just as the personal work and influence of John the Baptist in Judæa ceased when Herod laid hold of him and shut him up in prison, even before he was beheaded, so with Satan when he is bound and consigned to the abyss. His violence and his deceit will be alike at an end for a time, and the kingdom of Christ will be inaugurated, not only by the destruction of the rebel hosts, but by the imprisonment of the great usurper.

Now we have never known, and consequently cannot conceive, *a world free from satanic deceptions;* but who does not feel at once that it would be a marvellously different world?

[1] Approaching End of the Age," pp. 197, 198.

Digitized by Google

What the ocean would be to the mariner if no fogs ever arose to conceal its hidden dangers, and no storms ever lashed its waves into destructive fury; what the forest would be to the defenceless animals if no lions and tigers, no bears and wolves, wandered in them, seeking whom they might devour,—*that* the earth would be to man in the absence of Satan. True, he would still have his own evil heart of unbelief to contend against, still be heir of a fallen nature; but like gunpowder without a spark to ignite it, the evil within might lie dormant to such an extent, that it might almost seem to be eradicated. Who that has seen the ocean only under its stormiest wintry aspects could even picture to himself the silvery ripple of a summer sea, or the clear azure of a calm tropic sky?

When Satan is exiled from the earth for a time, it is evident that man will have a probation of a character different from any that he has as yet experienced; it will be a probation of man free from the tempter, and though Scripture does not lead us to expect that sin will be altogether absent from among the Gentile nations of the earth during the course of this probation, it does undoubtedly intimate that its existence will be reduced to a minimum. The Lord Jesus Christ began to overthrow the power of the devil when He resisted His temptations in the wilderness; He obtained a further and magnificent victory when He broke open the prison house of death, and, leading captivity captive, ascended up on high. This binding of Satan is a further stage of His triumph over the great foe, and the final one comes at the close of the millennium, when the devil is cast into the lake of fire. Then is fulfilled the promise of Romans xvi. 20, "The God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly." The new earth is for ever free from the great enemy and adversary, who, like the wicked Haman, is destroyed by his very efforts to destroy. During the millennium, though he still exists in prison, he deceives the nations no more.

What a retrospective glance over the history of six thousand years is given in that one word "deceive"! It seems to be the entire policy of Satan as to the human race! As Christ is the faithful and true Witness, so Satan has been a

Digitized by Google

liar from the beginning. The woman, "being deceived" by him, fell into transgression; and from Eden onwards the two falsehoods which ruined our race in the first instance have been repeated evermore in the ear of individuals and of nations. First, you may sin freely, for *no harm will arise in consequence*—"ye shall not surely die"; and, secondly, you had *better* sin, for great *good* will come of it —"ye shall be as gods." Always and everywhere these fatal falsehoods have found only too ready credence, and a flood of iniquity has deluged the world in consequence. But he shall "deceive the nations no more"; the just judgments of God when openly manifested will have exposed the untruth of both his false positions, and will so have influenced the minds of men, that these satanic delusions will be for ever dispelled.

VI. THE MILLENNIAL REIGN.—The scene thus cleared of enemies, there takes place next the enthronisation of Christ and His saints, and the inauguration of the glorious Millennial Reign. The outward physical features of this reign we must learn from the Old Testament; here we ask only what are the distinctive moral features of the coming kingdom? They are mainly three: righteousness, peace, and the universal diffusion of the knowledge of the Lord—three features which distinguish it broadly from the present time, and from all past times.

1. Righteousness is presented as the characteristic of the rule exercised by Christ and His saints, and also as practically prevalent among the inhabitants of the earth. "Behold, a King shall reign in righteousness." "A sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of Thy kingdom." "In righteousness doth He judge and make war." "The Lord cometh to judge the earth! with righteousness shall He judge the world, and the people with equity." "With righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth; and He shall smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked." "Righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His reins." "Then judgment shall dwell in the wilderness, and righteousness remain in the fruitful field. And the work of righteousness

Digitized by Google

shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever." "The Lord God will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations." He is Himself "the Sun of righteousness" (Mal. iv. 1). This, and a hundred similar passages descriptive of the coming kingdom, are felt at once to be wholly inapplicable to the present time. *Christ is not now ruling the world in righteousness, but enduring its opposition in longsuffering grace.* He is exalted to be a Prince and a Saviour, to give repentance and remission of sins. The *first* advent of Christ was to save the world; the *second* is to reign over it in righteousness.

Does not the world *need* righteous government? Is it not indeed one of its most crying needs? It has had governments enough, as a glance at the chart of history shows, *but never yet a good one.* A good government is indeed impossible in the present state of things, because the wide world cannot produce a good governor. The governments we style good are so only by comparison with those that are worse; but bad is the best, and bad in all ages has been the best, and bad to the end of the story will be the best. Despotism develops tyranny: aristocracies engender oppression; and democracy does not prevent these evils, as daily experience demonstrates. Government, whether that of the crown, or of the nobles, or of the Church, or of the army, or of the plutocracy, or of the mob, is ever selfish instead of benevolent, because it is exercised by selfish men.

What is the ideal of a good governor? Is it not one who has the *will* and the *wisdom* and the *power* to secure the well-being of his subjects; one who is resolved to enforce the right, who knows what ought to be done, and who will consequently make and carry into execution righteous laws; one to whom all are alike precious, and who rules in the interests of all? It is evident that no mere man, nor any association of men, can ever do this; for selfishness is stronger than benevolence in the human heart. The insoluble problems of existence in society baffle the highest human wisdom; and even if goodness and wisdom were perfect in the ruler, *power* to enforce the right and repress the wrong is utterly imperfect, even in the mightiest earthly monarch.

Digitized by Google

Innumerable have been the experiments in government tried, but *never yet has human happiness on any wide scale or for any considerable period been secured by any form of rule introduced among men.* None have averted bloodshed and war; none have delivered the poor and needy from oppression; none have prevented the existence and the spread of the most hideous vices. The best of them, not only permit, but encourage evil; as witness the drink traffic, (not only sanctioned by Protestant England and America at home, but *imposed on the very heathen*); and the deadly opium traffic enforced on pagan China. The best government on earth lacks either the will or the power to rule righteously, or both. Moreover, there is not the slightest prospect of improvement as long as the human heart remains what it is. Some of the existing evils may be overcome, as many previous ones have been in the past; our laws and even our wars are more humane than once they were: but as one set of evils disappears, others rise to replace them, and perhaps government was never beset with problems more puzzling, or tasks more stupendous, than those which surround it in these very days.

The elevation of the moral standard, which we owe to Christianity, only makes this more apparent. Our aims are higher than were those of the old world; we no longer regard the earth as a theatre, whereon kings may play at the game of war, but as the home wherein the human race is intended to live happily. The mere subjection of mankind to themselves, is no longer the object of rulers, but it is recognised that the physical, mental, and moral well-being of the people is the very reason for the existence of governments. Yet it may be questioned whether, even with these higher aims, and with all the resources placed at our disposal by modern civilization, by discovery and science, by advanced culture and accumulated wealth, the condition of the vast majority of mankind is much better than it was in ancient times. Heathenism has sunk into deeper depths of degradation than even in Babylonian days, and *a thousand millions of mankind* still groan under its blighting curse! Mohammedan nations are full of slavery, cruelty, injustice, and oppression; while in Christendom itself millions of men, armed with the deadliest

Digitized by Google

weapons and trained to use them with the utmost precision, are perpetually maintained in idleness, that they may be ready at any moment to slaughter their fellow men. Degraded themselves by military slavery into mere machines, they are a source of terrible moral degradation to every town in which they dwell; while the rest of the population groans under the burden of taxes imposed for their maintenance, and the very existence of such armed hosts is a perpetual provocation to war! A cruel poverty depresses the masses in all civilized countries. Vast accumulations of capital exist, on the one hand, while destitution and pauperism increase, on the other; the rich grow richer and the poor grow poorer year by year, till social revolution and servile war threaten once more to overthrow civilized society. The science of political economy has neither developed nor even indicated any cure for the miseries of mankind. The culmination of civilization brings contrasts more appalling than ever between what *is* and what *ought to be*, and probably the world's need of *a righteous, wise, and all-powerful government* was never so evident as now, in the end of the nineteenth century. Every conceivable experiment has been tried, and failed. It is not merely that no government can change the evil nature of men, but that no existing government so legislates and so rules as to restrain evil as it *might* be restrained, or to reward good as it *ought* to be rewarded. In other words, all fail in the essential characteristic of a government. "Rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. He beareth not the sword in vain: he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil." A king or a cabinet might desire to do this fully and in all respects; but as the people do not want to have it done, lack of power on their part produces compromises, and evils have to be suffered to exist, even when their results are recognised and deplored. The one great lesson of all history is, that man, having by sin revolted against the kind and wise government of God, is *unable to govern himself, and still more to govern his fellow men.* He tries, but fails; and hence the bulk of the miseries of humanity. "Sin is lawlessness," lawlessness is anarchy, and anarchy is misery. Heaven, in which the angels, which excel in strength, do God's commandments,

Digitized by Google

hearkening to the voice of His word, is full of joy and full of glory, because it is full of holy subjection. In the coming kingdom earth shall be as happy as heaven, for God's will shall then be done in *it*, as it is now done in heaven.

We can understand how in the moral government of God it may have been needful that the human race should pass through this painful experience of the impossibility of self-government on the part of sinful men. There are lessons that can be learned *only by experience.* The self-willed child may be best taught his folly by being allowed to taste its bitter fruits; but what parent would allow him to do so further than till he was willing once more to submit to lawful authority? The existing state of things cannot continue after the great lesson it is designed to teach shall have been sufficiently illustrated. The character of our Father in heaven forbids the thought! All Scripture assures us that it is destined to be only temporary, and succeeded by a gloriously different condition of things. We have known Christ as Prophet and as Priest; we have yet to see Him *reign as King.* The wild-beast empires are not to inflict destruction and misery on men much longer. The last form of the last of them is already in its last days, and destined to disappear ere long. Then shall the world for the first time experience what it is to be blessed with a good government, *to be ruled by a King who is at once just and kind, wise and mighty.*

2. This righteous rule will result in *universal peace.* Strife in all its forms, including its worst form, war, is the result of sin and unrighteousness. Where this is repressed by Divine government, peace will naturally prevail. Hence He is called the "Prince of peace," and it is written of His reign, "Of the increase of His government and *peace* there shall be no end." "In His day shall the righteous flourish, and abundance of peace so long as the moon endureth." Jerusalem is to enjoy "peace like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream." And not Jerusalem only, but we read, "He maketh wars to cease *unto the ends of the earth;* He breaketh the bow and cutteth the spear in sunder; He burneth the chariot in the fire." Of Israel in the coming kingdom it is written, "I will set up one shepherd over them,

Digitized by Google

and he shall feed them, even My servant David; and I, the Lord, will be their God, and My servant David a prince among them. I will make with them *a covenant of peace*, and will cause the evil beasts to cease out of the land; they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods."

The geological records of the rocks tell of pre-adamite ages, during which our earth was the home of successive races of animal forms of terrible and monstrous character, creatures with whom man could not by any possibility have co-existed; of huge reptiles and amphibians which trampled the earth; of dragon-like bats which swarmed in the air; of plesiosaurs, mosasaurs, dinosaurs, pterodactyls, megatheriums, mammoths, and other gigantic brutes, which held in succession the dominion of our earth. *Now what Adam was compared with these fierce monsters of the geologic ages, that Jesus Christ, the Prince of peace, will be compared* with the fierce, selfish, ambitious, and cruel conquerors and kingly warriors, who have filled the world with carnage and blood, misery and death, ever since the days of Nimrod.

3. The coming kingdom will be contrasted with the present state of things in that the knowledge of God will be the rule among men, instead of the exception. In it will be fulfilled the blessed promises so often wrongly applied to this present age, "they shall teach no more, every man his neighbour, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know Him, from the least to the greatest." "The earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea." The state of things predicted in Scripture has been sweetly described by a poet whose spirit yearned for it intensely in the well-known and beautiful lines,—

"Oh, scenes surpassing fable, and yet true,
Scenes of accomplished bliss! which who can see,
Though but in distant prospect, and not feel
His soul refreshed with foretaste of the joy?

Rivers of gladness water all the earth,
And clothe all climes with beauty; the reproach
Of barrenness is past. The fruitful field
Laughs with abundance; and the land once lean,
Or fertile only in its own disgrace,

Digitized by Google

Exults to see its thistly curse repealed.
The various seasons woven into one,
And that one season an eternal spring,
The garden fears no blight, and needs no fence,
For there is none to covet, all are full.
The lion and the libbard and the bear
Graze with the fearless flocks; all bask at noon
Together, or all gambol in the shade
Of the same grove, and drink one common stream.
Antipathies are none. No foe to man
Lurks in the serpent now; the mother sees,
And smiles to see, her infant's playful hand
Stretched forth to dally with the crested worm,
To stroke his azure neck, or to receive
The lambent homage of his arrowy tongue.
All creatures worship man, and all mankind
One Lord, one Father.
Error has no place;
That creeping pestilence is driven away,
The breath of heaven has chased it. In the heart
No passion touches a discordant string,
But all is harmony and love. Disease
Is not: the pure and uncontaminate blood
Holds its due course, nor fears the frost of age.
One song employs all nations, and all cry,
'Worthy the Lamb, for He was slain for us!'
The dwellers in the vales and on the rocks
Shout to each other, and the mountain tops
From distant mountains catch the flying joy;
Till, nation after nation taught the strain,
Earth rolls the rapturous hosanna round.

Behold the measure of the promise filled;
See Salem built, the labour of a God!
Bright as the sun the sacred city shines;
All kingdoms and all princes of the earth
Flock to that light; the glory of all lands
Flows into her; unbounded is her joy,
And endless her increase. Thy rams are there,
Nebaioth, and the flocks of Kedar there;
The looms of Ormus, and the mines of Ind,
And Saba's spicy groves, pay tribute there.
Praise is in all her gates; upon her walls,
And in her streets, and in her spacious courts,
Is heard salvation. Eastern Java there
Kneels with the native of the farthest West;
And Ethiopia spreads abroad the hand,
And worships. Her report has travelled forth

Digitized by Google

Into all lands. From every clime they come
To see thy beauty, and to share thy joy,
O Sion! an assembly such as earth
Saw never, such as heaven stoops down to see."[1]

VII. THE POST-MILLENNIAL ERA.—On the incidents of the brief post-millennial era, which introduces the eternal form of the kingdom of God, we need not dwell at any length. Belonging to a remote future, they are slightly mentioned in the prophecy, just as the kingdom of Christ and the saints was very briefly mentioned in Daniel. When this Christian age, with all its complex and profoundly interesting changes and experiences, had first to run its course, details were given about *it*, rather than about that which was to succeed it. And so in this last prophecy the light is thrown more fully on events prior to the second advent and millennial reign, rather than on those which are not to occur till after its close.

On the loosing of Satan, and the final apostasy, the judgment before the great white throne, and the destruction of death and hades which follow, we offer no remarks here, as we have considered the principal point—the final judgment—elsewhere.[2] We pass at once to the closing prophecy of Scripture, describing *the second or everlasting section of the coming kingdom.* The interval occupied by the intermediate occurrences is stated to be a "little season," implying perhaps that it will bear to the preceding millennial reign a still smaller proportion than the initial and closing eras we have considered have borne to the periods to which they respectively belong. This post-millennial era is however a deeply momentous one in connexion with the entire scheme of the providential government of God, inasmuch as it witnesses the final judgment and destruction, not only of the wicked, but of Satan, of hades, and of death—the conquest of the last enemy, *the completion of the work of subjugation prior to the renovation of the world.*

The close of this period is called emphatically *the end.* "Then cometh the end, when He shall have delivered up the

[1] COWPER: "The Task," bk. vi.
[2] See "Approaching End of the Age," pp. 68–78.

Digitized by Google

kingdom to God, even the Father, when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power; for He must reign until He hath put all things under His feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death."

Human history, especially the portion of it which we have considered, has been like a succession of rapids and cataracts in a river leading on to a great final fall at the end of its descending course, after which it flows on peacefully and calmly without any further interruption, till it merges its waters in those of the ocean. The long and troubled history of earthly empires has been but a preparation for the kingdom of God. The history of twenty-five centuries is summed up by the angel in one brief sentence: "These great beasts, which are four, are four kingdoms which shall arise out of the earth; but the saints of the Most High shall take the kingdom, and *possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever.*" The times of the Gentiles, and even the millennium which succeeds them, have been but as a brief and transitory introduction to THE ETERNAL KINGDOM OF GOD described in Revelation xxi., to a closing consideration of which we must now pass.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE NEW HEAVEN AND NEW EARTH OF THE ETERNAL KINGDOM OF GOD.

"I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. And He that sat upon the throne said, Behold I make all things new. And He said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful."—REV. xxi. 1–5.

A NEW heaven and a new earth! Yes! The world wants renovation. Nature, physical and moral, is in a disordered state. The earth is full of sin and pain and death; man's moral nature has been marred by transgression; the fountain of existence has been embittered by the spirit of pride, hatred, selfishness, injustice, and cruelty. The human frame has been invaded by disease; its beauty fades as a leaf; its comeliness turns to corruption; the earth has become a great cemetery, and life a procession to the tomb. The whole creation groans and travails in pain together; the sky is darkened by clouds and shaken by tempests; there is the heaving of earthquake, the outburst of the volcano, the flash of lightning, the roll of thunder. The sea is tossed by storm and lashed by the fury of the tempest; its shores are strewn with wrecks, and in its depths are shrouded innumerable dead. The reign of evil in the world, physical and moral, is an obvious and undeniable fact, and no power of man is of any avail to bring it to an end. No philosophy,

Digitized by Google

no march of civilization, no discoveries of science, no changes in government, can abolish sin and pain and death. Renovation is wanted; man's moral and physical nature, and the very framework of the surrounding terrestrial scene, all need complete and thorough renovation; and to effect this nothing short of the exercise of Almighty power can suffice.

No feature is more prominent, precious, and glorious in the Scriptures than that they are the unveiling from first to last of *a great remedial system*, involving in its operation the restoration of the soul and body of man, and of the very framework of terrestrial nature. The Bible reveals a twofold work of God, that of creation and redemption, the work of the constitution and restitution of the world, or of "the instauration and restoration" of all things. The entire history of the world, as told in the pages of inspiration, is a history of redemption; it is the marvellous story of the recovery of a ruined world, and its creation anew in the perfection which is to endure for ever.

Neither the first creation nor the second is accomplished by a single Divine act, but by a succession of such acts, or by steps and stages. The open page of the Bible sets forth the chief stages in the first of these great works, and the light of geology reveals in that record a far-reaching meaning, and shows it to be the story of a long-continued operation, which moved forward through slow rolling ages to the appearance of man upon the scene. History exhibits, on the other hand, the analogous progress of the new creation through a long succession of Divine acts, still in process of accomplishment; while the light of prophecy unveils the glorious consummation of the work and shows its completion in the "new heavens and earth," wherein there shall be life without death, light without darkness, pleasure without pain; where there shall be righteousness without sin, peace without warfare, love without hatred, joy without sadness, smiles without tears, songs without sighing; a paradise without a tempter, an inheritance without a stain; where heaven and earth shall be re-united, where life and light and love shall be triumphant for ever, and God be all in all.

Even in the first, or natural creation, there are certain types and shadows of the new; unmistakable analogies with

Digitized by Google

that better order of things unveiled to us in the blessed pages of inspiration. If death is written in nature, so also is resurrection. The seeds of innumerable plants fall into the ground and die, and lie buried in oblivion, and then spring again from the cold, dark bosom of the earth, in fresh forms of life and loveliness. Winter draws its mantle of darkness and death over the world; but spring time follows, and nature smiles again, dressed in renovated beauty. Looked at in the light of redemption, it is evident that even the first Adam and Eve and paradise, the tree of life, the river which flowed through Eden, and the sabbatic peace of that primeval scene—considered as the termination of a work which had embraced the creation of the beasts of the forest and monsters of the deep, and whose earliest stages began by the movings of the Divine Spirit, in a scene unvisited by light and life—was typical of that better and nobler order of things in God's redeeming work which culminates in the restored paradise and sabbatic peace of the "new heavens and earth," wherein shall dwell righteousness.

Grouping together the statements of Scripture as to the glorious process of renovation which God is carrying on in the world, we find that it consists of four great consecutive stages:

1. The preparatory stage.
2. The Messianic stage.
3. The millennial stage.
4. The eternal kingdom.

1. The Preparatory Stage.—The period from the fall to the first advent may be regarded as a preparatory stage in the work of the world's redemption; and here, without staying to examine the various steps by which the providence of God prepared the way for the advent of the Redeemer, and the better order of things, we are struck by the fact that there was a double prefiguration of the work of redemption in the two dispensations into which that preparatory age was divided: the partriarchal dispensation and the Jewish. In the first there was the story of two worlds, an old and a new, the passing away of the first order of things, and the introduction of a second and better by the

Digitized by Google

operation of judgment and mercy. The world that then was, overflowed with water, perished; but from its grave arose another world, and a new humanity was made to rejoice in the protection and the smile of Heaven in a renovated earth. And so, similarly, in the second or Jewish stage of the preparatory work. A new people, so to speak, was called into existence; a law was given, a revelation was granted; light and life sprang up; there was a land of promise, and a temple built to the Divine name, and filled with the glory of God's presence; while Jerusalem shone in its beauty as the city of the great king, and Solomon reigned in peace and prosperity. Moreover, from age to age throughout that preparatory period there was a slow unveiling, in promise, type, and prophecy, of one glorious, far-reaching plan, embracing the advent of the second Adam, a renovation of the Gentile world, the restoration of Israel and even the renewal of the earth itself and "restitution of all things."

2. THE MESSIANIC STAGE.—The Messianic stage of God's restoring work includes two principal sections: first, the advent and glorification of Christ, the second Adam; and, secondly, the story of the spiritual renewal of His people, or the history of the Church.

The first of these has both a spiritual and a physical aspect. A new spiritual Man has appearad upon the scene, a perfect human being, a sinless moral character, the archetype of a renovated humanity. Tested by temptation, schooled by suffering, the blameless purity and absolute righteousness of His character and life were demonstrated and developed to the uttermost; in Him was fulfilled all righteousness, and He finished the work which His Father had given Him to do by becoming "obedient unto death, even the death of the cross," that He might redeem His people and be their righteousness and life for ever. Then came the second stage, that of His physical glorification, when he was "declared to be the Son of God with power by the resurrection from the dead," and clad in that resplendent form in which He appeared to John in Patmos, when with countenance shining as the sun in its strength, and voice of power mixed with tenderness, He said, "Fear not; I am the

Digitized by Google

first and the last: I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore." In His glorified humanity the work of the new creation is already consummated; man shines forth in the Divine likeness, spirit, soul, and body made perfect, and "filled with all the fulness of God."

The interval from the ascension of Christ to the present day has been occupied by a work of *spiritual* renovation, carried on by the influence of the word and Spirit of Christ in the world. The work of renewing all things is in ceaseless progress; every true conversion is a regeneration: "if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature (or new creation); old things are passed away, behold, all things are become new." Every genuine disciple of Christ has "put off the old man," and "put on the new"; we are renewed in the spirit of our minds, renewed in the image of Him who created us, and created in righteousness and true holiness. This blessed process of spiritual renovation is going forward without cessation all the world over, and those renewed are still further "changed into the image of the Lord from glory to glory," as with unveiled heart they gaze upon the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. Though more or less evident by its fruits and effects, the work is in itself one invisible to human eyes, but it is none the less real; the living stones are being ceaselessly built up into a holy temple of the Lord, to be "the habitation of God through the Spirit."

3. THE MILLENNIAL STAGE.—The second and more manifest glorious stage of this renewing work is yet to come; as it was with our Lord, so it is with His people, the moral and spiritual manifestation of the new man comes first, and the physical glorification afterwards. "If the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Jesus from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you"; "as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly." When we see Christ "we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is." But though the first resurrection will manifest, as nothing else has ever done, the power, grace, and glory of Jesus Christ, it will not complete the work of renovation, for it leaves the nations of the earth

Digitized by Google

still in a state of probation. This co-existence of man in the flesh on earth, with glorified humanity in the Church, is a stumbling-block to many, and hinders their receiving the doctrine of the first resurrection. But why should it be thought a thing incredible with us? Does not this very state of things exist even now? Is not Christ risen from the dead and become "the first fruits of them that slept"? and yet are not His people on earth still in the flesh? and more, are not the bodies of the great majority of them slumbering in the dust? Does not 1 Corinthians xv. clearly show that resurrection takes place in three distinct stages? "Christ the first fruits, afterward they that are Christ's at His coming; then cometh the end," when the rest of the dead that rise not in the first resurrection rise to stand before the great white throne.

Coincident with the physical restoration of "the Church of the first born" is the spiritual resurrection or conversion of the natural Israel, just as coincident with the Lord's own resurrection was the spiritual regeneration of the Gentile Church; and consequent on the conversion of Israel is the millennial blessing of the wide world, according as it is written, "In thee, and in thy seed, shall all the nations of the earth be blessed." The receiving back of Israel to the favour of God is as "life from the dead" to the world; it is also marked by a *beginning* of renewal to the earth itself. As the entry of sin at the fall destroyed first the spiritual and then the physical nature of man, and then the earth, which was his habitation, so the redeeming work of God first re-creates man spiritually, then physically, and then restores the earth, which is his dwelling-place. At the first resurrection this takes place partially, but not fully; it is a great *stage* in the work of renewal, but not the final one, which does not come till

4. The Eternal Kingdom.—This is the last stage of the re-creating process, the great final result of the work of redemption, when Christ will in the fullest sense "see of the travail of His soul, and be satisfied"; when God will once more see everything that He has created and made, the result of everything that He has done, and, behold, it will all be, not good simply, but "very good." This stage

Digitized by Google

includes the full and final introduction of the new heaven and the new earth; but here some caution is necessary, lest confusion arise.

There are in Scripture three principal passages which speak of the new heavens and the new earth: the double one in the close of Isaiah, that in the last chapter of the Second Epistle of Peter, and the glorious passage which we are now considering in the two closing chapters of the Apocalypse. Taking these in order, it is evident that the first, in Isaiah lxv. 17, is distinctly millennial in character, and cannot describe the eternal state, for it speaks of a continuance of death as occasional, at any rate, though wonderful longevity will be the rule; for "he that dieth a hundred years old shall be considered only as a child, and the sinner that dies at a hundred years old shall be reckoned as one accursed." On the other hand, the second passage, in Isaiah lxvi. 22, as plainly includes the eternal state: "As the new heavens and the earth which I make shall *remain* before Me, so shall your seed and your name *remain*." This promise cannot of course refer to the earth that is said in the Apocalypse to pass away, or describe merely the temporary and transitional millennial state. Hence the expression, "new heavens and earth," is plainly applied *both* to the condition of things during the millennial stage of the great work of renewal, and to the eternal state which succeeds; it is used alike of the introductory and of the permanent stage of the coming kingdom of Christ and of God. The reason will be evident on a moment's reflection. The expression is to a certain extent a *symbolic* one, and it is also a *relative* one. In the literal sense there will of course never be "new heavens and a new earth"; the globe of this planet and the sidereal heavens are not to pass away. As Alford says, "the expression does not necessarily suppose the annihilation of the old creation, but only its passing away as to its *outward and recognisable* form, and its renewal to a fresh and more glorious one. The fleeing away of heaven and earth described in Revelation xx. is described in Peter as their consumption by fire. Both descriptions include the passing away of their present corruptible state, and change to a state glorious and incorruptible."[1] That

[1] ALFORD: "Greek Testament," *in loco*.

Digitized by Google

this is the case is clear from a careful study of the passage in the Second Epistle of Peter. The apostle speaks here of three worlds. First: "The heavens were made of old by the word of God, and the earth also, which standeth out of the water and in the water; which things being so, the world that then was, being overflowed with water, was destroyed." What was destroyed? Not the globe or the sidereal heavens, but *the world that then was*, the wicked antediluvian *society;* the then existing *state of things* passed away, but the globe, the solar system, and the sidereal heavens remained of course as they were. Secondly, to "the world that then was" he compares "the heavens and the earth which are now," or as Alford renders it, the new heavens and earth; that is, the post-diluvian visible world; and of these he says that at the *παρουσία*, or appearing of the day of God, the thousand years of the millennium which is as one day with God, it is destined to be similarly purified, not with water, but with fire; and he adds thirdly, that "we according to God's promise (alluding evidently to Isaiah) look for *a new heavens and a new earth*, wherein dwelleth righteousness." Alford says of this last statement: "Of annihilation there is here no trace; the flood did not annihilate the earth, but changed it, and as the new earth was the consequence of the flood, so the final new heavens and earth shall be of the fire."[1]

Hence it is evident that the expression is a relative one, and that in the case of the earth, just as in the case of the human race, there are several stages in the work of renewal. The present state of things is "a new heavens and new earth," as compared with the antediluvian world; the millennial condition is called such in comparison with the present state of things. The eternal state is emphatically and in the fullest sense, even compared with that millennial condition, "new heavens and a new earth."[2]

[1] ALFORD: "Greek Testament," *in loco.*

[2] A difficulty has been raised in connexion with the passage in Peter with reference to the coming of the Lord. It is said that it is evident from this passage that His coming will bring, not an earthly millennium, but the end of all things and the dawn of the eternal day, since the heavens are to be dissolved, and the elements to melt with fervent heat,

Digitized by Google

The third great passage on this subject is the one we are considering in Revelation xxi. and xxii.; here the "new heavens and new earth" follow the passing away of the old at the close of the millennial age. "I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. . . . The former things are passed away. And He that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new." That these are the last, the final and eternal "new heavens and earth," and not the millennial, is clear, though it has sometimes been questioned. The passing away of "the first heavens and earth" is synchronous with the judgment of the dead, who rise not "*till the thousand years are ended.*" The state of things in which there is "no more sea" must be subsequent to that in which "the sea gave up the dead that were in it." Moreover the fact that death and sorrow and crying and pain are *never again to intrude on the scene* proves that the state of things here portrayed *must* be subsequent to the "little season" of the loosing of Satan and the post-millennial apostasy and judgment.

Here then at last there breaks upon us the vision of the everlasting kingdom of God on earth—the glorious goal of redemption, "the end of the Lord" in all His providential dealings with His fallen creature man. Here we reach the perfected results of the saving work wrought on Calvary—that *good*, as regards the world, in view of which infinite

and the earth and the works that are therein are to be burnt up. The answer is that "the day of the Lord," as intimated in the passage itself, lasts for the whole thousand years of the millennium. It is both introduced and closed by fiery judgments, and its course is also characterized by judgment, though not in its destructive sense. It is emphatically the day of award, the day of distinguishing between the righteous and the wicked. The "day of salvation," has already extended over nearly two thousand years; the coming "day of the Lord" is to extend over a thousand. The pre-millennial judgments mark the morning of the day, and the post-millennial mark its evening. Peter presents it as a whole, while the Apocalypse, according to the principle of progressive revelation, distinguishes its parts; the earlier must be read in the light of the later, and not the reverse.

Digitized by Google

wisdom saw well to permit the entrance of *evil*, and its continuance for long ages. Well may we meditate on the beautiful picture presented in this closing vision, and seek to learn all that may be learnt from its exquisite imagery! The revealing Spirit has to stoop to human incapacity to comprehend the truth, and to picture the inconceivable in symbols which shall convey at least some glimmering perceptions of the blessed, eternal future of the Church, of the race, and of the earth. But the very symbols say, We cannot utter it, and remain themselves to some degree inconceivable! Like the mysterious and glittering Alpine peaks, that appear at times above the clouds that shadow our lower world, bathed in a far-away roseate glow, these closing visions of the heavenly Jerusalem shine with so much of celestial light, that they seem as if they scarcely *could* belong to earth. Yet we know their base is terrestrial, else why a new heavens and a new earth preparatory to the manifestation of the heavenly Jerusalem? Let us glance at their glories; though we may not linger to expatiate on them now, it will be ours to rejoice in them to all eternity, for "the vision shall surely come, it shall not tarry." It is evident that this eternal kingdom *differs* from the millennial in some respects, and *resembles* it in others; we must consider both the analogies and the contrasts.

1. It *differs* as David's reign differed from Solomon's; the former was a time of bringing into subjection, and, especially at its commencement and close, of putting down enemies. It was a glorious reign, but a warlike one; a time of conflict with Saul and with Amalek, the Philistines and Moabites, with foreign foes and domestic traitors, until "the day when the Lord delivered David out of the hand of all his enemies, and out of the hand of Saul," and he sang his triumphant song, "Thou hast lifted me up on high above all that rose up against me." Recalling his father's career after his death, his son Solomon spoke of the "wars which were about him on every side," until the Lord put his enemies "under the soles of his feet." As to himself, Solomon added, "The Lord my God hath given me *rest on every side, so that there is neither adversary nor evil occurrent*" (1 Kings v. 3, 4). It is thus with the greater than David. When the Son and Lord

Digitized by Google

of David first returns to inaugurate His millennial reign He is represented as a crowned warrior on a white horse; and, in harmony with this attitude of Christ, His saints in the same vision appear as a white-robed army, similarly mounted on white horses. They who, both before and after the millennial reign, are spoken of as "the bride, the Lamb's wife," are seen under this strangely contrasted symbol of martial hosts just prior to the commencement of the millennium, and they are seen as enthroned judges, reigning rulers, priestly kings on their thrones during its course. Why this contrast? Because of the different work to be done at the different periods. In the eternal state we are now considering, the subjugation of enemies being over, the Solomon kingdom of perfect peace having come, there being no longer any enemy or evil occurrent, the symbol representing Christ and His saints is changed and becomes altogether different. Unto the new earth there descends a glorious celestial city, a heavenly Jerusalem, a city which is also a bride, a city which forms the tabernacle of God among men.

2. The final kingdom differs again from the millennial in its duration. We no longer read as to the saints of the celestial city that "they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years," but "they shall reign for ever and ever."

3. There is a contrast also in the aspect which the righteous rule of Christ and His saints bears in the later section of the kingdom. In the millennium we read of "ruling with a rod of iron," "breaking in pieces as a potter's vessel," "smiting the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips," "slaying the wicked," etc. There are no such statements in connexion with the eternal state; the righteous rule remains, but as there is no longer any evil on earth to be repressed, it bears a wholly different and purely beneficent aspect. "For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil," and have nothing but praise for those who do well.

But the *resemblances* between the two stages of the kingdom are, as might be expected, far greater than the differences, for the kingdom is, as it is presented in Daniel, *one*. Never after His second advent in glory does Christ vacate the throne of this world, or allow a usurper to occupy it as at present. The post-millennial rebellion is but a passing

Digitized by Google

incident in the story of the establishment of the kingdom, and the destruction of death, the last enemy, only marks its transition from its introductory to its permanent form. *Its main characteristics remain unchanged;* the throne becomes "the throne of God and of the Lamb," instead of being, as in the millennium, distinctively that of Christ the Redeemer; but the heavenly saints still reign as "the bride, the Lamb's wife." They are still kings in respect to the nations of the earth, though servants as to God; "His servants shall serve Him," on the one hand, and "reign for ever and ever," on the other. Israel similarly still retains her supremacy on earth, as we learn from many passages in the Old Testament which reveal the perpetuity of her distinctive blessings. "If ye can break My covenant of the day, and My covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season; then may also My covenant be broken with David My servant, . . . then will I cast away the seed of Jacob," and not till then. "For as the new heavens and the new earth which I shall make shall remain before Me, saith the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain." And further, the ransomed and renewed human race will occupy the new earth, for "among the mysteries of this new heaven and new earth this is set forth to us: that besides the glorified Church, there shall still be dwelling on the renewed earth nations organized under kings (chap. xxi. 24), and saved by means of the influences of the heavenly city."[1]

This fact, that millennial distinctions reappear in the new heaven and the new earth of the eternal kingdom of God, is one of profound significance and interest; it illustrates the doctrine of Scripture that "the gifts and calling of God are without repentance." His original purpose and act in the creation of man was to place pure and happy human beings in an earthly paradise, to have dominion over the works of His hands. That purpose is here, in the last vision of the last prophecy of Scripture, seen to be realized, and realized notwithstanding all Satan's efforts to frustrate it. It is a vision of *paradise restored.* In the call of Abraham, and in the gift to him and to his seed of peculiar covenant blessings, the purpose of God was to have a chosen generation, a royal

[1] ALFORD: "Greek Testament," *in loco.*

Digitized by Google

priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people among the nations of the earth; and in the coming kingdom this purpose also will be fully realized.[1]

In calling sinners saved to be sons and daughters of the Lord God Almighty, His purpose was "that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness towards us through Christ Jesus," that there may be to Him "glory *in the Church* by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end." And this purpose will be triumphantly realized by the position and character of the heavenly saints, the celestial city throughout eternity.

It is undeniable that the closing prophecy of Scripture, the fullest revelation we have as to the eternal kingdom of God, teaches that it has *a double character*, that it has *both earthly and heavenly aspects;* there are *the nations* of the new earth, and there is *the celestial city*. There is a degree of spiritual heavenly radiance about the latter which is absolutely dazzling, bewildering, inexpressible, in its manifold loveliness and priceless glory. It comes down out of heaven from God; it is the very tabernacle of God; angels watch at its gates; it needs no created light, for the glory of God lightens it, and the Lamb is the light thereof; the river of life flows through its golden streets, and its purity and beauty are as those of "a bride adorned for her husband." Yet utterly unearthly as this New Jerusalem bride is, she has plainly a close connexion with the earth. She is twice over said to descend "out of heaven from God," to or *towards* the new earth. John beholds her from the summit of an earthly mountain; and we read that "the nations walk in the light of it," and that their "kings bring their honour and glory into it." The blessed inhabitants of the new earth regard this heavenly city as, in a sense, their metropolis, and bring to it the tribute of their honour and greatness. They are to have free access to it, for its gates are never shut at all by day, and there is no night there. The water of the river of life, and the leaves of the trees that grow by its banks, are alike freely given for their benefit. To him that is athirst I will give the water of

[1] Isa. lxvi. 19, 21.

Digitized by Google

life freely, and "the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations."[1]

These nations must be distinct from the celestial bride, though brought themselves into close and blessed relationship to her. They are some of the subjects over whom the saints reign for ever and ever. Hence we may unhesitatingly affirm that the last and fullest testimony of Scripture on the subject reveals to us that the eternal kingdom of God will be something widely different from the vague heaven of popular theology; that it is to be *a kingdom distinctly connected with the globe on which we live*, a kingdom in which *the subjects* will be "nations" of men under their "kings" on the earth, though *the rulers* will be Christ and His heavenly saints.

The "tabernacle of God" will be "with men," and he will dwell with them. Here is heaven indeed, for what can be more heavenly than the very sanctuary of God Himself, the holiest of all, the immediate sanctuary of the Divine glory? But it is a heaven related to the earth; for this "tabernacle of God" is to be "with men," and in it He is to dwell among them, revealed in the risen Christ and His risen saints, who are to form an eternal link between a ransomed humanity and God.

Now this teaching seems to negative an impression which has long prevailed, and prevails widely in the Church still, and which is somewhat rashly assumed to be founded on the clear teaching of Scripture. It is taken for granted, apart from any distinct revelation on the subject, that the issue of the saving work of Christ is to be the salvation of a heavenly Church, and that the resurrection and translation of this Church *at the second advent* is to be the sole and final result of the redemption of mankind, wrought out by the Son of God on Calvary. As regards this view, it is well to observe, first, that it cannot of course be entertained by any who hold the scriptural doctrine of the pre-millenial advent; that doctrine recognises that the "Church of the

[1] Or "for medicine," not necessarily involving the idea of sickness: may be preventive as well as curative. In a very similar passage in Ezekiel we read, "The fruit thereof shall be meat, and the leaf thereof for medicine."

Digitized by Google

firstborn" is translated at the coming of Christ in the first resurrection, and that the conversion of Israel and of the nations of the millennial earth takes place subsequently. No pre-millennialist therefore can hold that the Church of this dispensation, which is to be glorified at the second advent, is inclusive of the whole number of the redeemed, or that no others are to share in the glories of the future. Pre-millennialists have learned to interpret earlier and less detailed predictions in the light of the latest and fullest, and thus to recognise, both as to resurrection and judgment, that what at a distance appeared to be single proves on nearer inspection to be double. This principle must be applied equally to the question of the kingdom of God which we are now considering.

It is perfectly clear that the twentieth chapter of Revelation presents us with *three distinct parties co-existing during the continuance of the millennial age.*

1. The risen and enthroned saints, who are "priests of God and of Christ," and "reign with Him" (*v.* 6).

2. The "camp of the saints," or "the beloved city" (*v.* 9), which is evidently the earthly Jerusalem, "not the New Jerusalem, but the earthly city of that name, which is destined yet to play so glorious a part in the latter days."[1] This is evident from the fact that the city is compassed about, and attacked; it is unreasonable to suppose that men would or could attack the heavenly Jerusalem of chapter xxi.

3. The "nations" of the earth, who are delivered from satanic deceptions during the millennium, and afresh deceived at its close, and who fall into the final apostasy.

This shows that the threefold distinction at present existing continues through the millennial age at least.

A similar distinction evidently exists also in chapter xxi., though Israel does not there appear clearly distinguished from the nations of the earth; but the difference between the earthly and heavenly saints—the celestial New Jerusalem, and the new earth with its nations and kings—appears as broadly as ever. The expression "the nations" (τὰ ἔθνη) occurs twenty-two times in the Apocalypse, in con-

[1] ALFORD: "Greek Testament," *in loco.*

Digitized by Google

nexion, first, with pre-millennial times; secondly, with millennial; and thirdly, with post-millennial times. In the first class are such passages as "the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come," and "the cities of the nations fell," etc.; in the second, the millennial, the word occurs in chapter xx. 3, "that he should deceive the nations no more," and in *v.* 8, "he shall go out to deceive the nations"; and then in chapter xxi. we read of the post-millennial earth, "the nations shall walk in the light"[1] of the heavenly city, that "the nations bring their honour and glory into it," and that "the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations." *These nations present the earthly side of the eternal kingdom, and the New Jerusalem presents the heavenly side.*

That the detailed vision of the New Jerusalem (chapter xxi. 9 to xxii. 5) is a description of the post-millennial condition seems evident, first, from the absolute identity of the expressions used in *vv.* 2 and 10, *the same words, in the same order*, being employed to describe (*καταβαίνουσαν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ*), "descending out of heaven from God"; secondly, from the statement that there shall be "no more curse" (chapter xxii. 3), which the context links with "the nations" of the earth, as well as with the city, and which it is impossible to apply to the millennial condition; and thirdly, from the statement of *v.* 5, "that they shall reign *for ever and ever*," compared with the contrasted statement about reigning "for a thousand years." The twofold condition of the millennial reign continues therefore into the eternal kingdom.

Now here there arises a deeply interesting and most important question. Does the fact of the foretold existence of post-millennial nations upon earth, in addition to the glorified Church of the first-born symbolized as the New Jerusalem, involve *an endless succession of generations of the human race on the earth?* Does it imply that what was apparently the original purpose of God in the creation of man in Eden is still to be realized in the endless future, and that thus there is to be a perpetual *increase* of the government of Christ in relation to the human race? Or does it

[1] See New Version.

Digitized by Google

confirm the popular view, that the continuance of the human race *as such* upon this earth is to be brought to a sudden and complete termination at the final judgment?

We will not venture to answer this question with any dogmatic certainty, remembering that "now we know in part, and prophesy in part," and that not till "that which is perfect is come" shall "that which is in part" be "done away." "For now we see through a glass darkly," and where the clear light of revelation is lacking, the greatest caution befits us in dealing with these sacred subjects. But this much is evident, that there are found in Scripture two classes of passages which seem to bear on this subject.

1. There are a considerable number of texts and teachings, prophecies and parables, which seem at first sight to teach the latter view—the simultaneousness of resurrection and judgment, and the entire cessation of terrestrial existence at the day of judgment. As regards the greater part of these passages, we may recall the fact just mentioned, that pre-millennialists have learned to distinguish between the apparent and the real, and to recognise that while they do not *teach* the doctrine of two stages of resurrection and judgment, yet that they do not contradict it; and the same is true of the entire class as regards this further point. None of them distinctly teach the continuance of the human race in the eternal kingdom upon the earth, *but none of them deny it.* They can all be harmonized with such a view, should the light of later revelations require it, without any distortion of their statements. 2 Peter iii. is a type of this class of passages; and we have shown above that it admits, and even seems to require, the survival of a portion of the human race after the judgment, seeing that it refers to the flood as to a parallel case.

2. The second class of passages, which certainly ought to be allowed their due weight in the formation of any opinion on this great subject, is the very numerous one in which Scripture seems *to unfold the prospect of successive generations of redeemed men throughout the ages to come upon the earth,* in the same way as the passage which we are considering does.

No limit is either expressed or implied in the original constitution of man: "Be fruitful and multiply, and re-

Digitized by Google

plenish the earth, and subdue it." The nature of man, unlike that of angels, contains a provision for an ever-multiplying number of objects of Divine beneficence. Limit is distinctly denied in the covenant with Noah, the second father of the human race. "And God spake unto Noah, and to his sons with him, saying, And I, behold, I establish My covenant with you. . . . This is the token of the covenant which I make between Me and you and every living creature that is with you, for *perpetual generations*. The bow shall be in the cloud; and I will look upon it, that I may remember the *everlasting covenant* between God and *every living creature of all flesh that is upon the earth*." The Noaic convenant is here declared to be everlasting and "for perpetual generations"; and this covenant is employed in Isaiah as a sample of an *enduring* promise. The subsequent covenant with Abraham again introduced no limit. "Thou shalt call his name Isaac; and I will establish My covenant with him for *an everlasting covenant*, and with his seed after him." I will establish My covenant between Me and thee, and *thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant*, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed. And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee . . . all the land of Caanan *for an everlasting possession*." In referring to this covenant, the psalmist says, in Psalm cv. 8: "He hath remembered His covenant for ever, the word which He commanded *to a thousand generations*. Which covenant He made with Abraham, and His oath unto Isaac; and confirmed the same unto Jacob for a law, and to Israel for an everlasting covenant." This expression of "*a thousand generations*" is several times repeated. It is found in Deuteronomy vii. 9: "Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to *a thousand generations*." And again in 1 Chronicles xvi. 15: "Be ye mindful always of His covenant; the word which he commandeth to *a thousand generations*." Now since the word of God speaks several times over of *a thousand generations*, and in other passages of *perpetual generations*, during which man is to be upon the earth; and as the promises of blessing to Israel are continu-

Digitized by Google

ally said to be everlasting,—it becomes a very grave question whether we have any right *to restrict promises which seem to be stamped with eternity within the limits* of *two or three hundred generations*,[1] which is all that there is chronological room for between the creation of Adam and the end of the seventh millenary of human history, the millennial sabbath. The duration of the covenant relation granted to Israel, as revealed in these Scriptures ("a thousand generations"), is four times as long as the whole course of human generations up to the close of the millennium; so that it would seem to point forward to successive generations of the new earth in the ages to come. "I will make a covenant of peace with them. . . . I will set My sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore." "And they shall dwell therein, *they, and their children, and their children's children for ever:* and My servant David shall be their prince for ever."[2]

Or as the prophet Micah puts it, "The Lord shall reign over them in Mount Zion from henceforth, even for ever."[3] In this and a hundred other passages which might be adduced a blessed and endless futurity on earth seems distinctly promised to Israel, the course of their generations being spoken of as co-extensive with the enduring of the sun and moon. The Jews themselves always held, and still hold, that Messiah's kingdom is to be a perpetual one of peace and happiness on earth, and they certainly can quote abundance of Scripture in confirmation of the doctrine. One of the strongest passages in their prophets on the subject is that in Isaiah ix., the description of Messiah's titles and sway, in which it is distinctly stated that "of the increase of His government there shall be no end upon the throne of David"; not merely that there shall be no end to His earthly government, but no end of the "increase" of it, *i.e.* of His subjects.

When again we turn to the New Testament, we find nothing absolutely to contradict, but much to confirm the impression derived from all these Old Testament passages.

[1] A generation is generally reckoned about thirty-three years, and $33 \times 212 = 6{,}996$. So that there are only about 212 generations in 7,000 years—the great week of time.

[2] Ezek. xxxvii. 26, 25. [3] Micah iv. 7.

Digitized by Google

The elect Church is Christ's "body" and "bride,"[1] and would seem therefore to have a definite completeness of its own. The glorified saints "neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God." The living temple the "habitation of God through the Spirit,"[2] has also, as the very figure implies, a definite completeness; but that temple is destined to be, as we see from the final vision of Scripture, the glory of *a new earth full of redeemed nations.*

There is a remarkable expression in Ephesians iii., which we have already quoted, in which praise is ascribed to God in the very striking words, "Unto Him be glory in the Church by Christ Jesus unto all the generations of the age of ages" (εἰς πάσας τὰς γενεὰς τοῦ αἰῶνος τῶν αἰώνων); or, as the Revised Version has it, "unto all generations for ever and ever," giving the other as an alternative reading in the margin. No stronger expression could be used to convey the idea of eternity, nor a clearer association of *successive generations with eternity;* in fact, it would seem as if the force of this expression could be understood only in the light of the last revelation on this subject. It has to be reduced and distorted to make it harmonize at all with the popular view. The same conclusion seems to be implied in the expression to which we have before alluded, "a kind of first fruits of His creatures," and "the Church of the first-born." Both phrases would seem to suggest further and wider accessions to the family of the redeemed; for harvest follows first fruits, and the first-born derives his title from the fact that there are other members in the same family.

That there are difficulties in the way of the reception of this doctrine it were folly to deny. The question, for instance, naturally occurs, If the fountain of humanity is to flow for ever, how can there be room for all its waters? Our planet would, of course, soon overflow. This is no real difficulty, but one resting solely on our present ignorance of the further plans and purposes of God. This globe is not the universe; the Father's house does not consist of *one* dwelling-place; the myriad stars of the midnight sky are suns of other systems, and our own stellar universe is all but infinite, to say nothing of the distant nebulæ. Is it a

[1] Eph. i. 22; v. 25-33. [2] Eph. ii. 22.

Digitized by Google

thing impossible for God to translate His saints to other scenes? Have we not already had ample indications of His power in this direction? Do we not all expect to be translated ourselves? Do not even *men* know how to found colonies, and people new and distant lands with the overflow of older ones? Shall we conceive of God as more destitute of resources than His creature man? Would not this same difficulty apparently have arisen had sin never entered paradise? Must not the all-wise Creator have provided against it from the beginning? We need to remember that if *we* could perfectly understand and map out the whole procedure of the ages to come, the scheme would clearly be human and not Divine! Let us pause where Revelation pauses, nor seek to be wise above what is written; but let us search the Scriptures to see what they do reveal as to *the future of humanity*, and let our faith rest not on the traditions of men, but on the word of God. It is important for many reasons that our views as to the future of our race should be as clear and definite as Scripture warrants.

Whether we accept this view as to successive generations of mankind in the new earth or not, we cannot in any case escape the conclusion that, just as Scripture distinguishes between the saved and the lost, and between different classes of the one and of the other,[1] so it also distinguishes between the future portion of the Church of Christ, that of the Jewish people, and that of the nations of the earth. Too many in their thoughts of the future leave out this last the destiny of the Church of this dispensation figures so largely in their anticipations, that they seem almost to forget that "the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world," and to lose sight of the blessed prospect that, not only is the present Church to be saved out of the ruined world, to become the Eve of the second Adam, but that the ruined earth itself is yet to be renewed, and to become the happy home of saved nations, who participate in the results of redemption.

[1] The servant that knew his lord's will, and did it not, is to be beaten with many stripes, but he that knew not with few stripes; and "one star differeth from another star in glory." There are to be rulers over ten cities, and rulers over five.

Digitized by Google

The narrowness which sees nothing but the salvation of the Church of this dispensation is born of human selfishness, and not of Divine love; it is founded not on the teaching of Scripture, but on tradition and prejudice. The Bible in this, its last revelation on the subject, plainly teaches that while the peculiar glories of the Church are hers, and hers alone, that while the special privileges of the natural seed of Abraham belong to Israel, and to Israel only, that there is also *a blessed future awaiting mankind under the gracious government of Immanuel;* that one of the effects of the completed work of Christ will be to place the saved nations of the eternal kingdom in a restored paradise, completely delivered from the tempter, and so established in righteousness that the Holy One can take up His abode among them for ever. "He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away."

The salvation of the Church of this dispensation *is not the whole result of the death of Christ.* There is to be *in addition* the establishment for ever of a kingdom of God, in which His will shall be as fully done by men on earth as it is now done by angels in heaven. The consummation, for which we daily pray, is destined to come at last; and holy and happy service, without a flaw and without an interruption, is yet to be rendered to God, not merely by the glorified saints of the new Jerusalem, but by redeemed nations on the earth, who walk for ever in the light of the celestial city.

Such is the sublime vista of the future of our race, and of our earth in the eternal ages, with which Scripture closes.

Digitized by Google

"THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH."

And I beheld new heavens and earth,
All radiant as the morning sun,
Rejoicing on their day of birth;
For the first heaven and earth were gone.
And Eden spread o'er hill and lea
Its peace; and there was no more sea.

And I beheld afar in air,
Descending out of heaven from God,
As a chaste bride adorned and fair,
A city mortal never trod,
Shining with many a peerless gem,—
The pure, the new Jerusalem.

And a great voice from heaven I heard
Which said, "Behold, the dwelling-place
Of God, the house His hands have reared;
That in His glory and His grace
He may with men for ever dwell,
As God with us, Immanuel.

"For His own hand from every eye
Shall wipe away the tears of grief;
And none shall languish, none shall die,
And perish like the autumn leaf;
And pain be at an end for aye,
For former things are passed away."

And He that sat upon the throne
Spake thus: "Lo, all things I renew!"
And bid me write in joyful tone,
For faithful are the words and true;
And said unto me: "It is done!
The First, the Last, am I alone.

"To him that is athirst I give
The fountain infinite and free,
The flowing spring whose waters live;
And his for ever shall it be.
Who overcomes hath all things won;
I am his God, and he My son.

Digitized by Google

"But unbelievers, the unclean,
The murderer, and man of lust,
Unsuited for that holy scene,—
The foul, the false, and the unjust,—
Are sentenced to that lake of flame
Which heaven 'the second death' doth name.

And, lo! an angel, of the seven
Whose holy hands the vials bare
Of the last judgment acts of heaven,
Drew near, and talking with me there,
"Come hither," said he, "to my side,
And I will show thee the Lamb's bride."

And he upbore me to the brow
Of a majestic mountain high,
Whence, while the world lay far below,
He turned my glances to the sky,
And made me see a city fair
Descending in the ambient air.

She had the glory of her God,
Her light was crystalline and clear
As shining jasper; round her stood
A wall with gates, and angels near
Guarded those glistening gates full well,
Named from the tribes of Israel.

Three several gates on every side,
On east and north, and south and west
Her wall had twelve foundations wide,
With names inscribed for ever blest;
On each foundation was the name
Of an apostle of the Lamb.

A golden reed the angel bare
To measure the celestial frame;
The city formed a mighty square,
Its length and breadth and height the same;
Twelve thousand furlongs every way
The bright and beauteous city lay.

Digitized by Google

And twelve times twelve he measured more,
The stature of the jasper wall;
The measure of the reed he bore
Was human, yet angelical;
The city was of worth untold,
All crystal and transparent gold.

How rich were its foundations fair!
Chalcedony and chrysolite,
And jasper, sapphire, sardius there,
And topaz, each with different light,
And amethyst, and many a gem
Shone in the new Jerusalem.

Its gates were twelve, of lustre white,
A single pearl was every gate;
Its street was golden, crystal bright;
No temple rose in sculptured state;
For God Himself, the great I AM,
Is all its temple, and the Lamb.

Its light was not the summer sun,
The waning moon, the starry sky;
The glory of Jehovah shone
And streamed through its transparency;
His presence made eternal day,
The Lamb enlightened it for aye.

The nations of the ransomed earth
Shall walk in its transcendant light;
And kings shall bring to it their worth,
The tribute of their treasures bright;
Its gates, for ever open wide,
Shall welcome the rejoicing tide.

No falling night or fleeting shade
Shall o'er its beauty ever come;
Nought that defiles or could degrade
Shall enter that celestial home;
But those who, like the Lamb's true wife,
Are written in the book of life.

Digitized by Google

He showed me then a river clear,
  Untroubled by a warring wave;
As crystal did its depths appear,
  A living flood whose waters lave
The city, flowing from the throne
Of God and of the Lamb alone.

And by its bank on either side
  The wondrous tree of life did grow,
All central in the city wide,
  And yielded fruit on every bough;
And every month its branches bore
Of fruit a different sort and store.

And of the tree of life the leaves
  Were for the healing of mankind;
And not a sin or curse which grieves
  The earth shall then remain behind:
For there the throne of the I AM
Shall ever be, and of the Lamb.

And Him in love and liberty
  They then shall serve, and see His face;
His name upon their brows shall be
  In living characters of grace;
His presence there shall banish night;
And they shall reign in endless light.

Conclusion.

Of the things that we have spoken, this is the sum.

The moral and political history of mankind for the last twenty-five centuries is the fulfilment of a programme divinely revealed beforehand to Daniel in Babylon. This grand outline, which includes the chronological relation of the events predicted to the coming kingdom of God, is given in the brief but pregnant sentence of the angel, "Four kingdoms shall arise out of the earth; but the saints of the Most High shall take the kingdom, and possess it for ever, even for ever and ever."

The period in which the saints are destined to do this—

Digitized by Google

fixed from the beginning in the eternal counsels, mysteriously indicated in this prophecy, and made plain in these days by providential fulfilments—is, as every sign of our time indicates, at hand. It will be a day of sore judgment on the corrupt Papal apostasy and on all kindred false professions of the name of Christ, but a day which will bring eternal glory to the true Church, and unspeakable blessing to the repentant remnant of the Jewish people, as well as to the spared nations of the Gentile world. It will come suddenly and unexpectedly, when least looked for by men, and the generation now living is likely to witness its advent. With united voice history, chronology, astronomy, and Scripture endorse this solemn conclusion, and bid the Church lift up her head, because her great redemption is now close at hand.

Now knowledge is the guide of action. If we know these things, happy are we if we act accordingly. We do well to learn and to believe; but "faith without works is dead." Let all who believe in the near coming of the Lord show their faith by their works.

TRUE BELIEVERS, hold fast till He comes! Trim your lamps, and be ready; we have not long to wait. "The night is far spent, the day is at hand; let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light." "Let us not sleep, as do others." "The Lord is at hand." Let us awake, and act!

YOUNG CHRISTIANS, with all your fresh powers, your vigour of mind and body, your attractiveness, your sympathies, your knowledge of the truth, your warmth of first love, what are you doing with your priceless possessions in these few and final hours before the King cometh to take account of His servants? *Redeem the time;* for the last sands are running in the hour-glass of this evil age, and on every side work in profusion is awaiting willing hands and loving hearts.

UNSAVED reader of these lines, what are you doing to *lay hold on eternal life* before this day of salvation closes? Oh, cease trifling, cease putting off, cease to hide from yourself the certain fate of all unbelievers. How shall you escape if you neglect Christ's great salvation? You may be moral in your relations to your fellow men, but what are your relations to God? He claims, and justly claims, the first place

Digitized by Google

in your heart and mind; your deepest trust, your warmest love; you are not giving Him these, and hence the day of Christ, which glows with glory and joy to His people, looks dark and dreadful to you. We speak to you in His name. He died upon the cross that all who believe in Him should be justified and saved. His message to you is in your mouth and heart. BELIEVE AND LIVE! Turn. Trust. Be reconciled to God. Take His gift *freely*. Learn, and you will love. Then Christ shall be *in* you—your own, your All.

SCEPTICS, you who reject with a smile of superior wisdom the very notion of inspired prophecy and of God in history, we challenge you to account for the numerous and unquestionable facts set forth in this volume. Here are *proofs* of fore-knowledge and prediction which you *cannot honestly gainsay*. The day for denying the true date of Daniel is past. Can you give any credible account of the fore-view of human history contained in his book? Is it within the power of man to discern and delineate the events of twenty-five future centuries, with their times? Yet you are witnessing in the political condition of Europe this day that which was foreseen and foretold in the days of Nebuchadnezzar! What does this mean? It means that the Mind which made your mind is appealing to it. God has not left Himself without a witness! He is saying to you, "Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: *before they spring forth I tell you of them.*" "Who hath declared this from ancient time? . . . have not I, the Lord? and there is no God else beside Me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside Me." If the Bible be not Divine, you will lose nothing by studying it candidly; while if it be so, you may gain more than tongue can tell! "Prove all things; hold fast that which is good." Search the Divine word. He who will not *search* shall not *find*.

STUDENTS OF THE SURE WORD OF PROPHECY, let no anti-Christianism surprise you. *Before Christ, antichrist.*[1] Such is the foretold order. We have had the great predicted historic antichrist in the self-exalting head of Papal superstition; we have now its soul-destroying result and outcome in

[1] "Venit antichristus, sed et supervenit Christus" (Cyprian).

Digitized by Google

the existence of modern infidelity. But the darkest hour is that before the dawn. Let us gird on our armour for the final conflict, and strive for the reward promised "to him that *overcometh*."

The "sure word of prophecy" was given for the guidance and establishment of faith. The apostasies of the falsely professing Church, its fall into vice, superstition, and infidelity, viewed as *foretold*, ought to be a confirmation of our faith! The fact that the Jews fulfilled prophecy in rejecting Christ is one reason why we receive Him. The fact that so large a portion of Christendom now in another way rejects Him was equally foretold, and is an added reason why we should cleave to Him in faith.

May we see through this anti-Christianism, tracing it to its roots in the historic past, and to its fruits in the foretold future! May the despairing infidelity, the scoffing unbelief, the Christ-rejecting, God-ignoring blasphemy of these days be seen in their true light, as the natural, predicted consequence of the long-continued corruption of the professing Church! It is a question of the rotting of dead branches severed from the true and living Vine, of the mortification of lifeless members. Modern infidelity is the legitimate outcome of the great apostasy, which, having passed through many and various stages, is now assuming its final form. Long has been the warfare waged by the powers of darkness "against Jehovah and His Anointed"; now the last conflict has set in. Let us not shrink from it! The world has never changed in its rejection of Christ, nor the true Church in its faith in Him. The cross is still "a stone of stumbling and rock of offence" to the disobedient, but still also "the power of God unto salvation" to every one who believes. Let us remember the solemn and repeated warnings of the word of God. Is it not written, "They shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables"? Is it not written, "These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for He is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful"? Is it not written also, "But ye, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error

Digitized by Google

of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness." But instead of apostatising thus, "grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To Him be glory both now and for ever."

May the spirit of careless security, the popular "peace and safety" cry of these days, which is the foretold precursor of the coming of "sudden destruction," have no power over *us* to lull us into unwatchfulness and unbelief! Let us not expose ourselves to the reproachful question, "Could ye not watch with Me one hour?" May we "be diligent" that we "may be found of Him in peace, without spot and blameless"! May we "abide" in Him, and abound in the work of His service according to His word, "*Occupy till I come*"! May we stir up the gift that is in us, utilise the buried talents, and bring in the precious sheaves of the harvest field! "*Looking for that blessed hope*, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ."

"NOW UNTO HIM THAT IS ABLE TO KEEP YOU FROM FALLING, AND TO PRESENT YOU FAULTLESS BEFORE THE PRESENCE OF HIS GLORY WITH EXCEEDING JOY, TO THE ONLY WISE GOD OUR SAVIOUR, BE GLORY, AND MAJESTY, DOMINION, AND POWER, BOTH NOW AND EVER. AMEN."

Digitized by Google

APPENDICES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX A.

THE SCIENTIFIC BASIS OF PROPHETIC CHRONOLOGY.

"SURE AS THE STARS."

THE uncertainty which attaches to remote periods of secular chronology disappears at the date of the accession of Nabonassar, with whose reign the times of the four Gentile empires commence. From this time forward we are able to verify the chronological records of the past; and the dates of ancient history are confirmed by astronomic observations.

The astronomical records of the ancients, by whose means we are able to fix with certainty the chronology of the earlier centuries of the "times of the Gentiles," are contained in the "Syntaxis," or "Almagest" of Ptolemy.

In the existence of this invaluable work, and in its preservation as a precious remnant of antiquity, the hand of Providence can clearly be traced. The same Divine care which raised up Herodotus and other Greek historians to carry on the records of the past from the point to which they had been brought by the writings of the prophets at the close of the Babylonish captivity;—the Providence which raised up Josephus, the Jewish historian, at the termination of New Testament history, to record the fulfilment of prophecy in the destruction of Jerusalem,—raised up also Ptolemy in the important interval which extended from Titus to Hadrian, that of the completion of Jewish desolation, *to record the chronology of the nine previous centuries*, and to associate it in such a way with the revolutions of the solar system as to permit of the most searching demonstration of its truth.

Digitized by Google

Ptolemy's great work, the "Almagest," is a treatise on astronomy, setting forth the researches of ancient observers and mathematicians with reference to the position of the stars, the exact length of the year, and the elements of the orbits of the sun, moon, and planets. This work was written in Greek, and subsequently translated into Arabic, Persian, Hebrew, and Latin, etc.; it became the text-book of astronomic knowledge both in the East and in Europe, and retained that high position for about fourteen centuries, or till the time of Copernicus, the birth of modern astronomy, three centuries ago.

The chronological value of the "Almagest" is owing to the fact that it interweaves a series of ancient dates with a series of celestial positions. It contains a complete catalogue of the succession of Babylonian, Persian, Grecian, and Roman monarchs, from Nabonassar to Hadrian and Antoninus, together with the dates of their accession and the duration of their reigns. Its astronomic events are referred to definite historic dates, and by this connexion there is conferred on the latter the character of scientific certainty.

This important feature of the "Almagest" is described as follows in the "Chrono-astrolabe," by James B. Lindsay, a work published in 1858, demonstrating the authenticity of Hebrew, Greek, and Roman chronology, etc., by astronomic methods:

"The 'Syntaxis' of Ptolemy contains an account of many historic events, and blended with them is a multitude of astronomic observations. The *astronomic* and *historic* cannot be separated, and they must both stand or fall together. *The astronomic can be rigidly verified, and the truth of the historic is a legitimate deduction.*"

In the "Almagest," "a celestial phenomenon is coupled with a terrestrial event. An eclipse of the moon or an acronic of Mars is assigned to a given year and day of a king's reign. The celestial mechanism, though complicate, is intelligible; the motions are calculable, and we can verify or falsify the recorded observations."

With reference to Ptolemy's Canon, or chronological list of the monarchs of the four great empires, Lindsay says:

Digitized by Google

"The complete harmony that is to be found in this canon with the dates previously determined by eclipses, entitles it to our highest confidence. That Ptolemy was its author, and not Theon, is confirmed by the fact that it is not continued beyond Antoninus, in whose reign our author dates most of his observations. We have had abundant evidence that he was φιλόπονος and φιλαλήθης, a lover of labour and a lover of truth, and are fully warranted to regard this canon as giving to ancient history *mathematical exactness*. . . . The motions and phases of the luminaries are visible every day, and with these alone we have been able to authenticate the whole of the 'Almagest.' Even the errors of Ptolemy augment, if possible, the evidence for the authenticity of the 'Syntaxis,' *and a foundation is laid for chronology sure as the stars*. The external evidence for the text-book is most abundant. It is mentioned in terms of the highest approbation by Greek, Hebrew, and Arabian historians. In the ninth century the celebrated caliph, Al Mamun, caused it to be translated into Arabic. Persic and Hebrew versions engaged the attention of oriental *savants* in our middle ages, and at the dawn of printing Latin translations were abundantly diffused. . . . It is to Ptolemy that our modern astronomy is almost wholly due; but those who enjoy the benefit have forgotten the benefactor. The name of Ptolemy, who was certainly not inferior, perhaps superior, to Newton, is seldom mentioned but to be covered with pity or with ridicule. Even men of science have not given to Ptolemy the honour that belongs to him. Delambre has fancied that he was a mere copyist of Hipparchus, and that to the latter the excellences found in the 'Syntaxis' are all to be attributed. Far be it from us to deny the greatness of Hipparchus, but Ptolemy was greater. *His account of the ancient eclipses, and of their connexion with historic facts, is more precious than gold, and guarantees a translation of the 'Almagest' into every language.* In the want of modern instruments he may have made an error in the observation of the equinoxes, and all facts then known sanctioned the earth's stability. *Veritas prævalebit*, and the worth of Ptolemy is again appreciated. La Place, 'Système du Monde,' has seen his value." The following is his eulogy:—

"Ptolémée inscrivit dans le temple de Sérapis à Canope les principaux élémens de son système astronomique. Le système a subsisté pendant quatorze siècles; aujourd'hui même qu'il est entièrement détruit, *'l'Almageste' considéré comme le dépôt des anciennes observations, est un des plus précieux monuments de l'antiquité.* Malheureusement, il ne renferme qu'un petit nombre des observations faites jusqu'alors. Son auteur n'a rapporté que celles qui lui étaient nécessaires pour expliquer ses théories. Les tables astronomiques, une fois formées il a jugé inutile de transmettre avec elle, à la postérité, les observations qu'Hipparque et lui avaient employées pour cet objet; et son exemple a été suivi par les Arabes et les Perses. Les grands recueils d'observations précises rassemblées uniquement pour elles-mêmes, et sans aucune application aux théories, appartiennent à l'astronomie moderne, et sont l'un des moyens les plus propres à la perfectionner. Ptolémée a rendu de grands services

Digitized by Google

à la géographie, en rassemblant toutes les déterminations de longitude et de latitude des lieux connus, et en jetant les fondemens de la méthode des projections pour la construction des cartes géographiques. Il a fait un traité d'optique, dans lequel il expose avec étendue le phénomène des réfractions astronomiques; il est encore auteur de divers ouvrages sur la musique, la chronologie, la gnomonique, et la méchanique. Tant de travaux sur un si grand nombre d'objets, supposent un esprit vaste, et lui assurent un rang distingué dans l'histoire des sciences. Quand son système eut fait place à celui de la nature, on se vengea sur son auteur, du despotisme avec lequel il avait régné trop longtemps; on accusa Ptolémée de s'être approprié les découvertes de ses prédécesseurs. Mais la manière honorable dont il cite très-souvent Hipparque à l'appui de ses théories, le justifie pleinement de cette inculpation. À la renaissance des lettres parmi les Arabes et en Europe, ses hypothèses, réunissant à l'attrait de la nouveauté, l'autorité de ce qui est ancien, furent généralement adoptées par les esprits avides de connaissances, et qui se virent tout-à-coup en possession de celles que l'antiquité n'avait acquises que par de longs travaux. Leur reconnaissance élva trop haut Ptolémée qu'ensuite on a trop rabaissé. Sa reputation a éprouvé le même sort que celle d'Aristote et de Descartes; leur erreurs n'ont pas été plutôt reconnues, que l'on a passé d'une admiration aveugle, à une injuste mépris; car dans la science même, les révolutions les plus utiles n'ont point été exemptes de passion et d'injustice."

In order to obtain a safe and scientific foundation for his mathematical calculations as to solar and lunar movements, including his valuable *astronomic tables*, Ptolemy compares three carefully selected, well attested ancient eclipses, observed at Babylon in the reign of Mardocempadus, with three other eclipses which he had observed at Alexandria in the seventeenth, eighteenth, and twentieth years of the reign of Hadrian. He similarly compares three eclipses which took place in the fourth century after Nabonassar, referred to by the celebrated Greek astronomer Hipparchus, with three other eclipses recorded by the same astronomer, which occurred two centuries later.

In this comparison Ptolemy deals with no less than *four groups of ancient eclipses*, Babylonian, Grecian, and Roman, containing three in each, twelve in all. These eclipses have been frequently verified by modern astronomers, and they combine to fix the chronological dates with which they are connected with the utmost certainty. If a single eclipse is sufficient to attest an ancient date, how conclusive the con-

Digitized by Google

current evidence afforded by four groups of eclipses! But these are not all the astronomic phenomena which Ptolemy records. We append a list of no less than eighty-five solar, lunar, and planetary positions, with their dates, as given in the "Almagest," and as verified by modern astronomers. This list contains four vernal equinoxes, eight autumnal, four summer solstices, nineteen lunar eclipses, nine lunar observations, and forty-one planetary observations, including sixteen of Mercury, ten of Venus, five of Mars, five of Jupiter, and five of Saturn.

The time of the occurrence of these astronomic phenomena is measured by Ptolemy from noon of the first of the Egyptian month Thoth, in the first year of Nabonassar. The verification of the time of any of these events is the verification of the *initial date from which the whole series is reckoned.* Thoth 1 Nab. 1 is thus abundantly determined to be noon February 26th, B.C. 747.[1]

In addition to this primary Babylonian date, these astronomic records fix *directly* the times of the *Babylonian* monarchs Mardocempadus and Nabopolassar, the *Persian* monarchs Cambyses and Darius, the *Grecian* dates employed by Hipparchus, and the dates of the *Roman* emperors Domitian,

[1] As an illustration of Ptolemy's use of the Nabonassar era as a fixed and constant epoch from which to measure various astronomic events, we quote the following, from his chapter on the epoch of the main movements of the moon in longitude and anomaly: "In order to reduce these epochs to *noon of the first day of the Egyptian month Thoth of the first year of Nabonassar*, we have taken the *interval* of time which elapses from this day to the middle of the second of the three first and nearest eclipses which happened, as we said, in the second year of Mardocempadus, between the 18th and 19th of the Egyptian month Thoth, at one-half and one-third of an equinoctial hour before midnight, which made an interval of twenty-seven Egyptian years (years of 365 days) seventeen days and 11⅓ hours very nearly; and casting out two complete revolutions in longitude, 123° 22′ and 103° 35′, if we subtract respectively these quantities from the positions of the middle of the second eclipse, we shall have for the first year of Nabonassar, the first day of the Egyptian month Thoth, at noon, the mean place of the moon 11° 22′ of Taurus in longitude, and 263° 49′ anomaly, from the apogee of the epicycle, that is to say, at 70° 37′ elongation; the sun, as has been proved, being then in 0° 45′ of Pices."—"*Almagest*," chap. vii.

Digitized by Google

Trajan, Hadrian, and Antoninus Pius; while *indirectly* they enable us to determine the dates of *all the intermediate reigns recorded in Ptolemy's* ASTRONOMICAL CANON, a list of fifty-five successive reigns, extending over a period of 907 years, from Nabonassar of Babylon to the Roman emperor Antoninus Pius.

This invaluable Canon, representing the unbroken imperial rule administered by successive dynasties of Gentile empires, is divided by Ptolemy into four distinct parts.

1. Babylonian kings, twenty in number.
2. Persian kings, ten in number, terminating with Alexander the Great, of Macedon, eleven names in all.
3. Grecian kings, twelve in number.
4. Roman emperors, twelve in number.

The sum of years given in the calendar is divided into two parts: first, 424 years, from Nabonassar to Alexander of Macedon; and secondly, 483 years, from Philip Aridæus to Antoninus Pius. The striking and important *agreement between the historical and chronological outline given in the canon of Ptolemy and that set forth in the fourfold image of Nebuchadnezzar's vision*, described and interpreted by Daniel, is referred to by Faber in the following words:

"As the good Spirit of God employs the four successive empires of Babylon, and Persia, and Greece, and Rome, in the capacity of THE GRAND CALENDAR OF PROPHECY, so Ptolemy has employed the very same four empires in the construction of his invaluable Canon; because the several lines of their sovereigns so begin and end, when the one line is engrafted upon the other line, as to form a single unbroken series from Nabonassar to Augustus Cæsar. In each case the principle of continuous arrangement is identical. Where Ptolemy makes the Persian Cyrus the immediate successor of the Babylonian Nabonadius, or Belshazzar, without taking into account the preceding kings of *Persia* or of *Media*, there, in the image, the silver joins itself to the gold; where Ptolemy makes the Grecian Alexander the immediate successor of the Persian Darius, without taking into account the preceding kings of *Macedon*, there, in the image, the brass joins itself to the silver; and where Ptolemy makes the Roman Augustus the immediate successor of the Grecian Cleopatra, without taking into account the long preceding roll of the consular *Fasti* and the primitive *Roman* monarchy, there, in the image, the iron joins itself to the brass. In short, *the Canon of Ptolemy may well be deemed a running comment upon the altitudinal line of the great metallic image.* As

Digitized by Google

the parts of the image melt into each other, forming jointly one grand succession of supreme imperial domination, so *the Canon of Ptolemy exhibits what may be called a picture of unbroken imperial rule, though administered by four successive dynasties, from Nabonassar to Augustus and his successors.*[1]

---

[1] "Sacred Calendar of Prophecy," vol. ii., p. 7.

Digitized by Google

THE CANON OF PTOLEMY.

	Πτολεμαιου Κανων Βασιλεων Ασσυριων και Μηδων.	Ετη	Συναγωγη.
α	Ναβονασαρου . . .	ιδ	ιδ
β	Ναδιου	β	ις
γ	Χωζιρου και Πορου .	ε	κα
δ	Ιουγαιου	ε	κς
ε	Μαρδοκεμπαδου . .	ιβ	λη
ϛ	Αρκιανου	ε	μγ
ζ	Αβασιλευτου πρωτου	β	με
η	Βηλιβου	γ	μη
θ	Απρονα̈διου . . .	ϛ	νδ
ι	Ρηγηβηλου	α	νε
ια	Μεσεσσιμορδακου . .	δ	νθ
ιβ	Αβασιλευτου δευτερου	η	ξζ
ιγ	Ασσαραδινου . . .	ιγ	π
ιδ	Σαοσδουχινου . . .	κ	ρ
ιε	Χυνιλαδανου . . .	κβ	ρκβ
ις	Ναβοπολλασαρου .	κα	ρμγ
ιζ	Ναβοκολλασαρου .	μγ	ρπϛ
ιη	Ιλουαροδαμου . . .	β	ρπη
ιθ	Νιρικασσολασαρου .	δ	ρϟβ
κ	Ναβοναδιου . . .	ιζ	σθ

	Περσων Βασιλεις.		
κα	Κυρου	θ	σιη
κβ	Καμβυσου	η	σκϛ
κγ	Δαρειου α.	λϛ	σξβ
κδ	Ξερξου	κα	σπγ
κε	Αρταξερξου α. . . .	μα	τκδ
κϛ	Δαρειου β.	ιθ	τμγ
κζ	Αρταξερξου β. . .	μϛ	τπθ
κη	Ωχου	κα	υι
κθ	Αρωγου.	β	υιβ
λ	Δαρειου γ.	δ	υιϛ
λα	Αλεξανδρου Μακεδονος	η	υκδ

	Ptolemy's Canon of Kings of the Assyrians and Medes.	Each.	Sum.
1	Nabonassar . . .	14	14
2	Nadius	2	16
3	Khozirus and Porus	5	21
4	Jougaius	5	26
5	Mardocempadus. .	12	38
6	Archianus	5	43
7	First Interregnum .	2	45
8	Belibus	3	48
9	Apronadius . . .	6	54
10	Regibelus	1	55
11	Mesesimordachus .	4	59
12	Second Interregnum	8	67
13	Asaridinus . . .	13	80
14	Saosduchinus . .	20	100
15	Khuniladanus . .	22	122
16	Nabopolassar . .	21	143
17	Nabokolassar . .	43	186
18	Ilvarodamus . . .	2	188
19	Nerikassolasar . .	4	192
20	Nabonadius . . .	17	209

	Persian Kings.		
21	Cyrus	9	218
22	Cambyses	8	226
23	Darius I.	36	262
24	Xerxes	21	283
25	Artaxerxes I. . . .	41	324
26	Darius II.	19	343
27	Artaxerxes II. . .	46	389
28	Ochus	21	410
29	Arogus	2	412
30	Darius III. . . .	4	416
31	Alexander of Macedon	8	424

Digitized by Google

ΕΤΗ ΒΑΣΙΛΕΩΝ ΤΩΝ ΜΕΤΑ ΤΗΝ ΑΛΕΧΑΝΔΡΟΥ ΤΟΥ ΒΑΣΙΛΕΩΣ ΤΕΛΕΥΤΗΝ.

α	Φιλιππου του μετ' Αλεξανδρον τον κτιστην	ζ	ζ
β	Αλεξανδρου Αιγου .	ιβ	ιθ

ΕΛΛΗΝΩΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΕΙΣ ΕΝ ΑΙΓΥΠΤΩ.

γ	Πτολεμαιου Λαγου .	κ	λθ
δ	Πτ. Φιλαδελφου . .	λη	οζ
ε	Πτ. Ευεργετου α. .	κε	ρβ
ϛ	Πτ. Φιλοπατορος. .	ιζ	ριθ
ζ	Πτ. Επιφανους . .	κδ	ρμγ
η	Πτ. Φιλομητορος. .	λε	ροη
θ	Πτ. Ευεργετου β. .	κθ	σζ
ι	Πτ. Σωτηρος . . .	λϛ	σμγ
ια	Πτ. Διονυσου . . .	κθ	σοβ
ιβ	Κλεοπατρας . . .	κβ	σϟδ

ΡΩΜΑΙΩΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΕΙΣ.

ιγ	Αυγουστου	μγ	τλζ
ιδ	Τιβεριου	κβ	τνθ
ιε	Γαιου	δ	τξγ
ιϛ	Κλαυδιου	ιδ	τοζ
ιζ	Νερωνος	ιδ	τϟα
ιη	Ουεσπασιανου. . .	ι	υα
ιθ	Τιτου	γ	υδ
κ	Δομετιανου. . . .	ιε	υιθ
κα	Νερουα	α	υκ
κβ	Τραιανου	ιθ	υλθ
κγ	Αδριανου	κα	υξ
κδ	Αντωνινου	κγ	υπγ

YEARS OF THE KINGS AFTER THE DEATH OF KING ALEXANDER.

1	Philip, after Alexander the Founder . . .	7	7
2	Alexand. Ægus . .	12	19

KINGS OF THE GREEKS IN EGYPT.

3	Ptolemy Lagus . .	20	39
4	— Philadelphus .	38	77
5	— Euergetes I. .	25	102
6	— Philopator . .	17	119
7	— Epiphanes . .	24	143
8	— Philometor . .	35	178
9	— Euergetes II. .	29	207
10	— Soter	36	243
11	— Dionysius . .	29	272
12	Cleopatra	22	294

KINGS OF THE ROMANS.

13	Augustus	43	337
14	Tiberius	22	359
15	Caius	4	363
16	Claudius	14	377
17	Nero	14	391
18	Vespasian	10	401
19	Titus	3	404
20	Domitian	15	419
21	Nerva	1	420
22	Trajan	19	439
23	Adrian	21	460
24	Antoninus	23	483

Digitized by Google

TABLES OF SOLAR, LUNAR,

Contained in the "Almagest" of Ptolemy,

VERNAL

	B.C.	Year of Nabonassar.	Egypt. Month.	Hour.
I.	146	602	Mecheir 27 . .	11 h. from sunset
II.	135	613	,, 29 . .	12 ,, noon
III.	128	620	Phamenoth 1 .	6 ,, ,,
	A.D.			
IV.	140	887	Pachon 7 . . .	1 ,, ,,

AUTUMNAL

	B.C.			
I.	162	586	Mesorē 30 . .	At sunset
II.	159	589	Epagomene 1 .	
III.	158	590	,, 1 .	At noon
IV.	146	602 ex.	,, 3 .	Midnight
V.	145	603 ,,	,, 4 .	12 h. from sunset
VI.	142	606 ,,	,, 4 .	At sunset
	A.D.			
VII.	132	880	Athyr 7 . . .	At 2 h. from noon
VIII.	139	887	,, 9 . . .	13 h. from sunset

SUMMER

	B.C.			
I.	433-2	316	Phamenoth 21 .	
II.	280	468	Pharmuthi 29[1].	7 h. from sunset
III.	135	613	Paüni 4[1]. . .	19 ,, ,,
	A.D.			
IV.	140	887	Mesorē 11 . .	14 ,, noon

[1] These two dates not given in terms by Ptolemy;

Digitized by Google

AND PLANETARY POSITIONS,

with their Dates as verified by Modern Astronomy.

EQUINOXES.

Julian Date.	Hour.	Observed by
March 24	5 a.m.	Hipparchus, at Alexandria.
,, ,,	0 a.m.	,, ,,
,, 23	6 p.m.	,, ,,
,, 22	1 p.m.	Ptolemy ,,

EQUINOXES.

Sept. 27	6 p.m.	Hipparchus, at Alexandria.
,, ,,	cir. 5 a.m.	,, ,,
,, ,,	0 p.m.	,, ,,
,, ,,	0 a.m.	,, ,,
,, 26	cir. 6 a.m.	,, ,,
,, ,,	6 p.m.	,, ,,
,, 25	2 p.m.	Ptolemy ,,
,, 26	7 a.m.	,, ,,

SOLSTICES.

June 27	cir. 5 a.m.	Meton and Euctemon at Athens.
,, 7	cir. 1 a.m.	Aristarchus of Samos.
,, 26	1 p.m.	Hipparchus, at Alexandria.
,, 25	2 a.m.	Ptolemy ,,

only the data by which they are obtained.

Digitized by Google

LUNAR

	B.C.	Year of Nabonassar.	Reign.	Egypt. Month.
I.	721	27	Mardocempadi 1 . .	Thoth 29 . .
II.	720	28	,, ,, 2 . .	,, 18 . .
III.	720	28	,, ,, 2 . .	Phamenoth 15
IV.	621	127	Nabopolassar 5 . . .	Athyr 27 . .
V.	523	225	Cambysis 7	Phamenoth 17
VI.	502	246	Darii 20	Epiphi 28 . .
VII.	491	257	,, 31	Tybi 3 . . .
VIII.	383	366	Phanostratus	Thoth 26 . .
IX.	382	366	,, ...	Phamenoth 24
X.	382	367	Evander	Thoth 16 . .
XI.	201	547	Calippic Period II. 54 .	Mesorē 16 . .
XII.	200	548	,, ,, II. 55 .	Mecheir 9 . .
XIII.	200	548	,, ,, II. 55 .	Mesorē 5 . .
XIV.	174	574	Philometor 7	Phamenoth 27
XV.	141	607	Calippic Period III. 37 .	Tybi 2 . . .
	A.D.			
XVI.	125	872	Hadrian 9	Pachon 17 .
XVII.	133	880	,, 17	Paüni 20 . .
XVIII.	134	882	,, 19	Chœac 2 . .
XIX.	136	883	,, 20	Pharmuthi 19

Digitized by Google

ECLIPSES.

Hour.	Verified Date.		Observed by
9.30 from noon	Mar. 19	9.24 p.m. (Ideler)	The Chaldeans at Babylon.
	,, 19	8.40 (Lindsay), total.	
12 ,, ,,	,, 8	11.12 p.m. (Ideler)	,, ,,
	,, 8	11.10 (Lindsay), 3 dig. S.	
8.30 ,, ,,	Sept. 1	8.22 p.m. (Ideler)	,, ,,
	,, 1	7.40 (Lindsay), 6 dig. N.	
17.50 ,, ,,	April 22	4.46 a.m. (Ideler)	,, ,,
	,, 21	17 (Lindsay), 3 dig. S.	
11 ,, ,,	July 16	11.15 p.m. (Ideler)	,, ,,
	,, 16	10.10 (Lindsay), 6 dig. N.	
11.36 ,, ,,	Nov. 19	11.48 p.m. (Ideler)	,, ,,
	,, 19	10.45 (Lindsay), 3 dig. S.	
11.30 ,, ,,	April 25	10.55 p.m. (Ideler)	,, ,,
	,, 25	10.40 (Lindsay), 2 dig. S.	
19.20 ,, ,,	Dec. 23	8.33 a.m. (Pingré)	,, ,,
	,, 22	18.30 (Lindsay), 2 dig. N.	
9.6 ,, ,,	June 18	9.33 p.m. (Pingré)	,, ,,
	,, 18	8.15 (Lindsay), 9 dig. S.	
11.0 ,, ,,	Dec. 13	0.18 a.m. (Pingré)	,, ,,
	,, 12	10.10 (Lindsay), total.	
7.0 ,, ,,	Sept. 22	7.20 p.m. (Pingré)	At Alexandria.
	,, 22	7 (Lindsay), 9 dig. S.	
13.20 ,, ,,	Mar. 20	1.20 a.m. (Pingré)	,,
	,, 19	13.20 (Lindsay), total.	
14.15 ,, ,,	Sept. 12	3.20 a.m. (Pingré)	,,
	,, 11	14.15 (Lindsay), total.	
14.20 ,, ,,	May 1	2.35 a.m. (Pingré)	,,
	April 30	14.20 (Lindsay), 7 dig. N.	
10.10 ,, ,,	Jan. 27	10.43 p.m. (Pingré)	At Rhodes.
	,, 27	10.10 (Lindsay), 3 dig. S.	
8.24 ,, ,,	April 5	8.50 p.m. (Pingré)	At Alexandria.
	,, 5	8.24 (Lindsay), 2 dig. S.	
11.15 ,, ,,	May 6	11.5 p.m. (Pingré)	,,
	,, 6	11 15 (Lindsay), total.	
11.0 ,, ,,	Oct. 20	11.20 p.m. (Pingré)	,,
	,, 20	11 (Lindsay), 10 dig. N.	
16.0 ,, ,,	Mar. 6	3.50 a.m. (Pingré)	,,
	,, 5	16 (Lindsay), 6 dig. N.	

Digitized by Google

LUNAR

	B.C.	Year of Nabonassar.	Reign.	Event.
I.	295	454	Callippic Period I. 36	Occultation of β Scorpii by the moon
II.	294	454	,, ,, I. 36	Conjunction of the moon and Spica Virginis
III.	283	465	,, ,, I. 47	Conjunction of the moon and Pleiades
IV.	283	466	,, ,, I. 48	Conjunction of the moon and Spica Virginis
V.	128	620	,, ,, III. 52	Second Dichotomy
VI.	127	621	Philippi 197 . . .	(1)
				(2)
	A.D.			
VII.	92	840	Domitian 12 . . .	Occultation of Pleiades by the moon
VIII.	98	845	Trajan 1	(1) Occultation of Spica Virginis by the moon
				(2) Occultation of β Scorpii or Antares by the moon
IX.	135	883	Hadrian 20	Culmination of the moon
X.	139	886	Antoninus 2 . . .	Second Dichotomy
XI.	139	886	,, 2 . . .	

PLANETARY

I.

	B.C.	Year of Nabonassar.	Reign.	Egypt. Month.
I.	265	484		Thoth 18 . . .
II.	262	486		Chœac 17 . . .
III.	262	486		Phamenoth 30 .
IV.	262	486		Paüni 30 . . .
V.	257	491		Pharmuthi 5 . .
VI.	245	564 (corr. 504)		Thoth 27 . . .
VII.	237	512		,, 9 . . .
	A.D.			
VIII.	130	877	Hadrian 14	Mesorē 18 . . .
IX.	132	879	,, 16	Phamenoth 16 .
X.	134	881	,, 18	Epiphi 18 . . .
XI.	134	882	,, 19	Athyr 14 . . .
XII.	135	882	,, 19	Pachon 19 . .
	Year	of Completion	of Jewish	Desolation.
XIII.	138	885	Antonin. 1	Epiphi 20 . . .
XIV.	139	886	,, 2	,, 2 . . .
XV.	139	886	,, 2	Mesorē 23 . . .
XVI.	141	888	,, 4	Phamenoth 18 .

Digitized by Google

OBSERVATIONS.

Egypt. Month.	Hour.	Julian Date.		Observed by
Phaophi 16 .	15.24 fr. noon	Dec. 21	3.24 a.m.	Timocharis at Alexandria.
Tybi 5 . . .	8.0 ,,	Mar. 9	8.0 p.m.	,, ,,
Athyr 29 . .	8.40 ,,	Jan. 29	8.40 p.m.	,, ,,
Thoth 7 . .	15.7 ,,	Nov. 9	3.7 a.m.	,, ,,
Epiphi 16 . .	11.30 fr. sunset	Aug. 5	5.30 a.m.	Hipparchus at Rhodes.
Pharmuthi 11.	12.20 ,,	May 2	6.20 a.m.	,, ,, }
Paüni 17 . .	4.0 fr. noon	July 7	4.0 p.m.	,, ,, }
Tybi 2 . . .	7.0 ,,	Nov. 29	7.0 p.m.	Agrippa in Bithynia.
Mecheir 15 .	17.0 ,,	Jan. 11	5.0 a.m.	Menelaus at Rome. }
,, 18 .	18.30 ,,	,, 14	6.30 a.m.	,, ,, }
Athyr 13 . .	5.50 ,,	Oct. 1	5.50 p.m.	Ptolemy at Alexandria (year of the completion of Jewish desolation).
Phamenoth 25	12.45 fr. sunset	Feb. 9	6.45 a.m.	Ptolemy at Alexandria.
Pharmuthi 9 .	5.30 fr. noon	,, 23	5.30 p.m.	,, ,,

OBSERVATIONS.

MERCURY.

Hour.	Julian Date.	Hour.	Observed by
18 h. from noon	Nov. 15	6 a.m.	Dionysius.
About 17 ,, ,,	Feb. 12	About 5 a.m.	,,
,, 6 ,, ,,	May 25	,, 6 p.m.	,,
6 ,, ,,	Aug. 23	,, 6 p.m.	,,
6 ,, ,,	May 28	,, 6 p.m.	,,
About 17 ,, ,,	Nov. 19	,, 5 a.m.	The Chaldeans.
,, 17 ,, ,,	Oct. 30	,, 5 a.m.	,,
,, 6 ,, ,,	July 4	,, 6 p.m.	Theo.
6 ,, ,,	Feb. 2	,, 6 p.m.	Ptolemy.
About 16 ,, ,,	June 4	,, 4 a.m.	,,
,, 16 ,, ,,	Oct. 3	,, 4 a.m.	,,
6 ,, ,,	April 5	,, 6 p.m.	,,
6 ,, ,,	June 4	,, 6 p.m.	,,
7.30 ,, ,,	May 17	7.30 p.m.	,,
About 16 ,, ,,	July 8	About 4 a.m.	,,
,, 17 ,, ,,	Feb. 2	,, 5 a.m.	,,

Digitized by Google

PLANETARY

II.

	B.C.	Year of Nabonassar.	Reign.	Egypt. Month.
I.	272	(1) 476	Philadelphi 13 . . .	Mesorē 17 . . .
		(2)		„ 21 . . .
	A.D.			
II.	127	875	Hadrian 12	Athyr 21 . . . .
III.	129	876	„ 13	Epiphi 2 . . . .
IV.	132	879	„ 16	Pharmuthi 21 . .
V.	134	881	„ 18	„ 2 . .
VI.	136	884	„ 21	Tybi 2 . . . .
VII.	136	884	„ 21	Mecheir 9 . . .
VIII.	138	886	Antoninus 2 . . .	Tybi 29 . . . .
IX.	140	887	„ 3 . . .	Pharmuthi 4 . .
X.	150	898	„ 14 . . .	Thoth 11 . . .

III.

	B.C.			
I.	272	476	Philadelphi 52 . . .	Athyr 20 . . . .
	A.D.			
II.	130	878	Hadrian 15	Tybi 26 . . . .
III.	135	882	„ 19	Pharmuthi 6 . .
IV.	139	886	Antoninus 2 . . .	Epiphi 12 . . .
V.	139	886	„ 2 . . .	„ 15 . . .

IV.

	B.C.			
I.	241	507	Philadelphi 83 . . .	Epiphi 17 . . .
	A.D.			
II.	133	880	Hadrian 17	„ 1 . . .
III.	136	884	„ 21	Phaophi 13 . . .
IV.	137	885	Antoninus 1 . . .	Athyr 20 . . . .
V.	139	886	„ 2 . . .	Mesorē 26 . . .

V.

	B.C.			
I.	229	519		Tybi 14 . . . .
	A.D.			
II.	127	874	Hadrian 11	Pachon 7 . . .
III.	133	880	„ 17	Epiphi 18 . . .
IV.	136	883	„ 20	Mesorē 24 . . .
V.	138	886	Antoninus 2 . . .	Mecheir 6 . . .

Digitized by Google

OBSERVATIONS (*cont.*).

VENUS.

Hour.	Julian Date.	Hour.	Observed by
About 18 h. fr. noon	Oct. 12	About 6 a.m.; at the 12th hour of night, according to Timocharis.	Timocharis at Alexandria.
	,, 16		
,, 18 h. ,,	,, 12	About 6 a.m.	Theo.
,, 17 h. ,,	May 20	,, 5 a.m.	,,
At 6 h. ,,	Mar. 8	,, 6 p.m.	,,
About 18 h. ,,	Feb. 18	,, 6 a.m.	Ptolemy.
At 6 h. ,,	Nov. 18	,, 6 p.m.	,,
,, 6 h. ,,	Dec. 25	,, 6 p.m.	,,
,, 16.45 ,,	,, 16	At 4.45 a.m.	,,
,, 6 h. ,,	Feb. 18	About 6 p.m.	,,
About 16 h. ,,	July 28	,, 4 a.m.	,,

MARS.

18 h. from noon	Jan. 18	At 6 a.m.	Dionysius.
13 h. ,, ,,	Dec. 15	,, 1 a.m.	Ptolemy.
9 h. ,, ,,	Feb. 21	,, 9 p.m.	,,
10 h. ,, ,,	May 27	,, 10 p.m.	,,
9 h. ,, ,,	,, 30	,, 9 p.m.	,,

JUPITER.

18 h. from noon	Sept. 4	At 6 a.m.	Dionysius.
11 h. ,, ,,	May 17	,, 11 p.m.	Ptolemy.
10 h. ,, ,,	Aug. 31	,, 10 p.m.	,,
17 h. ,, ,,	Oct. 8	,, 5 a.m.	,,
17 h. ,, ,,	July 11	,, 5 a.m.	,,

SATURN.

6 h. from noon	Mar. 1	6 p.m.	Chaldeans.
6 h. ,, ,,	,, 26	6 p.m.	Ptolemy.
4 h. ,, ,,	June 3	4 p.m.	,,
At noon	July 8	12 p.m. or noon	,,
8 h. from ,,	Dec. 22	8 p.m.	,,

Digitized by Google

Adjustment of the Chronology of Scripture to that of the Almagest and Canon of Ptolemy.

Ptolemy, as we have shown, records in his "Almagest" seven eclipses belonging to the Babylonian and Persian periods. Of these, four occurred in the reigns of the Babylonian monarchs Mardocempadus and Nabopolassar, and three in the reigns of the Persians kings Cambyses and Darius. The dates of these eclipses are accurately given, and verified by astronomical calculation are as follows:

	B.C.	
1.	721, March 19.	1st of Mardocempadus.
2.	720, „ 8.	2nd of „
3.	720, Sept. 1.	2nd of „
4.	621, April 21.	5th of Nabopolassar.
5.	523, July 16.	7th of Cambyses.
6.	502, Nov. 19.	20th of Darius.
7.	491, April 25.	31st of „

The relative position of these dates in Ptolemy's "Almagest" is in perfect correspondence with the dates of the Babylonian and Persian kings in his Canon.

By the fourth of these eclipses the fifth year of Nabopolassar is fixed as B.C. 621. Nabopolassar reigned, according to the Canon, twenty-one years; and was followed by Nabokolassar, the Nebuchadnezzar of Scripture, who reigned forty-three years.

The reigns of the Babylonian and Persian monarchs connected with the captivity and restoration of Judah are given in the Canon as follows:

Babylonian Kings.

Nabokolassar . . .	43 years.
Ilvarodamus . . .	2 „
Nerikassolasar . . .	4 „
Nabonadius	17 „

Digitized by Google

PERSIAN KINGS.

Cyrus	9 years.
Cambyses	8 „
Darius I.	36 „
Xerxes	21 „
Artaxerxes	41 „

1. The destruction of the temple took place according to Scripture in the nineteenth year of Nebuchadnezzar. As the three successors of Nabokolassar reigned respectively but two years, four years, and seventeen years, none of these can represent the Nebuchadnezzar of Scripture.

2. The captivity of Jehoiachin began, according to Scripture, in the eighth year of Nebuchadnezzar, lasted for thirty-seven years, and terminated in the first year of his successor, Evil-merodach. "It came to pass in the seven and thirtieth year of the captivity of Jehoiachin king of Judah, in the twelfth month, on the seven and twentieth day of the month, that Evil-merodach king of Babylon in the year that he began to reign did lift up the head of Jehoiachin out of prison" (2 Kings xxv. 27). The Evil-merodach of Scripture corresponds with the Ilvarodamus of the Canon of Ptolemy, and the interval from the eighth year of Nabokolassar to the first year of his successor, Ilvarodamus, includes in the Canon a period of thirty-seven years.

3. The seventy years' interval, which extended, according to Scripture, from the beginning of the captivity of Judah, under Nebuchadnezzar, to the first year of Cyrus, further determines the position of Nebuchadnezzar's reign. The Canon assigns sixty-six years from the first of Nabokolassar to the first of Cyrus. The captivity of Judah commenced B.C. 605, in the year which preceded the first of the sole monarchy of Nebuchadnezzar, and terminated B.C. 536, two years after the capture of Babylon by Darius. Ptolemy reckons the years of Cyrus from the date of the capture of Babylon, B.C. 538; but while this is admissible, the first year of his *sole* monarchy was B.C. 536.[1]

4. Darius the Mede is not mentioned by Ptolemy, because his reign was cotemporaneous with that of Cyrus. The notion entertained by some few that Darius the Mede was

[1] CLINTON: "Epitome of Chron. of Greece," pp. 235–7.

Digitized by Google

Darius Hystaspes is disproved by the opening verses of Daniel xi., where we read that "In the first year of Darius the Mede" the angel revealed to Daniel that there were yet *three kings* to arise in Persia, and that the *fourth* should be richer than them all, and by his strength through his riches should "stir up all against the realm of Grecia." This last was clearly Xerxes, and as Darius Hystaspes was his immediate predecessor, he could not have been Darius the Mede. Xerxes was the *fourth* king *after* Darius the Mede, and Darius Hystaspes was not Darius the Mede, but the *third after him.*

5. Of the three Persian kings who intervened between Cyrus and Xerxes, Ptolemy omits Smerdis, because his reign was only seven months in duration, and reckons his period in the reign of Cambyses. The Canon consistently omits all reigns *less* than a year in duration, and includes their periods in the longer reigns. This fact is conspicuous in its chronology of the Roman emperors.

6. The position and period of the Artaxerxes I. of the Canon of Ptolemy correspond with those of the Artaxerxes of Ezra vii. and of the book of Nehemiah. The forty-one years assigned by the Canon to the reign of Artaxerxes I. give room for the events and dates in Ezra and Nehemiah. The missions of these reformers took place in the seventh, twentieth, and thirty-second years of Artaxerxes, and fell within these forty-one years. The reigns of Artaxerxes' predecessor and of his successor were respectively twenty-one and nineteen years, and therefore shorter than that of the Artaxerxes of Nehemiah.

7. Josephus, who lived before Ptolemy, and was therefore no copyist of his astronomical Canon, confirms and illustrates the foregoing chronology. It is noteworthy that he assigns forty-three years to the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, which is the period assigned in the Canon to the reign of Nabokolassar. "Now when king Nebuchadnezzar had reigned forty-three years he ended his life" (*Ant.*, x., c. xi.). The authorities quoted by Josephus in his account of Nebuchadnezzar are Berosus, Megasthenes, Diocles, and Philostratus, of whose works he says, "These are all the histories that I have met with concerning this king."

Digitized by Google

The liberation of Jehoiachin is thus described by Josephus:

"After the death of Nebuchadnezzar, Evil-merodach his son succeeded in the kingdom, who immediately set Jechoniah at liberty, and esteemed him amongst his most intimate friends; he also gave him many presents, and made him honourable above the rest of the kings that were in Babylon: for his father had not kept his faith with Jechoniah when he voluntarily delivered up himself to him, with his wives and children, and his whole kindred, for the sake of his country, that it might not be taken by siege, and utterly destroyed."

The successors of Evil-merodach were, according to Josephus, Neglissar (the Nerikassolasar of Ptolemy's Canon), Labosordachus, who reigned but nine months, and is consequently omitted in the Canon, and "Baltasar, who by the Babylonians was called Naboandelus; against him did Cyrus the king of Persia and Darius the king of Media make war, and when he was besieged in Babylon there happened a wonderful and prodigious vision"—the handwriting on the wall interpreted by Daniel. The Naboandelus of Josephus is evidently the Nabonadius of the Canon; but modern researches in the Assyrian records distinguish him from Belshazzar, who was slain in the capture of Babylon.

Josephus assigns seventeen years to the reign of Naboandelus (or Nabonadius), as does the Canon, and seventy years to the interval from the beginning of the Babylonish captivity to the first of Cyrus.

"Now after a little while both himself and the city were taken by Cyrus, the king of Persia, who fought against him; for it was Baltasar under whom Babylon was taken, when he had reigned seventeen years. And this is the end of the posterity of King Nebuchadnezzar, as history informs us; but when Babylon was taken by Darius, and when he with his kinsman Cyrus had put an end to the dominion of the Babylonians, he was sixty-two years old. He was the son of Astyages, and had another name among the Greeks.[1] Moreover he took Daniel the prophet, and

[1] "The book of Daniel states, that after the conquest of Babylon, a monarch named Darius the Mede took the kingdom previous to the reign of Cyrus. This Darius has not been identified with any prince known to history, and his reign has been supposed to have been short, not exceeding two years; this would reduce the accession of Cyrus as king of Babylon to B.C. 537, his first year, in which the Jews were released from

Digitized by Google

carried him with him into Media, and honoured him very greatly, and kept him with him; for he was one of the three presidents whom he set over his three hundred and sixty provinces, for into so many did Darius part them. . . .

"In the first year of the reign of Cyrus, which was the seventieth from the day that our people were removed out of their own land into Babylon, God commiserated the captivity and calamity of these poor people, according as He had foretold to them by Jeremiah the prophet, before the destruction of the city."

8. The Greek historian Herodotus, who wrote in the fifth century B.C., confirms in many and various ways the Scripture account of the capture of Babylon by the Persians. The great work of Herodotus may be described as the *story of the westward pushing of the Persian ram told by a contemporary*. While the graphic and interesting pages of Herodotus shed a large amount of light on the period with which they deal, they are sadly disfigured by many erroneous statements.

In his work on "The Ancient Empires of the East," published in 1884, Prof. Sayce, of Oxford, thus refers to the untrustworthiness in question:

"The discoveries which have been pouring in upon us of late years from all parts of the oriental world have made it possible to test the value of our chief classical authority for the history of the ancient East, and at the same time to give some idea of what that history actually was. So rapid indeed has been the progress of research, that not only have the essays attached to Rawlinson's translation of Herodotus already become antiquated, but even François Lenormant's well known 'Manual of Ancient History' has long since needed to be re-written. . . . Before the ground can be cleared for reconstructing the fabric of oriental antiquity from the remains it has itself left behind, it is absolutely necessary that the works of Herodotus and his followers should be set in their true light, and estimated at their true value. Herodotus cannot be accepted as a guide, unless we are first assured that his historical information is trustworthy, and his literary honesty unimpeachable. Whatever the cause or causes may have been, from the first he met with hostile criticism. Hardly had the generation for whom he wrote passed away before Thukydidês tacitly accused him of errors, which the Attic historian corrected without even naming the author to whom

---

captivity, falling in B.C. 536. Ptolemy's Canon omits the reign of Darius, and gives the whole period from the capture of Babylon to the accession of Cambyses to Cyrus."—*George Smith*: "*Assyrian Canon*," p. 157.

Digitized by Google

they were due. . . Modern research obliges us to endorse the judgment passed upon Herodotus almost as soon as his history was published. . . . We are compelled to turn from the great writers of Greece and Rome as from unsafe guides. The literary value of their works can never be depreciated, and for western history their authority is supreme But the orientalist can never again go to them for instruction and argument with the faith of former generations: living witnesses, as it were, have started out of the grave of centuries to convict them of error and deceit. We have at last learned the true worth of 'quicquid Græcia mendax audet in historiâ.'"

9. While discrediting the value of Herodotus, these eastern witnesses *confirm in a very remarkable manner the Canon of Ptolemy, and the historical and chronological statements contained in Scripture.*

The following extracts are from "The Assyrian Eponym Canon: containing Translations of the Documents, and an Account of the Evidence, on the Comparative Chronology of the Assyrian and Jewish Kingdoms, from the Death of Solomon to Nebuchadnezzar," by George Smith, of the Department of Oriental Antiquities, British Museum; author of "History of Assurbanipal"; "Assyrian Discoveries," etc., etc.:

"One of the most important historical documents ever discovered was found by Sir Henry Rawlinson among the inscribed terra-cotta tablets, which Mr. Layard and other explorers brought over from Nineveh. . . . Sir Henry Rawlinson distinguished four copies of the Assyrian Canon, all imperfect, which he numbered I., II., III., IV.; but since his discovery of these, several new fragments have been found, belonging to Canon I., and to three further copies, Canons V., VI., VII. All these documents, so far as they are preserved, closely agree. They consist of lists of the annual eponymes in their chronological order, and to those names in Canons V., VI., VII. there are added the titles of the eponymes, and short notices of the principal events during their terms of office" (pp. 27, 28).

"In Assyria the practice of dating documents according to the regnal years of the reigning monarchs was seldom used, by far the greater number of inscriptions being dated by the names of certain officers, called by the Assyrian *limu;* a word which, by general consent, is translated 'eponym.' The Assyrian *limu* or eponymes were appointed according to a general rotation; and each one in succession held office for a year, and gave name to that year; the usage of the Assyrians in this respect being similar to that of the archons at Athens, and the consuls at Rome. The lord mayors of London are also appointed for a

Digitized by Google

year, and a parallel case would be presented if we dated our documents according to the year when successive lord mayors held office: calling the years after their names" (p. 22).

The Assyrian Eponym Canon and Canon of Ptolemy Compared.

"The important bearing of the Assyrian Canon on general chronology is shown most clearly in its relations to the Canon of Ptolemy and the chronology of the books of Kings.

"So far as it has been tested, the Canon has proved an accurate and reliable document; and it is therefore of the first importance to compare its dates with those of the Assyrian Canon wherever it is possible to do so.

"The list of Ptolemy in the Assyrian period is as follows:

List.	Length of Reign.	Date B.C.
Nabonassar	14	747
Nabius	2	733
Chinzirus and Porus	5	731
Jugæus or Ilulæus	5	726
Mardocempadus	12	721
Arkianus	5	709
Interregnum	2	704
Belibus	3	702
Apronadisus	6	699
Iregibelus	1	693
Mesesimordakus	4	692
Interregnum	8	688
Asaridinus	13	680
Saosduchinus	20	667
Isiniladanus	22	647
Nabopolassar	21	625

"We have here sixteen dates to compare with the Assyrian annals, and *our evidence confirms ten of them*; the two first, three in the middle, and the last being the only ones on which no information has been discovered.

The third date of Ptolemy, the first year of Chinzirus and Porus, B.C. 731, is the point where his list and the Assyrian Canon first come into contact. In the eponymy corresponding to B.C. 731, Tiglath-pileser, king of Assyria, invaded Babylonia, killed Nabe-asabsi, who may correspond to the Nabius of Ptolemy, and besieged Kin-ziru (the Chinzirus of Ptolemy) in his capital, Sapiya. Some time after this, Tiglath-pileser claimed the Babylonian crown; and the Canon of Ptolemy inserts with the name of Chinzirus that of Porus or Pul, who has been supposed by Rawlinson, Schrader, and others to be the same as Tiglath-pileser.

Digitized by Google

"The next date in Ptolemy, B.C. 726, is also the first year of Shalmaneser, king of Assyria, who ascended the throne B.C. 727.

"The Mardocempadus of Ptolemy is well known as the Merodach-baladan of the Second Book of Kings, and the Marudukbalidina of the inscriptions, who ascended the throne of Babylon B.C. 722, contemporary with the accession of Sargon, in Assyria, the first year of the reign of both monarchs being B.C. 721, perfectly agreeing with Ptolemy. Thus Arkianus, who according to Ptolemy succeeded him, and had his first year in B.C. 709, must be Sargon, who conquered Merodach-baladan in B.C. 710, and who counts his own first year as king of Babylon equivalent to his thirteenth in Assyria, B.C. 709.

"The reign of Sargon ended B.C. 705, and Ptolemy reckons B.C. 704 and 703 as years of interregnum. According to the Assyrian inscriptions, in B.C. 704 Sennacherib drove out Merodach-baladan, and in B.C. 703 set up at Babylon Bel-ibni, whom Ptolemy calls Belibus, giving his first year 702 B.C. In the year B.C. 700 Sennacherib again invaded the country, and set up his son Assur-nadin-sum as king of Babylon; he corresponds to the Apronadisus of Ptolemy; his first year was B.C. 699. The following dates of Ptolemy, B.C. 693, 692, and 688, are not confirmed by any known inscription; but the next date, B.C. 680, for the first year of Esarhaddon, agrees with the Assyrian inscriptions, which make his accession B.C. 681. The first year of Saosduchinus, according to Ptolemy, B.C. 667, also agrees with his accession, according to the Assyrian history, on the death of Esarhaddon, B.C. 668.

"The following table will show the principal dates in Ptolemy and the Assyrian Canon for the period B.C. 747–625:

Ptolemy's Canon.		Assyrian Canon.	
Names.	First Year.	Names.	Accession Year.
	B.C.		B.C.
Nabonassar	747	Tiglath-pileser (in Assyria)	745
Nabius	733	Nabu-usabsi	
Chinzirus and Porus	731	Kinziru	731
Iluläus	726	Shalmaneser (in Assyria)	727
Mardocempadus	721	Merodach-baladan	722
Arkianus	709	Sargon	710
Interregnum	704	Sennacherib (in Assyria)	705
Belibus	702	Bel-ibni	703
Apronadisus	699	Assur-nadin-sum	700
Iregibelus	693		
Mesesimordakus	692		
Interregnum	688		
Asaridinus	680	Esarhaddon	681
Saosduchinus	667	Saulmugina	668
Isiniladanus	647	Sin-nadina-pal (?)	648
Nabopolassar	625	Death of Assurbanipal (?)	626

Digitized by Google

Account of the Capture of Babylon by Cyrus.

From the Assyrian Annals.

"'At the end of the month Elul (August) the gods of Akkad, who were above the atmosphere, came down to Babylon. The gods of Borsippa, Cutha, and Sippara came not down. In the month Tammuz (June) Cyrus made battle in Rutum against . . . of the river Nizallat. The men of Akkad made a revolt. The soldiers took Sippara on the fourteenth day without fighting, and Nabonidus fled away. On the sixteenth day Gobryas, the governor of Gutium, and the army of Cyrus came to Babylon without any opposition. Afterwards, having bound Nabonidus, he took him to Babylon. At the end of the month Tammuz the rebels of Gutium closed the gates of E-sagili; but neither in that temple nor any other temple of the country was there found a weapon for its defence. In the month Marchesvan (October), the third day, Cyrus came to Babylon; the roads were dark before him. He made peace to the city and promised peace to all Babylon. Cyrus appointed Gobryas to be governor in Babylon together with others. From the month Kislev (November) to the month Adar (February) they brought back to their shrines the gods of Akkad, whom Nabonidus had sent down to Babylon. In the month of Marchesvan (October) the dark, the eleventh day, Gobryas . . . and the king (Nabonidus) died. From the 27th of the month Adar (February) to the third day of the month Nisan (March) there was weeping in Akkad. All the people were free from their chief. On the fourth day Cambyses, the son of Cyrus, in the Temple of the Sceptre of the World, established a festival.'

"This is the brief history of the conquest of Babylon as recorded in the annals; and it will be easy to see that it was brought about by other things than force of arms. There was a revolt among the troops of Nabonidus, and he fled, hence Sippara was easily taken, and the rebels who shut themselves up in E-sagili were without arms, therefore they were subdued without difficulty. There is a fragment of a cylinder in the British Museum which was drawn up by the command of Cyrus, and which gives his account of the taking of Babylon. As this famous record is so important, a paraphrase is here given.

"The first few lines of the fragment are much broken, and only a few words are readable, but the general import of them seems to be that under the care of Nabonidus the rites of the temples were discontinued, and that the ordinary offerings and sacrifices were left unperformed. At this Merodach, the lord of the gods, grieved, and the gods left their respective shrines. At the sacred feasts which were celebrated within Kal-anna Merodach did not appear, he had taken himself away to other peoples. Merodach was kind to the people of Sumir and Akkad, and he returned, and rejoiced all the countries. He sought out a king for himself who would perform according to the heart's desire of the god whatever was entrusted to his hand. He proclaimed the renown of Cyrus the king of Anzan (Persia), throughout the length and breadth of the

Digitized by Google

land, and he proclaimed his glory to all. He made all the people of Gutium, whom he had gathered to his feet, and all the dark races whom he had caused his hand to take, to dwell under law and righteousness. Merodach, the great lord, directed his (Cyrus) hand and heart; he lived happily. The god commanded him to make the march to his city Babylon; he made him take the road to Tintir (Babylon); the forces of Cyrus marched like a cloud and an earth wall. His army was wide-spreading and far-reaching like the waters of a river, his forces were without number. He made them enter Kal-anna without fighting and without contest; he made breaches all round the city, and he (the god) delivered Nabonidus, who did not reverence him, into the hands of Cyrus. All the people of Tintir and all the people of Akkad and Sumir, nobles, and priests, who had opposed the king, he crushed beneath him, and they came and kissed his feet. And then the god Merodach, who by his service makes the dead to live, and who in difficulty and trouble aids every one, drew near to him favourably and made known his proclamation, saying, 'I am Cyrus the king, . . . the great king, the mighty king, king of Tintir, king of Sumir and Akkad, king of the four regions of the earth, the son of Cambyses, the great king, king of the city Anzan, grandson of Cyrus, the great king, king of the city of Anzan, great-grandson of Teispes, the great king of the city of Anzan, of the ancient seed of royalty, whose dominion (reign) Bel and Nebo had exalted according to the beneficence of their hearts.'

"After Cyrus entered Babylon with joy and gladness, he enlarged the royal palace, the seat of royalty, and Merodach, whom the Babylonians had grieved, daily rejoiced the heart of his followers. His wide-spreading forces were spread over the land peacefully, and he repaired the cities and made joyful the children of Babylon. Cyrus was careful to repair immediately the temple of the god Merodach, and the god was pleased to approach him favourably. All the kings of Phœnicia and round about brought their tribute, and kissed the feet of Cyrus. He restored the shrines and dwelling-places of the gods of the towns of Agade Isnumnak, Zamban, and elsewhere. The gods of Akkad and Sumir, which Nabonidus had brought from their shrines for the final festival, Cyrus restored to their places. The last line or two of the inscription tells us that he prayed daily to Nebo and Bel, that they would be pleased to prolong his days, to bless the decree for his prosperity, and that Merodach would regard him as his faithful follower and son.

"Such is the account given of this remarkable fragment of the fall of Babylon. It will be remembered that the old historian Herodotus tells us that Cyrus drained the river Euphrates nearly dry by means of a canal running into a lake, and that the Persians marched up through the river gates, which were carelessly left open by the Babylonians. No mention of this is made in the inscriptions; but there is no reason why Cyrus should not have had recourse to this means as well as to fighting. We have mentioned that Nabonidus had entrusted the charge of the Babylonian army to his son Belshazzar, and the Bible tells us that he

Digitized by Google

was slain on the awful night of the capture of Babylon. It makes no mention of Nabonidus. Josephus says, 'And when Neriglissar was dead the kingdom came to Baltasar, who by the Babylonians was called Naboandelus'; and in another part of his book he calls Nabonidus 'Nabonnedon.' Now it is evident that the father Nabonidus and the son Belshazzar became confused in the minds of the writers of the histories, but one and the same king is meant. It was natural that foreigners should consider Belshazzar to be the king, because he was master of the army.

"The Bible and Josephus record an event in this king's life which the inscriptions and Herodotus mention not. It is said 'Belshazzar the king made a great feast to a thousand of his lords, and drank wine before the thousand. Belshazzar, whiles he tasted the wine, commanded to bring the golden and silver vessels which his father (*i.e.* his ancestor) Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the temple which was in Jerusalem; that the king, and his princes, his wives, and his concubines, might drink therein. . . . In the same hour came forth fingers of a man's hand, and wrote over against the candlestick upon the plaister of the wall of the king's palace: and the king saw the part of the hand that wrote.' Belshazzar, exceedingly terrified at this, called for all the astrologers, soothsayers, and augurs, and demanded an interpretation; but none could read it. At last came Daniel, the servant of the Lord, and read the awful dictum to the king—'Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin'; *i.e.*, 'God hath numbered thy kingdom, and finished it; thou art weighed in the balances, and art found wanting; thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and Persians.' A verse or two later we read: 'In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldæans slain.'

"The Babylonians had heard for years of the conquests of Cyrus, but they felt secure when they remembered the walls of their city, and the huge gates which broke their line at short distances. They thought of their past conquests, of their glories, of their old lines of kings, and were insolently secure in their hearts. The prophets of Israel denounced Babylon in their prophecies; all nations took up the cry of joy at her downfall, and the cry, 'Babylon is fallen!' resounded from city to city, and from one end of the earth to the other."

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX B.

THE DATE OF OUR LORD'S PASSION.

His passion is placed in the year A.D. 29 "by many authors, by Lactantius, Augustine, Sulpicius, Idatius, Fast. apud Noris, the Catalogue Pont. Rom. apud Bucherium, by Origen, Hieronymus, and Tertullian" (Clinton, "Epitome of Chron of Rome," p. 7).

Among modern chronologists this date is accepted by Benson, Browne, Mann, Ideler, Bianchini, Sanclemonti, etc. (see "Approaching End of the Age," p. 523).

"The consular date assigned almost with one consent by the Latin fathers is the year of the two Gemini, U.C. 782, A.D. 29" (Browne's "Ordo Sæclorum," p. 73).

1. Tertullian. "Quæ passio perfecta est sub Tiberio Cæsare, coss. Rubellio Gemino et Fufio Gemino" (*Adv. Jud.*, c. 8).

2. Lactantius. "Dominus noster Jesus Christus a Judæis cruciatus est, . . . duobus Geminis coss." (*De Mort. Pers.*, c. 2).

3. Sulpicius Severus. "Dominus crucifixus est Fufio Gemino et Rubellio Gemino coss." (*Hist. Sac.*, ii. 40).

4. S. Augustin. "Mortuus est Christus duobus Geminis coss." (*De Civ. Dei*, xviii.).

The above and other confirmatory traditional testimonies cited in Browne's "Ordo Sæclorum," pp. 73–80, and in Jarvis' "Chronological Introduction to the History of the Christian Church," pp. 377–387.

"UNTO HIM THAT LOVED US, AND WASHED US FROM OUR SINS IN HIS OWN BLOOD, AND HATH MADE US KINGS AND PRIESTS UNTO GOD AND HIS FATHER; TO HIM BE GLORY AND DOMINION FOR EVER AND EVER. AMEN."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

Abandonment, of the Papacy by European powers, 173.
Advent, second, foretold by Daniel, 210; unanimity as to period of, 284; and reign of Christ, biblical order as to the, 293; era visions, series of, 338; literality of the, 346; vision, the, 347.
Age, what the next, 22.
Agnostic philosophy, 246.
Ahaz, 40.
Alford, "Greek Testament," 369, 374; on new heavens and new earth, 370.
Algeria, became French colony, 91.
Alva's campaign, 76.
America, Declaration of Independence of, 189.
American writers, on the millennium, 292.
Analogies, hidden and exact, between Apocalypse and Daniel, 201.
Analogy, historical, inference from, 212; of signs of the times, 235.
Angel, twice repeated oath of the, 203.
Antichrist, predictions of, 295.
Apocalypse, Eusebius on date of, 200.
Apostasies, the era of the rise of the, 64; the fall of the, 73.
Apostasy, universal, 296.
Apostate Church, call to come out of the, 340.
"Approaching End of the Age," quoted, 25.
Arabi Pasha, insurrection of, 95.
Aritius, 266.
Armageddon, the war of, 347; mentioned in Old Testament, 349.
Artaxerxes, invasion of Greece by, 183.
Arthur, Rev. W., on union of Italy, 172.
Assyrian Eponym Canon, 417.
Astronomic cycle, remarkable, 186.
Astronomical observations, fix dates, 140; Canon, Ptolemy's, 340.
Augsburg, Peace of, 207.
Augustine to Luther, millenarian views from, 290.

Babylon, literal, era of rise of, 141; mystical, era of rise of, 141; mystical, era of fall of, 141; further stages in the fall of, 212; probable time of the fall of, 221; fall of, in Apocalypse, 240; the Roman, 240; fall of, 339.
Babylonish captivity, a turning point in God's providential government, 22.
Baptist Confession of Faith, 292.
Beatific vision, the, 371.
Berlin Conference, the, 163; result of, 193.
Beulah land, 331.

Digitized by Google

Bible chronology, two gaps in, 140.
Birks, on Prophecy, 261, 264; "First Two Visions of Daniel," 293; "Outlines of Unfulfilled Prophecy," 347.
Bisection era, the, 35; years of crisis in, 69; well marked, 148.
Blessedness, millennial earnest of, 311.
Body, the spiritual, 319.
Books, study of, needed, 15; utility of study of, 36.
Bride, the, 344.
Brown, Dr. David, on millennium, 281.
Bulgarian atrocities, the, 94.
Bulgarias, union of the two, 96.
Burning bush, emblem of the Jews, 105.

Calculation, importance of, 137.
Calculations, result of, simple and clear, 271.
Canon, close of New Testament, 199; of Ptolemy, 402.
Capital, concentration of, in Jewish hands, 120.
Captivity era, of Israel, 34; length of the, 52; critical dates of the, 56; intermediate dates of the, 158; chief stage of, 220.
Captivity of Israel, moral cause of, 50; no remedy, 51; various stages of, 51.
Captivity of Judæa, a gradual process, 11; a margin of twenty years in, 13.
Carlowitz, Peace of, 89; turning point in struggle in East, 149, 150.
Ceaseless motion, the present an age of, 247.
Change, a great, impending, 3.
Chart of twenty-five centuries, contrast between the two halves of, 275.
Cheseaux, M. de, discovers astronomic cycle, 186.
China, condition of, through European influence, 298.
Christ-believing movement, the new Jewish, 123.
Christ, will be manifested not as He is now, 315.
Chronologic prophecy, a science, 3; designed for later generations, 4; not understood at first, why? 4; bears against Romanists, Mohammedans, and Jews, 8; discredited by foolish speculations, 8; comprehended by Christ, 9; Daniel, student of, 9; Peter, on study of, 9; John, 9; Simeon and Anna, 9; time of, Daniel's studies of, 14; science of, latent in the Bible, 209.
Chronological chart, *frontispiece.*
Chronological investigation, results of, 224; based on facts and theories, 225.
Chronological limits, assigned, 251.
Chronology, a region of certainty, 37; conclusions reached by study of, 138; importance of, 138; Bible full of, 142.
Chytræus, 266.
Civilization, cannot bring a millennium of peace and righteousness, 357.
Clement XIV., Pope, abolition of Jesuits by, 156.
Clinton, "Epitome of Chronology of Greece," 413.
Close of period, characters of events intermediate between now and, 216; contrast with, 216.
Close of the drama, at hand, 278.
Closing words, 388.
Columbus, a millenarian, 290.
Coming kingdom, nature of the, 302; opening and closing eras of the, 306.
Coming of the King, the, 282.
Conjecture, minute, forbidden, 261.
Council of Nice, millenarian, 289.

Digitized by Google

Covenant, the perpetual, 333; an everlasting, 381.
Cowper, "The Task," 359.
Crimean war, object of the, 92.
Crises, future, to be expected, 214.
Cromwell and the Jews, 114.
Cyprus, cession of, 164.
Cyrus, capture of Babylon by, 420.

Daniel, predictions of, fulfilled, v.; book of, withstands all assaults, vii.; quoted by our Lord, ix.; apostles recognise, as a prophet, x.; language of book of, xi.; book of, in Canon of Old Testament, xiii.; his position in the days of Darius, 10; our position analogous to, 16; Birks' exposition of, 136; book of, in two languages, 178; chap. xii. and Revelation x., identical features of, 202; chronological prophecies included in "seven times," 227; historical predictions of, contain chronologic statements, 256.
Data of investigation, certainty of, 226.
Defection from the faith, spreading, iv.
Details of prophecy, gradual unfolding of, 137.
Dividing date, 476 A.D., 146.
Divine grace and Jewish restoration, 330.
Duffield, Dr., on Jerome, 289; "Pre-millennial Essays," 299.

Early Church, difference between our position and that of the, 257.
Earth, not annihilated but renewed, 370; the future of the, 372.
Eastern question, the European concert on, object of Crimean war, 92; adoption of European concert on the, 193.
Eastern "times," end of, 176.
Eclipses, Ptolemy on, 398.
Edict of Nantes, revocation of the, 78.
Education, modern progress in, 248.
Egypt, English occupation of, 96; virtual loss of, to the Porte, 165; insurrections in, 190.
Elect Church, definite completeness of, 382.
Elliott, on date of Apocalypse, 200.
Emigration, Jewish, to Palestine, societies to promote, 130.
Empire, the fourth, now ending, 237.
Empires, times of the four, 228; course of the four, 237; four: ten kingdoms, 277.
End at hand, the, looked for by Daniel, 14; by students of prophecy now, 14.
"End of the Lord, the," 301.
Endless increase of the human race, 381.
English Colonial empire, rise of, 189.
English revolution, 150.
Epiphany, personal, of Christ, 315; the, 345.
Era, events of closing, 229.
Eras, and years of crisis, 32; bisection and terminal, 228.
Eras of history, three, review of, 38; sources of information on, 39.
Eras, three historic, 35.
Esarhaddon, captivity of Israelites under, 43; date, the, 161.
Eternal kingdom, blessedness of the, 312; of God, 362; contrast with the millennial reign, 373.
Euphrates, drying up of the, 181.
Europe, Christian, a new creation, 63.
Events and dates indicated, the number of, 267; links in a chain, 269.
Evidence, cumulative, 226.
Extremes, the Church placed be-

Digitized by Google

tween two, as to Second Advent, 265.
Ezra and Nehemiah, restoration era of, 182.

False profession, enemy to the spread of Gospel, 340.
Firstfruits and harvest, 382.
Fleming, Robert, on the rise and fall of Papal Rome, 266.
Four Periods, expiring in 1848–9, 166.
Franco-Prussian war, 171.
French empire, collapse of, 171.
French Revolution, commencement of a new era, 80; outbreak of, 80; horrors of the, 81; a great social earthquake, 82; a sublime retribution, 82; reaction against the Papacy, 83; beginning of the judgment, 84; from Nabonassar to the, 154; and the Jews, 190.
Frogs, unclean spirits like, 348.
Fulfilments, analogy of past, 268.
Future dominion of Christ, a reign over the nations, 303.
Future, our, to be with Christ, 318.
Futurism, mistaken resort to, 255.

Garibaldi, exploits of, 86.
Generations, a thousand, 380.
Gentile power, last phase of, 23; nations will be blessed with Israel, 335.
Geological records of pre-Adamite ages, 359.
Gessius Florus, sufferings of the Jews under, 99.
"Glorious Revolution," recognition of, 79.
Gospel, is it a failure? 299.
Government, righteous, the need of the world, 355; world cannot produce, 355.
Gradual light, the wisdom of giving, 263.
Grätz, Prof., on the turning-point of Jewish history, 187.
Greece, insurrections in, 191.
Greek War of Independence, 191.

Hatti Hamayoun, the, 161.
Hengstenberg, on Daniel, ix.
Henshaw, Bishop, on the Second Advent, 286.
Hephzibah, 331.
Hezekiah, deliverance of, 43.
Historic Chart of the four empires and ten kingdoms, extending over twenty-five centuries, 274.
Historic system in this volume confirmed, 17.
Hope of the Church, 342.
"Horn, little," the, 61.
"Horns, little," the two, of Dan. vii. and viii., 23.

Ignorance, gradual transition from, to full knowledge, 7.
India, present state of, 298.
Infallibility, Papal, decreed, 170.
Infidelity, outbreak of, 79.
Inheritance, of Israel, their eternal, 334.
Inquisition, and Jesuits, instruments of Papal reaction, 75; abolished in Naples, Tuscany, and Parma, 80.
Intercourse between earth and heaven, 319.
Interpretation, canon of, 17; differences of, must exist, 8.
Isaiah, prophecy of, as to millennial days, 327.
Islam, final stages in the fall of 176.
Israel, final restoration of, close at hand, 19; first restoration partial and temporary, 19; prayer for, present duty, 135; restoration under the Persian monarchs, temporary, 185; restoration of, incomplete before the Advent,

Digitized by Google

220; restored and converted, to evangelise the world, 325; supremacy of, 326; political restoration of, 333; resurrection of, 334.
Israelites of the New Covenant, 124.
Italy, unification of, under Victor Emmanuel, 86; united and free, 172.

Janissaries, slaughter of the, 90.
Jehoiachin, captivity of, by Nebuchadnezzar, 46.
Jehoiakim, overthrow of, 45.
Jeremiah, study of, by Daniel, 11; warnings by, 45.
Jerome, millenarian, 289.
Jerusalem, siege of, by Titus, 100; fall of, 101; the Omar capture of, 147; proximate liberation of, 194; a quiet habitation, 329.
Jesuits, expulsion of, 79.
Jewish captivity era, 40; dispersion, 98; miseries in middle ages, 108; fugitives from Spain, sufferings of, 110; fugitives, shunned even by their brethren, in Italy, 111; fugitives, horrible cruelties towards, in Morocco, 112; sufferings in the sixteenth century, 113; Emancipation Act, first, 115; emancipation in Austria, 116; emancipation movement, commencement of modern, 117; emancipation, effects of the French Revolution on, 118; restoration, already commenced, 122; *Jewish Chronicle*, on Jewish exodus from Russia, 129; question, summary of the, 131; history, foretold and fulfilled, 133; aspect of later visions in Daniel, 179; emancipation, 242; restoration to Palestine, 243.
Jewish war, outbreak of the, 99; early stages of the, 100; end of the, 101.
Jews, a separate people in the dispersion, 102; from Hadrian to Constantine, 102; gradual descent and degradation of, 103; cruel laws and customs against the, 104; social and financial oppression of, 105; condition of, in England in middle ages, 106; laws of Edward the Confessor relating to, 107; banishment of, from Spain, under Ferdinand and Isabella, 108; extortions of King John from the, 108; banishment of, from Portugal, 112; cruel persecution of, in Portugal, 113; relaxation in persecution of, 113; sermons against the, 115; prejudice against the, 115; full equality of, conceded in England, 118; recent increase in power, influence, and number, 121; number of, in Jerusalem, 122; conference on new movement among the, 125; restoration promises fulfilling, 126; general and specific predictions as to, alike fulfilled, 133, 134; and the French Revolution, 190.
Josephus, testimony to Daniel, xi.; defeat of, by Vespasian, 100; confirms Ptolemy, 414.
Josiah, death of, 44.
Judgment of Romish Church, nature of, 341.

Kainardje, Peace of, 90.
King over all, the Lord, 337.
Kingdom, the coming, 301; millennial, stages in establishment of, 219; who are to be the subjects of, 323.
Kingdom of God, 280; the restoration of His authority, 302; succeeds four Gentile monarchies, 303; divided into two sections, 304; universal and everlasting, 304.
Kingdom of peace, the, 372.

Digitized by Google

Kingdoms, four, 277.
Knowledge, increase of, 248.
Knowledge of times, withheld, 254; promised, 255.

Lamartine, on decay of Turkey, 182.
Lamb, the marriage of the, 309.
Land and the throne, the, 55.
La Place, "Système du Monde," 397.
"Last days," the, 244; light provided for the, 258.
Lateran Council, the time of, and now, 74; edict of, relating to the Jews, 108.
"Latter times," the, 244.
Law, we live under a reign of, 246.
Lawlessness identical with sin, 357.
Lepanto, battle of, 89.
Lindsay, James B., "Chrono-astrolabe," 396.
Louis XVI., accession of, 155.
Lunar measures, incipient in character, 149; terminus, the second, 165.
Lunar years, importance of, 52; employed in the seventy weeks, 53.

Macaulay, on Church of Rome, 351.
Maccabees, quote example of Daniel, xi.
Manasseh, repentance of, 44; captivity, date of, 56; seven "times" from, 175.
Mankind, blessed future awaiting, 384.
Manning, Cardinal, on fall of temporal power, 172.
"Many mansions," 382.
Marriage of the Lamb, 342.
Marriage supper, the, 344.
Measurement of time, units of, 143.
Mede, and the Westminster Divines, on the millennium, 291-2.
Mediator, Christ as, 307.
Mehemet Ali, 165; rebellion of, 91.
Mendelssohn, Moses, Kellogg on the influence of, 188.
Messiah, prophecy of "cutting off" of, 54; fulfilment of prophecy, 54; kingdom of, 328.
Messianic era, interval from restoration to, 198; prophecy, contradictions of, 313.
Michaelis, J. D., on Daniel, ix.
Middle ages, darkest period for the Jews, 104.
Mildmay mission to the Jews, 125.
Millennial kingdom, a new thing in the earth, 318; age, threefold distinction in the, 376.
Millennial reign of Christ, 280, 353; who will remain to share in, 324; details of the, 335.
Millennial service will not involve exile from heaven, 321.
Millennium, features of the, 281; not before resurrection, 283; three leading theories on the, 293; pre-advent, contrary to all analogy, 295; pre-advent, excluded, 295; no signs of coming, 297; where look for tokens of coming, 297.
Missionary Institute, work of, xv.
Mohammedan and Papal powers, the present a time of decay of, 72.
Mohammedan conquests, foretold by Daniel, 180.
Mohammedan power, critical date in the fall of, 93; rise of, 147; period of the, 175; decay of, 181.
Mohammedanism, the Eastern apostasy, 66; wide sphere of, 66; Gibbon's description of, 67; the effects of, 68.
Mystery, the finished, 203; in predictions of coming kingdom, 313.

Nabonassar, accession of, 40; era of, 144.

Digitized by Google

Napoleon and Sennacherib, 160.
Napoleonic wars, number of men slaughtered in the, 160.
Nebuchadnezzar, typical character of, 27; different campaigns of, 162; typical of Papal dynasty, 162; termini, 163; dates, future termini from, 213.
New creation, types of the, 364.
New period, in the Apocalypse, 202.
"New heavens and the new earth," 363, 385; millennial, 332.
New Jerusalem, the, 375; the distinction between, and the nations of the new earth, 376.
New York Evening Post, on return of Jews to Palestine, 130.
Number, harmonious relations of, 142.

Objections answered, 261.
Origen, not post-millennialist, 289.
Ottoman, independence, end of, 91; stage in fall of power, in 1860, 94; bankruptcy, 95; empire, gradual removal of the, 193.

Palestine, number of Jews already in, 127; awaiting its re-occupation, 128; restoration of, to Israel, 128; Goldwin Smith on, 128; *Spectator* on, 128; lifting up of, 243.
Papacy, doom of the, 74; rise of, 146; the, 159; in 1798, dates of the rise of, 168; position of the, 276; policy of, working of Satan, 352.
Papal and Mohammedan powers, the present a time of decay of, 72.
Papal, power, stages of rise of the, 64, 65; apostasy, pre-eminence of the, 67; reaction, 75; States, French annexation of the, 85; overthrow, groups of dates connected with, 169; dynasty, the, 239.
Paradise restored, 374.
Pareus, 266.
Passion of our Lord, date of, 423.
Past, study of the, not speculation, 72.
Peace, universal, 358.
"Perilous times," features of, 245.
Periods, four converging, 251.
Perpetual increase of human race, is there to be a, 378.
Personal manifestation of Christ, 314.
Phocas, pillar of, 65.
Physical restoration, 368.
Pius IX., Œcumenical Council of, 87; death of, 164; fortunes of, 170.
Pope, the, a true and proper sovereign, 62; carried captive into France, 83; restoration of the, 85; degradation of the, by Napoleon, 156.
Porphyry, on Daniel, ix.
Portugal, banishment of Jews from, 112; cruel persecution of Jews in, 113.
Post-millennial theory, objections to, 299; era, the, 361; nations, 378.
Predictions, fulfilled, helps to understand prophecy, 227.
Premature anticipations, beneficial effect on the Church of, 263; no objection, 263.
Pre-millennial judgments, extent of, 324, 336.
Press, the antichristian, 348.
Probation of man, a new, 353.
Progressive revelations of the kingdom, 307.
Prophecy, fulfilled, study of, for evidences, v.; fulfilled, demonstration of inspiration of Scripture, 10; symbolic, history written beforehand in hieroglyphics, 38; chronologic, treats only of

Digitized by Google

history of redemption of race, 139; caution needed in study of, 217; growing comprehension of, 250; for those of mature intelligence, 271; of second advent, 315.
Prophetic periods, between eras not years, 139; dates, 210; dates, object of, 218.
Prophets, testimony of the, 327.
Protestantism, political establishment of, 77.
Ptolemy, Syntaxis or "Almagest" of, 395.
Pusey, on Daniel, ix.

Rabinowitch, Joseph, and his doctrines, 123.
Rapture, the, and the Epiphany, 218; of the Church, 343; precedes the Epiphany, 346.
Redemption, the final stage in, 305.
Reformation, the first blow at Papal dominion, 74; Apocalyptic symbol of the, 204; movement, 1510 beginning of, 205; inclusive terms of all main stages of movement, 205, 206; era, critical dates in, 206.
Reformers, the, and the millennial doctrine, 291.
Refreshing, times of, 281.
Reign of Christ, fifth in a series of monarchies, 317; not a mere spiritual kingdom, 317; the glorious, 328.
Renewing work, stages in the, 364.
Renovation, needed, 364; four chief stages, 365; the preparatory stage, 365; the Messianic stage, 366; the millennial stage, 367; the eternal kingdom, 368.
Restoration era, range of the, 184.
Resurrection, the first, 308.
Revelation, now only partial, 322; chaps. xxi. xxii., on new heavens and earth, 371.
Revolution, French, of 1830 and of 1848, 86; Spanish, of 1868, 87.
Revolutions, the year of, 157.
Righteousness, a reign of, 305; characteristic of the millennial reign, 305.
Rise of the Papacy, 61; Cardinal Manning's testimony, 61.
Risen glory, the, 331.
Rome, fall of, end of four pagan empires, 144; destruction of, double agency in, 213; Pagan and Papal, alike the work of Satan, 351.
Romish Church, suddenness of the judgment of, 341.
Russia, Jewish exodus from, 129.
Russian, victories over Turkey, 89, 94; empire, rise of, 189.
Ryswick, Peace of, 79, 148, 150.

Sadowa, battle of, 87; to Sedan, 173.
Saints, earthly and heavenly, 308; their share in Christ's kingdom, 316; will come with Christ, 316.
Sanctuary cycle, 178; range of the, 182.
Satan, the binding of, 350;
Saved and lost, Scripture distinguishes between, 383.
Sayce, Prof., "Ancient Empires of the East," 416.
Sceptics challenged, 390.
Scripture reveals the end, but not the means, 195; teachings on future kingdoms of Christ, summary of, 310; chronology, adjustment to that of Ptolemy, 412.
Scriptures, increased circulation of, 249.
Second advent, will introduce millennial reign, 300.
Second coming of Christ, 294.
Sennacherib, invasion of Judah by, 42; and Napoleon, 160.
"Seven times," 25; basis for the,

Digitized by Google

27; parallel with the seventy weeks, 29; lunar, 55; lunar, diagram of, 152; solar measures of the, 153; second half of the, 168.
Seventeenth century, close of, 149.
Seventy weeks, termini of the, 198.
Shalmaneser carries Israel away, 41; his vainglorious record of his Jewish wars, 49.
Signs, misapprehensions about, 230; of the times, blindness to, 230; of the times, natural events, 231; of the times, parable of, 232; political, 236; six sets of, 236; ecclesiastical, 239; Jewish, 241; Mohammedan, 243; general and social, 244; chronological, 250.
Smith, George, "Assyrian Canon," 415.
Solar termini, finality only at, 167.
Spiritual renovation, 367.
St. Bartholomew, massacre of, 76.
Stone, becomes a mountain, 337.
Students of prophecy, a word to, 390.
Supremacy, Papal claims to, 63.
Symbolic prophecies, gradually increasing comprehension of, 260.
Syria, European protectorate in, 94.

Tables of solar, lunar, and planetary positions, 404, 405.
Taylor, Daniel T., "The Reign of Christ on Earth," 287, 297, 298.
Temple, burning of the, 48.
Temporal sovereignty of the popes, fall of the, 88; power of popes, final fall of, 169, 172.
Tempter, the world without the, 567.
Ten kingdoms, the, 59; prophecy of, fulfilled in history, 60; the extant, 60; the present, 276.
Terminal events and dates, 143; dates, corresponding, 207.
Things, revealed are ours, 260; predicted, unprecedented, 279.
Tiglath-pileser, first deportation under, 41.
"Time of the end," 34; meaning of, 5; fulfilment to be looked for now, 6; features distinguishing the, 70; chronological limits of, 71; critical dates of, 97; Jewish aspect of, 98.
Time, times, and a half, 35.
Times of the Gentiles, what are they? 20; our nearness to the close, 23; historic features of, 23, 24; chronological limits, 24; a great "week," 25; intentional concealment of chronological measures in early days, 28; revealed only in mystery, 30; interpreted by fulfilment, 31; accurate study required to understand, 32; end of, an era, 33; subjects to be studied for the understanding of, 34.
Torquemada, Thomas de, and the Jews, 109.
Transformation, the glorious, 216.
Truth, long undiscovered, 264.
Truths, hidden, practically precious, 271.
Turkish power, decay of, 90; decree of toleration, 191.
Turks in Palestine, who is to replace the, 132.

Universal Israelite Alliance, the, 119, 151.
Universal knowledge of the Lord, 359.
Unsaved, a word to the, 389.

Vision, Nebuchadnezzar, of fourfold image, 26; of the tree, 26;
Visions, earlier and later, in Daniel,

Digitized by Google

178; of Daniel, their special relation to the sanctuary, 180; twelve, 338.

Ward, Henry Dana, "History and Doctrine of Millenarianism," 287.
Warn the world, ought we to, 283.
Wars, revolutionary, 84.
Watchfulness, inculcated, 256; contrasted grounds of, 257; need of, 389.
Watching, Church to be kept in a state of, 285.
Westphalia, Peace of, 77.
Whitby, Dr., on the post-millennial advent, 286.
"Wicked, the," who are they? 7.
Wild beast empires, temporary, 576.
"Wise, the," who are they? 6.
Xerxes to Nehemiah, 184, 185.

Year 1848, the, events of, 151; 1870, fatal to the Papacy, 174; 1923, A.D., importance of, 221; 1917, A.D., a final crisis date, 222; 1917, A.D., coincidence of periods in, 222; 1934 A.D., terminal character of, 224.
Years, of various lengths, 15; used in measuring the episodes of history, 15; lunar, solar, and calendar, 32.
York Castle, tragedy of, 106.

Zechariah, prophecy of King Messiah, 195.
Zedekiah, final destruction of Judah and Jerusalem, under, 47.

Butler & Tanner, The Selwood Printing Works, Frome, and London.

Digitized by Google

PRESS NOTICES OF THE FIRST EDITION.

"We commend Mr. Guinness's book as well worthy of the examination of the thoughtful student of Scripture, to whatever school of the interpretation of prophecy he may belong."—*Rock.*

"We cordially welcome and recommend to all who are seeking light for the last days this excellent compendium of the opinions and deductions of two most practical and earnest evangelists."—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review.*

"It is impossible to read this book without feeling that it propounds a theory which explains a great bulk of prophecy upon a consistent system; upon a system for which a large amount of historical proof can be adduced; and, above all, upon a system which is clear, definite, and precise, without being irreverent."—*Record.*

"The work is written in a clear and masterly style, and is most interesting and valuable."—*Evangelical Christendom.*

"The work is the ablest and most exhaustive from that point of view—the pre-millennial—which we have had in our hand, and all who wish to acquaint themselves with pre-millennialism could not do better than consult it."—*Primitive Methodist.*

"This is a very remarkable book in its way, and will have a strong fascination for many minds."—*Literary Churchman.*

"The book gives evidence of very extensive reading. It is written in a style both lucid and graceful, and will take rank as one of the standard works of prophetic literature."—*Christian Advocate.*

"This book is of very high value to the Church of God, and a worthy successor to the authors' 'Approaching End of the Age,' which has been pronounced by competent judges the most valuable work on prophecy published since Elliot's 'Horæ.' Its title, if it seems assumptious, is well justified by its matter; for the work is a flood of light shed on God's dealings from the beginning of time, but especially illuminating the very time in which we live, 'the time of the end,' when, as had been promised, the wise should understand what had been hitherto sealed. . . . It is for the definiteness and convincing clearness with which the chronology of these times is presented, that longing, waiting believers owe a debt to our honoured brother and sister that eternity alone can repay."—PHILIP HENRY GOSSE, F.R.S., in the *Christian.*

"We have read and re-read this work with profound and grateful interest—with profound interest because of the wealth of research and discovery which it contains; and with grateful interest that the historical school of interpretation has been enriched by such an important addition to its literature. It is impossible to give an extended review of this book in our brief space, but we wish to express our sense of its great value, first, as a profound study of prophecy, and a clear and orderly setting forth of the events of the coming kingdom of Christ, as revealed in Scripture; and, secondly, as a most valuable weapon against the two greatest enemies which the Church is now encountering, ritualism and rationalism. The work is careful, scholarly, and singularly free from dogmatism. Let any candid student of Scripture study it, and if he can avoid being filled with admiration and astonishment at the verifications which the events of history gives to the predictions of prophecy, and the measures of human chronology to the dates of Divine fore-knowledge, he must be a prejudiced reader indeed."—DR. GORDON, of Boston, in the *Watchword.*

LONDON: HODDER AND STOUGHTON, 27, PATERNOSTER ROW.

Digitized by Google

BY THE SAME AUTHORS.

THE APPROACHING END OF THE AGE, Viewed in the Light of History, Prophecy, and Science.

With Three Diagrams. Tenth Edition, enlarged and revised. Seventeenth Thousand. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

"One of the most valuable works on prophecy given to the Church during the present generation."—*Record.*

LORD SHAFTESBURY: "I cannot resist the desire I feel to bring it under the immediate and serious attention of the public. The writer is evidently a man of intense piety, unsurpassed diligence, and great ability. His whole argument rests on Scripture, but he throws a wonderful amount of light on prophetical chronology through the aid of mathematical and astronomical calculations."

"This splendid work. For thoroughness and completeness it stands alone on the sublime subject of the premillennial advent of our Lord."—*Rainbow.*

"Worthy of most careful study by every thoughtful observer of the ways of Providence, and every sharer of the great hope of the Christian Church."—*The late Professor Birks.*

"Evinces considerable research, and is written in an earnest Christian spirit."—*London Quarterly Review.*

"Curious, learned, and ingenious."—*Public Opinion.*

"This is in many ways a very remarkable book. If it were only to be judged in reference to the amount of research it displays, of extensive reading on the part of the author, and of able exposition of the Scriptures bearing on the subject, it would rank high indeed. But in addition to the ordinary contents to be expected in a work on prophecy, we find more than 300 pages, or about half the book, devoted to a minute investigation, carried out in a most scientific way, of the 'Divine system of times and seasons natural and revealed.' . . . We are much mistaken if it will not be found to open up a new and almost unknown region of investigation as to the nature of the prophetic times, as well as of the periods of God's dispensational dealings; a region which presents a most delightful field of study to those who love to search the Scriptures, and at the same time reverently seek to inquire what analogies are to be found between the kingdoms of nature and of grace."—*Christian.*

"An adequate notice of Mr. Guinness's bulky and elaborate volume would require, not a mere paragraph in our review department, but an extended article; and we shall not therefore attempt any criticism either of its central position or of the arguments by which it is supported. It is a plea for the premillennial advent of our Lord Jesus Christ, and an investigation into the systems of times and seasons presented in the word and works of God. The position is a familiar one, and has given rise to interminable controversies in the Christian Church. The arguments by which the position is sought to be established are, to a large extent, novel; by no means a repetition of those to which we have become accustomed in the beaten track. The author has proved himself to be a reverent, intelligent, and prayerful student of the Divine revelation; that his sole aim is to understand it aright, and to bring its lessons to bear upon the present duties and prospects of the Christian Church. He is not one of the vulgar speculators who substitute guesses of their own for the assurances of the word of God: and he is entirely free from fanaticism and exaggeration. Even those who cannot accept his conclusions will allow that he has produced a scholarly and masterly book, which is well worthy of devout and careful study."—*Baptist Magazine.*

LONDON: HODDER AND STOUGHTON, 27, PATERNOSTER ROW.

Digitized by Google

In crown 8vo, 5s.

ROMANISM AND THE REFORMATION, from the Standpoint of Prophecy.

By the Rev. H. Grattan Guinness.

Contents: Daniel's Foreview of Romanism.—John's Foreview of Romanism.—Paul's Foreview of Romanism.—Interpretation of this Triple Prophecy in Pre-Reformation Times, and its Practical Effect.—Its Interpretation in Post-Reformation Times, and Practical Effect.—Double Foreview of the Reformation in Old Testament Types, and New Testament Prophecies.

"These discourses are clear, forcible, demonstrative, eloquent, and overwhelmingly important."—*Sword and Trowel.*

"No student of prophecy can dispense with Mr. Guinness's writings. No writer of the old prophetic school commands fuller information or a more evident candour, or a more earnest style. We mourn that his alarm for the security of Protestant freedom has so much to justify it. We trust his earnest book may move many to pray and strive for the freedom of faith."—*Methodist Times.*

"Ardent Protestants should by all means procure and read Mr. H. Grattan Guinness's new book."—*Yorkshire Post.*

"Marked by learning, sobriety, candour, and force. It is pleasant to read; authorities are made easy of reference, and the whole is put forth in the finest spirit. The circulation of the volume ought to do great good."—*Christian Advocate.*

"This book is an unanswerable indictment of Romanism, and to such as are observant of the signs of the times, the eight lectures of which it is composed cannot fail to prove of commanding interest."—*Fireside News.*

"Mr. Guinness writes with the ease and familiarity of long and loving study, and with the almost passionate earnestness of profound and powerful conviction. The volume is decidedly worth study, especially by non-professional students."—*Methodist Recorder.*

"The work is very ably done, and no more consistent and lucid exposition of the views held by the historical school of interpreters has ever come under our notice."—*Dublin Daily Express.*

Shortly, in 8vo, Cloth,

THE DIVINE PROGRAMME OF THE WORLD'S HISTORY.

By Mr. and Mrs. H. Grattan Guinness.

London: HODDER AND STOUGHTON, 27, Paternoster Row.

Digitized by Google

WORKS BY THE RIGHT HON. LORD ROBERT MONTAGU.

I.

Second Edition. Handsomely bound in cloth, 8vo, 12s.

RECENT EVENTS, AND A CLUE TO THEIR SOLUTION.

"The revelations contained in these letters are startling, and would seem to convict the Romish ecclesiastics of being secretly engaged in fomenting revolution and rebellion for the purpose of re-establishing Papal power and authority in this realm. The action of the Jesuits in this country, and their ceaseless political intrigues, are ably unmasked by Lord Robert Montagu. These events are analysed and reviewed by Lord Robert Montagu with consummate skill."—*English Churchman.*

"The volume contains a marvellous amount of matter, deeply interesting under existing circumstances."—*Ecclesiastical Gazette.*

"The book is unique in its way, and will be read with eagerness far and wide by those who wish to place themselves in a position to draw their own inferences with regard to the present complicated situation."—*Public Opinion.*

"This is a very remarkable book, and well deserves the careful consideration of all who would possess a clue to present political complications. The revelations it makes are most astounding, and could hardly be credited were it not that the writer, having been himself a pervert to the Church of Rome, is intimately acquainted with the hidden workings of that system, and possessed, while amongst them, exceptional opportunities of knowing many of their prominent leaders. Lord Robert Montagu deserves the sympathy of all honest men, and, above all, of all Christians who have the cause of the Reformation at heart, for so fearless an exposure of the crafty working of the Romish system."—*Christian.*

II.

THE SOWER AND THE VIRGIN.

Crown 8vo, cloth, 7s. 6d.

"The author of this portly volume has proved himself a redoubtable champion of the Protestant faith as opposed to Romish error, and in this work he pleads with a force of conviction impossible to gainsay. Dealing with the Papal Dogma of the Immaculate Conception, he shows how contrary to Holy Scriptures, as well as to the traditions of the Church in every age, the doctrine is, quoting a long line of Church fathers, reputed saints, popes, cardinals, etc., as witnesses against it. He then shows how the claim of infallibility falls to the ground, in face of the confusion and self-contradiction involved. A mass of valuable biblical and historical references is accumulated, and the whole woven together in masterly style, forming a work as interesting and pleasing as it is instructive and serviceable to the cause of truth."—*Christian.*

"It is impossible in the limited space at our disposal to do justice to the work before us. Every page has its striking features, bristling with authorities; and none can rise from its perusal without being convinced that the theory under examination is an emanation from Satan, founded on falsehood, falsifications of authorities, and advocated by profligate popes. In this volume we have a most valuable addition to the many polemical works for our controversy with Rome."—*English Churchman.*

"There is not in our modern ecclesiastical literature a more worthy piece of work than that done in this volume, nor is there within the range of controversial theology a more conclusive treatise against the Papal pretence to infallibility. A better book of its kind it has not been our fortune to meet. It is not technical, and may be read from beginning to end by any one with ease and profit."—*Irish Christian Advocate.*

LONDON: HODDER AND STOUGHTON, 27, PATERNOSTER ROW.

Digitized by Google

SECOND EDITION.

THE LIFE OF SAMUEL MORLEY.

By EDWIN HODDER, Author of "The Life and Work of the Seventh Earl of Shaftesbury," etc.

With etched Portrait by Manesse. Demy 8vo, 14s.

"This bright and interesting volume."—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

"A most interesting memorial of a good man."—*City Press.*

"This is a very handsome, readable, and satisfactory volume. The narrative flows on with unflagging vivacity, and when we reach the end we have a clear and consistent picture of a high-minded, valorous, generous, and truly Christian man—a man also essentially liberal and open-minded."—*British Weekly.*

SECOND EDITION.

THE LIFE OF W. MORLEY PUNSHON, LL.D.

By the Rev. F. W. MACDONALD, Author of "Fletcher of Madeley," etc.

With etched Portrait by Manesse. Demy 8vo, 12s.

"In every way worthy both of its subject and of its author. That Mr. Macdonald would write in chaste and beautiful English, illuminating his story with graceful allusions and fine analysis, and discovering the springs among the mountains where rose the stream which blessed even more than it charmed, we were quite prepared to find. But we were scarcely prepared for the biographic art so fully developed as it unquestionably is in this volume. This is a book to be devoured with whole-hearted enjoyment."—*Methodist Recorder.*

THE SAINT AND HIS SAVIOUR. The Progress of the Soul in the Knowledge of Jesus.

By C. H. SPURGEON.

With Steel Portrait. New Edition, Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

KEYS TO THE WORD; or, Help to Bible Study.

By A. T. PIERSON, D.D. *Crown 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.*

CHARLES HADDON SPURGEON: Preacher, Author, and Philanthropist. With Anecdotal Reminiscences.

By G. HOLDEN PIKE, Author of "Albert, the Prince Consort"; "Anecdotes of Luther," etc.

SECOND EDITION.

With Fine Portrait, price 3s. 6d., handsomely bound.

"Mr. Pike's chapters abound in facts of interest and in anecdotes, which, while they amuse, rarely fail to convey some useful truth."—*Daily News.*

"Mr. Pike was never more fortunate in the choice of a subject, nor happy in its treatment. This is the book of all others for admirers of Mr. Spurgeon."—*Sheffield Independent.*

LONDON: HODDER AND STOUGHTON, 27, PATERNOSTER ROW.

Digitized by Google

CHEAPER EDITION.

RAYS OF MESSIAH'S GLORY; or, Christ in the Old Testament.

By DAVID BARON. *Crown 8vo, cloth, 3s. 6d.*

CONTENTS.—In the Scroll of the Book, or Foretold and Fulfilled—Messiah as Priest and King—The Branch, or Four Aspects of Messiah's Character—The Branch and the Branches, or a Symbol of Christ and His Church—Four Precious Titles of the Messiah—Moses and Christ: an Analogy and Contrast—Isaiah liii.: Messianic or not?

"This volume is one that will at once comfort the devout, and help the studious. The author, a convert, evidently from Judaism, delights in showing that the Old Testament Scriptures are full of Christ. This he does with considerable scholarship and critical and spiritual insight. As a fresh and deeply interesting treatment of a never-exhausted theme, we commend the volume, which is beautifully printed and got up, to the attention of our readers."—*Literary World.*

TEACHING AND TEACHERS; or, The Sunday School Teacher's Teaching Work, and the other Work of the Sunday School Teacher.

By H. CLAY TRUMBULL, D.D., Editor of the "American Sunday School Times," Author of "Kadesh-Barnea," etc.

Third Edition, crown 8vo, cloth, 5s.

"In this handsome volume lies a mine of wealth for the teacher. Such a book as this will almost *make* a teacher, so comprehensive is it, not only as to detail, but the possibilities of his work. Dr. Trumbull speaks truly when he says that the responsibilities of this great work of Sunday School teaching are infinite. Surely his splendid book will stir up many to more thoroughness, prayer, and consecration."—*Christian.*

"This book ought to rejoice the heart of many a Sunday School teacher. It concerns teachers, pupils, work, and methods."—*Clergyman's Magazine.*

"A bright, lively, spirited book, by an experienced American educationist."—*School Board Chronicle.*

"This is just the book for Sunday School teachers—full, comprehensive, luminous, practical, rich in personal experience, and abounding in good points—the most successful and most experienced Sunday School teacher will find much stimulus and help from its pages, while to the beginner it may prove of priceless value. Any platform speaker in search of points and illustrations will find Dr. Trumbull's volume a perfect mine of riches."—*Nonconformist.*

SELF-WILL AND GOD'S WILL; or, How to Discern what is God's Will in the Perplexing Questions of Life.

By OTTO FUNCKE, Bremen. Translated by ELIZABETH STIRLING. With the following Introductory Note by the Rev. ALEXANDER WHYTE, D.D., Edinburgh.

Second Edition, Crown 8vo, price 3s. 6d.

This is an admirable little book, well bottomed on Scripture, and with a literary character of its own. I do not know anything exactly like it in our language. The misery caused by Self-will is abundantly and strikingly illustrated from real life, and the style is simple, direct, racy, and often pungent. As the author says, he has "looked into many things; into many distracted and torn hearts, too; into many which have been lacerated by their own folly, error, and wilfulness." And those who own such hearts, and read his little book, will be thankful it ever came into their hands. I would like to see more of our popular religious books with the point and helpfulness of this fresh little treatise.

LONDON: HODDER AND STOUGHTON, 27, PATERNOSTER ROW.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google